THE AMERICAN

ASTRONOMICAL SERIES.

In the whole range of human science, no subject is calculated to excite such sublime ideas as ASTRONOMY; and to its study, therefore, the greatest minds have been devoted, both in ancient and modern times. Of transcendent importance is it, then, to American youth, that suitable books of instruction in this noble science, adapted to different ages and various capacities, be placed within the reach of all. In the following Series, this object has been accomplished in a masterly manner, by Professor MATTISON.

I.—PRIMARY ASTRONOMY.

Designed for beginners, and pupils in primary schools, being printed on large type, and arranged in question and answer. Difficult words are pronounced and defined, and the whole skillfully adapted to the capacity of juvenile learners. Price 31 cts.

II.—HIGH-SCHOOL ASTRONOMY.

Containing Descriptive, Physical, and Practical Astronomy, with special reference to the wants of academies and the higher seminaries of learning. In addition to the matter usually found in text-books on astronomy, the student is here taught the use of Instruments, and engravings and descriptions are given of the principal telescopes on the globe. Price 62 cts.

III.—GEOGRAPHY OF THE HEAVENS,

AND CLASS-BOOK OF ASTRONOMY, ACCOMPANIED BY A CELESTIAL ATLAS.

By ELIJAH H. BURRITT, A. M.

A New Edition, Revised and Illustrated, by Prof. H. Mattison, A. M.

This is simply such a thorough revision both of the Text and Atlas of this standard work as was demanded by recent discoveries, while the portion of the book devoted to the Solar System has been enriched by the introduction of about fifty illustrative engravings. The Atlas has been carefully examined, and all errors and discrepancies between it and the book removed. It is now more than ever entitled to the distinguished favor with which it has so long been received.

IV.—MATTISON'S ASTRONOMICAL MAPS.

A SERIES of 16 ASTRONOMICAL CHARTS, each 38 by 44 inches.

Designed to illustrate the Mechanism of the Heavens, and to be used in public lectures, and by professors in the recitation room. These Maps are accompanied by a *Key* of 240 pages 12mo. Price per set, strong paper, with Key, $15.

*** *The above works are remarkable for their accuracy and perspicuity, as well as the beauty and aptness of their pictorial illustrations.*

PUBLISHED BY F. J. HUNTINGTON,

AND

MASON BRO'S, 23 PARK ROW, NEW YORK.

MUSICAL WORKS BY PROFESSOR WOODBURY.

PUBLISHED BY

F. J. HUNTINGTON, 23 PARK ROW,

OPPOSITE ST. PAUL'S CHURCH.

THE DULCIMER. "*The work that has been tried.*"

This work is acknowledged to be the most complete collection, both as to variety and number of tunes, ever yet published. It represents TWO HUNDRED of the first composers in the world, contains nearly 1000 compositions, 75 different meters, set pieces for all occasions of public interest, such as *Installation, Dedication, Ordination, Burial of the Dead, Thanksgiving, Opening and Close of Service, Christmas, &c.*

It contains a complete theory for learning the *Organ, Piano, Seraphine,* and *Melodeon,* by figures, instructions in chanting and varying the meters, a large number of sacred ballads and duets for these instruments, and, in addition to an extraordinary amount of new music, contains *every old tune of any worth* ever used in this country. In the Elements are to be found many beautiful melodies and rounds, set to words, and designed to interest singing-schools and classes. There is a chorister's index of first lines of all the odd-meter hymns of every Hymn-book in use, with one or more tunes affixed to each.

THE LIBER MUSICUS, OR NEW YORK ANTHEM BOOK AND CHOIR'S MISCELLANY: Comprising Anthems, Choruses, Quartetts, Trios, Duets, Songs, &c., adapted to the Various Occasions of Public Worship, Wants of Choirs, Select Societies, and the Social Circle. The whole constituting the most Complete Collection of Choice Music ever published.

THE CHORUS GLEE BOOK. 6th edition. Containing Glees and Choruses from the most celebrated Operas, arranged in a simple and chaste manner. Quartetts for the Social Circle; about twenty of which are from the pen of Mr. Hastings, prepared expressly for this work.

THE MELODEON AND SERAPHINE INSTRUCTION BOOK: Containing a Complete System of Thorough Base, Instructions for Beginners on the Organ, with Directions for the Proper Use of the Pedals and Stops; and a Choice Collection of Beautiful Melodies, Interludes, and Voluntaries for the above Instruments. By I. B. WOODBURY.

THE YOUTH'S SONG BOOK. REVISED.

This exceedingly popular work has been thoroughly revised, and greatly enriched by the addition of about twenty songs of rare excellence, yet simple, and adapted to the wants of children and youth.

PINNEY AND BADOIS' FRENCH SERIES.

PUBLISHED BY F. J. HUNTINGTON,
AND
MASON BRO'S., 23 PARK ROW.

THE PRACTICAL FRENCH TEACHER; or a New Method of Learning to Read, Write, and Speak the French Language, in a Series of Lessons; with a System of Pronunciation, a Synopsis of Grammar, and a Table of French Verbs. By NORMAN PINNEY, A. M.

This is a new and thorough revision of Mr. Pinney's former work; and as a clear, systematic, and complete treatise on the grammar of the French language, it is confidently offered by the publishers as being without a superior. Mr. P.'s vast experience as teacher and author, has enabled him in the present edition to present a book not only more complete and easy, but one which can be mastered by the learner in a shorter time, and impart a more thorough knowledge of the subject. The just proportions of its parts, and its completeness as a whole, must all be considered in estimating its value; nevertheless the publishers beg leave to commend to the attention of teachers and pupils the Rules and Remarks on the Subjunctive Mood, Lessons 70 to 74; its Tenses, from Lesson 90 to 94; to the mode of introducing Irregular Verbs, pages 188, 236, and 270; to the Lessons on Auxiliary Verbs, pages 260–3; the explanations and illustrations of the use of the Past Tenses of the Indicative Mood, pages 135, 171–2; the use of the pronouns *en* and *y*, pages 61, 69, and 71; and to the use of the Article with partitive nouns, pages 55, 77, 78. These, however, are only a few specifications of important advantages which this work possesses. Another great advantage is, that its Lessons for Translation are perfectly adapted to the learner's *grammatical* progress; that is, he never is required to do more than the previous lessons and rules have prepared him to do. The author has been aided by Mr. M. C. Badois, a skilled teacher and native of France, recent from its colleges and society, by whom he has been enabled to add the sanction of the best present usage to the authority of the ablest French writers.

PINNEY'S FIRST BOOK IN FRENCH. 1 vol. 18mo.

This book is simple and easy, and intended to serve as an introduction to the preceding work.

PINNEY'S FIRST BOOK IN FRENCH, WITH A KEY.

KEY TO THE PRACTICAL FRENCH TEACHER.

PINNEY'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH READER.

1 vol. 12mo. Suited to the gradual advancement of learners. With Notes and a Lexicon, especially adapted to the Practical French Teacher.

DR. WEBSTER'S SERIES OF DICTIONARIES.

F. J. HUNTINGTON,

AND

MASON BRO'S., 23 Park Row, opposite the Astor House,

Have the gratification of presenting Dr. Webster's Dictionary in all the various forms most useful and best adapted to the wants of the community. Colleges, Academies, the higher Schools and Seminaries, our Common and Primary Schools, as well as the professional and business men of the country, may each and all here find a

DICTIONARY

in one or another of the following forms in which the work is printed, containing every thing necessary for their purpose, and in the most economical and convenient shape.

THE UNIVERSITY EDITION.

550 pages, Imperial Duodecimo. For Colleges, Professional and Business Men.

THE ACADEMIC QUARTO.

431 pages, Cap Quarto.

This edition is intended specially for Colleges and Academies. To aid the pupil in understanding the structure and grammatical relations of the language, the irregular plurals of nouns are given, together with the preterits and perfect participles of irregular verbs; derivations of words are also frequently traced; and, to aid in pronunciation, the words are carefully divided into syllables, and the sounds of the letters indicated by Dr. Webster's admirable invention of figured letters, though in many instances, to insure greater certainty, the words are respelled.

THE HIGH SCHOOL EDITION.

360 pages, Medium Duodecimo.

THE PRIMARY SCHOOL EDITION.

320 pages, Square 16mo. For our Common Schools. Containing 10,000 more words than Walker's School Dictionary.

THE POCKET EDITION.

Diamond 32mo. Put up in every style of binding for pocket and every-day use.

The plan of this work is different from any other Pocket Dictionary, in exhibiting the irregularly formed plurals of nouns, and also participles and other derivatives as a guide to their orthography; the rules in the above cases are so perplexed, or so easily forgotten, that persons of good education are not unfrequently betrayed into errors in this respect.

THE PRACTICAL FRENCH TEACHER;

OR,

A NEW METHOD

OF

LEARNING TO READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK

THE

FRENCH LANGUAGE,

IN A SERIES OF LESSONS;

WITH A SYSTEM OF PRONUNCIATION; A SYNOPSIS OF GRAMMAR; AND A TABLE OF FRENCH VERBS,

BY NORMAN PINNEY, A. M.

NEW YORK:
F. J. HUNTINGTON, AND MASON BROTHERS,
23 PARK ROW, (OPPOSITE THE ASTOR HOUSE.)
1854.

ENTERED, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1851,
By HUNTINGTON AND SAVAGE,
in the Clerk's office of the District Court of the United States, for the
Southern District of New York.

STEREOTYPED BY
RICHARD H. HOBBS
HARTFORD, CONN.

PRINTED BY
C. A. ALVORD,
29 AND 31 GOLD STREET
NEW YORK.

PREFACE.

In preparing a new edition of the Practical French Teacher, I have endeavored to render it, at the same time, more easy and more complete; to make it a book which can be mastered by the learner in a shorter time, and with a more thorough knowledge of the subject. Both of these objects, it is believed, will be found accomplished in the present work.

The subject matter in the beginning has been very gradually introduced, and especial pains have been taken to render clear and easy those particulars which are apt to present difficulties to the learner. It will be seen that, through the first half or two thirds of the book, the number of new words and principles introduced into each lesson is not great, while the phrases illustrating their use are abundant, the exercises full, and the repetitions numerous. The learner is thus rendered master of his subject as he advances, and finishes the book with ease, and with a clear comprehension of all that he has studied. The work is divided into a hundred lessons, and it is confidently believed that any learner who is passed his early childhood, who possesses fair abilities, and that diligence which is necessary to all good proficiency, can, without difficulty, go through the whole book, a lesson at each daily recitation.

Of the merit of the present work, as a clear, systematic, and complete treatise on the grammar of the French language, I would respectfully ask the intelligent teacher to examine and judge. The character which marks the great body of a work like this, the just proportion of its parts, and its completeness as a whole, must constitute its chief value, and by these the usefulness of this work will be tested; but, if particular parts are to be specified, I would ask attention to the rules and remarks on the use of the subjunctive mood, from Less. 70 to 74 inclusive, where the learner is shown that a single characteristic marks all the uses of this mood. I would ask attention to the use of the tenses of this mood, from Less. 90 to 94 inclusive, which, it is believed, are presented to the learner in a way, the most easy to be comprehended and retained in the memory; to the mode of introducing the irregular verbs, (as seen of the future, page 284, of the past definite, pages 236–7, and of the present subjunctive, page 318,) which, by presenting and making them familiar to the learner, one at a time, prevents the disagreeable necessity of studying long lists of exceptions, which, after all, are almost always forgotten. I would ask attention, also, to the lesson on the auxiliary verbs, pages 308–11; to the explanations and illustrations of the use of the past

tenses of the indicative, pages 183 and 219–20; to the use of the pronouns *en* and *y*, pages 109, 117, and 119, which are illustrated by numerous subsequent references; and to the use of the article with partitive nouns, pages 103, 125–26.

It has been thought by some who are but little acquainted with the method on which the present work is founded, that all books of this sort are necessarily superficial. Nothing can well be further from the truth; and if such persons would test the present method by experience, either as learners or teachers, they would understand that those grammars which are chiefly theoretic,—which give only the outline and shell of the language,—are superficial in the extreme, compared with these which, together with the theory, give also the ability to write and speak it; and, that the present work, if, as is confidently believed, it possesses decided advantages over others of the kind, offers to the learner what he will not be likely to acquire from any other book; certainly from none on the old method, with any thing like the same facility and in the same length of time.

One important advantage afforded by the present work is, that it is furnished throughout with a series of lessons for translation into English, which are perfectly adapted to the learner's grammatical progress. From the tenth to the twenty-sixth, an exercise of this kind is given at the end of each lesson; and, from the twenty-sixth onward, a series of exercises on the same plan, from the best French classics, is afforded in the PROGRESSIVE FRENCH READER. The judicious teacher will appreciate the benefit of such a course of translating lessons, over those which are given without regard to the learner's grammatical knowledge, and by which he is almost necessarily trained to read with habits of inattention to the grammatical construction, and to a loose, haphazard mode of translating.

In regard to authorities consulted for this work, I need mention only those from whom I have derived some aid. The most important of these, by far, are the *Dictionary of the Academy*, with the grammar according to it by Michaud, and the *grammar of Noël and Chapsal*, with the excellent grammatical remarks contained in their dictionary. Aid worthy of mention, has also been derived from *Landais*, *Duvivier*, and *Boniface*.

I have to acknowledge also, besides the important aid rendered me in a former edition by M. F. J. Sobieski, of New Haven, and Mr. J. Delchamps, of Mobile, my obligations in the present work, to M. C. Badois, of Hartford, who has rendered me very efficient aid in many respects, and who, as a skillful teacher and a native of France, recent from the colleges and society of that country, has enabled me to add the sanction of the best present usage to the authority of the ablest French writers.

N. PINNEY.

HARTFORD, *Jan. 20th*, 1851.

FRENCH ALPHABET.

LETTERS.	OLD NAMES.	NEW NAMES.	LETTERS.	OLD NAMES.	NEW NAMES.
A,	ah,	ah,	M,	emme,	me,
B,	bay,	be,	N,	enne,	ne,
C,	say,	ce,	O,	o,	o,
D,	day,	de,	P,	pay,	pe,
E,	a,	e,	Q,	ku,	ke,
F,	effe,	fe,	R,	erre,	re,
G,	jay,	ghe,	S,	esse,	se,
H,	ash,	he,	T,	tay,	te,
I,	e,	e,	U,	u,	u,
J,	jee,	je,	V,	vay,	ve,
K,	kah,	ke,	X,	eekse,	kse,
L,	elle,	le,	Y,	e grec,	ee,
			Z,	zed,	ze.

In the column New Names, e is mute every where except e representing the French i and y

---

ACCENTUATION, OR SIGNS EMPLOYED.

THE different signs which are to be mentioned in French are: the *accents*, the *cedilla*, the *apostrophe*, the *diæresis*, and the *hyphen*.

Three kinds of accents.

The *acute accent* (´) is never placed over any vowel but *e*: *facilité*. Thus accented, *e* has always the shut sound.

The *grave accent* (`) is sometimes placed over *a*, *e*, *u*, as in *là*, *accès*, *où*. Over *a* and *u*, the grave accent is only an orthographical sign; but over *e* it indicates that this vowel is to be sounded open.

The *circumflex accent* (^) is used over any vowel except *y*: *âge*, *bête*, *épître*, *hôte*, *flûte*. The vowel thus accented is always long, except *û*, which is short in a few cases.

The *cedilla* (ç) is put under *c* before *a*, *o*, *u*, when this consonant takes the sound of *s*, as in *façade*, *maçon*, *reçu*.

The *apostrophe* (') marks the elision or suppression of a vowel before another

vowel, or silent *h*, which begins the next word, thus: *l' animal*, for *le animal*, *l' homme*, for *le homme*.

The *diæresis* (¨) is placed over *e*, *i*, *u*, as in *ambiguë*, *laïque*, *Esaü*, to indicate that the foregoing vowel is to be sounded separately.

The *hyphen* (-) is used to connect the different parts of a compound word: *belles-lettres*.

ELISION

Is the omission of *a*, *e*, or *i*, at the end of a word, and supplying its place with an apostrophe (’). It takes place in the following words when they come before another beginning with a vowel or silent *h*,—*ce*, *de je*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *le*, *la*, *ne*, *que*, *jusque*; in *lorsque*, *puisque*, and *quoique*, only before *il*, *ils*, *elle*, *elles*, *en*, *on*, *un*, *une*; in *entre* and *presque* only in composition with other words, as *entr'aider*,* *presqu' île*; in *quelque* only before *un*, *autre*, as *quelqu' un*; in *si* only before *il*, *ils*.†

PRONUNCIATION.

This is divided into six tables; viz: 1. *Simple Vowels*. 2. *Compound Vowels*. 3. *Nasal Vowels*. 4. *Double Vowels or Diphthongs*. 5. *Consonants*.

1. SIMPLE VOWELS.

1	*a.*	acute,	like the English *a* in *fat*.	ma, ta, pa-pa, sac, lac, gla-ce, a-cre, fa-de, bal-la-de, a-gra-fe, bal.
2	*a.*	grave,	like the English *a* in *father*.	â-ge, â-ne, lâ-che, sa-ble, sa-brer, las, ca-se, pha-se, â-pre, câ-pre, clas-se.
3	*e.*	mute,	like *e* in *mute*.	me, te, se, que, se-rin, re-çu, ci-re, ly-re, cor-de, bri-que, fi-gue, lut-tes, hom-mes.
4	*e.*	shut,	like *a* in *fate*.	thé, é-poux, é-clat, ca-fé, blé, thés, blés, ca-fés, dan-ger, cas-ser, rou-ler, pieds, clef.
5	*e.*	open,	like *e* in *bed*, *their*.	bec, sec, chef, sels, tel, cè-de, nè-gre, bè-gue, cher, suc-cès, net, mo-dèle.
6	*ê.*	circum-flex,	broader than the preceding.	bê-te, prêt, prê-cher, ê-tre.
7	*i.*		like *e* in *me*.	fil, pe-tit, lit, fi-ne, tri-ple, i-ris, li-qui-de, î-le, gî-te, é-pî-tre, ci-dre, vie, pie, i-vre.
8	*o.*	acute,	a little broader than *o* in *some*.	co-de, lo-ge, sot-te, no-ter, vo-tre, no-tre, bos-se, es-sor, com-me, con-nu, vo-ler, vol.
9	*o.*	grave,	like *o* in *note*.	rô-der, drô-le, mô-le, im-pôt, clô-re, os, gros, pot, bi-got, si-rop, po-se, ro-se.

* *E* final of *entre* can be elided or not, at will, before *eux*, *elle*.

† *E* final of *grande* is always elided in *grand' mère*, *grand' tante*, and frequently in *grand' chambre*, *grand' chère*, *grand' chose*, *grand' croix*, *grand' messe*, *grand' peine*, *grand' peur*, *grand' rue*, *grand' pitié*, *grand' salle*, when not immediately preceded by an article or pronominal adjective.

10	*u.*	no corresponding sound.*	bru-te, nu, crû, su, plus, tu-be, sub-til, nul, tri-but, lut-ter, ru-se, muse, turc.	
7	*y.*	like *i.* (already given.)	ty-ran, syl-la-be, sty-le, zé-phyr, lys.	
		like *ii.*	pays, ray-on, loy-al, moy-en, voy-ons, foy-er, loy-er, voy-ons, croy-ons, soyons.	

2. COMPOUND VOWELS.

N. B. By compound vowels we understand a combination of vowels giving a single or simple sound; and in this respect it differs from the diphthong, which gives two sounds in one emission of the voice.

5	*ai, aî, eai, aie, ei,*	sound *è,*	chai-se, faî-te, na-geais, plaie, Sei-ne.
4	*ai, eai,*	sound *é,* sometimes,	j'ai, je na-geai.
1 or 2	*ea, eâ,*	sound *a,* or *â,*	or-geat, qu'il na-geât.
4	*ée,*	sounds *é,*	ar-mée.
8 or 9	*au, eau, eo,*	sound *o* or *ô.*	au-ro-re, eau, Geor-ges.
11	*eu, eû, eue,*	sound *eu,*† acute,	jeu-ne, leur, peu, œuf, bœuf.
12	*œu,*	sound *eu,*† grave,	vœux, jeû-ne, queue.
10	*eu, eû, eue,*	sound *u,* (very seldom,)	eu, qu'il eût, eue.
7	*ie,*	sounds *i,*	folie.
13	*ou, oû, oue,*	sound *ou,* as *oo* in *fool,*	jour, goût, joue.
10	*ue, uë,*	sound *u,*	vue, ai-guë.

3. NASAL SYLLABLES.

We reckon four nasal sounds; viz:

14	*an,*	as in plan,	N. B. The English language has no sounds exactly equivalent, but nearly like	*an* in *wang,*‡
15	*ain,*	as in pain,		*an* in *anger,*
16	*on,*	as in bon,		*on* in *wrong,*
17	*eun,*	as in à jeun.		*un* in *sung.*

These sounds are represented by many combinations as follows:

14	*am, an, ean,*	have the sound *an,*	an, plan, Sa-tan, Jean, chant, champ, jam-be, lan-cée, dan-ser, an-se.
14	*em, en,*	have the sound *an,*	en, en-nui, em-me-ner, ten-te, gen-re, tem-ple, em-ploi, pru-dent, vent.
15	*en,*	has sometimes the sound *ain,*	bien, mien, tien, sien, chien, chré-tien.

* Nearest to *w* in *sweep.* † Nearest to *e* in *her.*

‡ Pronounce the *a* as in the word *father.*

15 *aim*, *ain*, *ein*, *im*, *in*, *ym*, have the sound *ain*, — faim, saint, pain, peint, guim-pe, tim-brer, sim-ple, im-pur, tym-pan, nym-phe, crain-te, in-fect.

16 *om*, *on*, *eon*, have the sound *on*, — mon, ton, son, on, bon, pi-geon, long, ba-di-geon, om-bre, tom-be, com-pte.

17 *um*, *un*, *eun*, have the sound *eun*, — par-fum, tri-bun, un, par-fums, cha-cun, a-lun, au-cun, Huns.

4. DIPHTHONGS OR DOUBLE VOWELS.

ia,	as *i* and *a*,	fia-cre, ver-bia-ge, fiat.
iai, *ié*, *ie*,	*i* and *é*,	je sciai, je priai, je dé-fiai. / a-mi-tié, dé-fié, crié, sciés. / riez, criez, sciez, lier, crier, pied.
iai, *iè*, *ie*,	*i* and *è*,	niais, liai-son, je liais, je criais. / diè-te, or-niè-re, fiè-re, pre-miè-re. / ciel, miel, fiel, miet-te, cier-ge.
io, *iau*,	*i* and *o*,	pio-che, vio-lon, viol, vio-ler. / miau-ler, cor-diaux, ter-ri-to-riaux
iu,	*i* and *u*,	re-liu-re, diur-ne, sciu-re.
ieu,	*i* and *eu*,	lieu, pieu, mieux, lieux.
iou,	*i* and *ou*,	Sioux, chiour-me.
ian, *ien*,	*i* and *an*,	vian-de, liant, sciant. / pa-tient, au-dien-ce.
ien,	*i* and *ain*,	mien, tien, sien, chien.
ion,	*i and on*,	bas-tion, lion, Lyons.
oi, *oie*,	*o* and *a*,	boi-re, croi-re, bois, poi-re. / foie, Troie.
oe, *oi*,	*o* and *è*,	moel-le. / voi-sin, toi-le, toi-se, toit.
oin,	*o* and *ain*,	be-soin, soin, coing, foin.
ua,	*u* and *a*,	nua-ge.
uai, *ue*, *ué*, *uée*,	*u* and *é*,	je suai, je puai, je tuai. / suer, tuer, puer, muer. / sué, tué, mué, re-mué. / muée, tuée, suée, dé-nuée.
ue, *uai*,	*u* and *è*,	me-nuet, muet, luet-te. / je suais, je puais, je tuais.

ui, *uie*,	*u* and *i*,	lui, é-tui, nui, cuit, nuit. truie, suie, en-fuie.
uo,	*u* and *o*,	mons-truo-si-té.
ueu,	*u* and *eu*,	lueur, sueur, si-nueux.
uan, *uen*,	*u* and *an*,	truand, puant, suant. in-fluent, af-fluent, con-fluent.
uin,	*u* and *ain*,	Juin.
uon,	*u* and *on*,	tuons, suons, re-muons.
oua,	*ou* and *a*,	roua-ge, loua-ge, toua-ge.
oue, *oué*, *ouée*, *ouai*,	*ou* and *é*,	rouer, louer, jouer. roué, loué, joué. bouée, rouée, louée. je rouai, je louai.
oui, *ouïe*,	*ou* and *i*,	cam-bouis, en-foui, oui. ouïe.
oue, *ouai*,	*ou* and *è*,	jouet, fouet, fouet-ter. je rouais, je louais.
oueu,	*ou* and *eu*,	boueux, boueu-se.
ouen, *ouan*,	*ou* and *an*,	Rouen. rouant, louan-ge.
ouin,	*ou* and *ain*,	ba-bouin, mar-souin.
ouon,	*ou* and *on*,	rouons, jouons, louons.

5. CONSONANTS.

B, D, F, K, T, Q, V, Z, — Are pronounced as in English, except that final *D*, when connected with the following vowel, takes the sound of *T*, and *F*, in the word *neuf*, sounds *V*, also in a connection: *Grand homme*, *quand on est*, *de pied en cap*, *de fond en comble*. *Neuf hommes*, *neuf agneaux*.

C, — Before *a*, *o*, *u*, has the sound of *K*; before *e*, *i*, that of *s*. When it has the sound of *s* before *a*, *o*, *u*, it is written *ç*. *Cadre*, *cordon*, *cuve*, *clef*, *craie*, *ciment*, *cendre*, *façon*, *reçu*. *Second* and its derivatives sound *segond*, etc.

G, — Two sounds. Before *e* and *i*, it has nearly the sound of *s* in *pleasure*. In other cases it takes the hard sound of *g* in *girl*. *Gendre*, *gens*, *geler*, *gîte*, *giron*, *gueule*, *gond*, *galop*, *glande*, *grande*. In the words *rang*, *sang*, *long*, *g* sounds *k*, when it is connected with the following vowel.

H, — Is either aspirated or silent. It is to be observed that the French do not aspirate it so strongly as the English do.

J, — Is sounded nearly as *z* in *azure*. *Jamais*, *jeune*, *Jean*, *Joseph*.

L, Two sounds: 1. The English one. 2. The liquid one. *Livre, lent, élu, élève, pelé, fille, paille, treille, œil, seuil.*

M, and N, Have the same sound as in English, except in the syllabical terminations *an, en, in, on, un, aim, eim*, etc., where they have a nasal sound similar to that of *n* in *bank.*

R, It has a much stronger sound than in English. *Rare, rire, frire, crier, rond, courir, venir, erreur, peur.*

S, Two sounds. The hard sound of *c* in *cell*, and the soft sound, that is, the sound of *z*. It has most generally the hard sound, when it is not between two vowels, in which case it has ordinarily the soft one. *Soulier, salon, preste, leste, liste, besoin, asile, cerise, bison, faisons.*

T, Two sounds. The natural sound, as in *time*, and the sound of *s* in *salt. Temps, ton, patron, Platon, patient, portion, faction, factieux.*

X, Four sounds; on which no rule is to be given, on account of their being very inconstant. 1. Sound of *ks;* as in, *Axe, taxe, vexé, fluxion, axiome.* 2. Sound of *gz*, as in, *Exil, exercer, exemple, examen.* 3. Sound of *s;* as in, *Auxerre, Auxone, Luxeuil, Bruxelles.* 4. Sound of *z;* as in, *Deuxième, sixième, dix-huit, dix-neuf.*

W, Is sometimes sounded *v*, sometimes *u*, sometimes *ou.* It occurs very seldom in French, and only in foreign words. *Washington, Newton, wagon, New-York, Walter Scott, Whig, whiski, Law, Warwick, Westphalie, Wallone.*

DIRECTIONS FOR STUDYING THE LESSONS.

1. The learner is to be made acquainted with the pronunciation of the words and phrases in the vocabulary.

2. He is to write the English exercises in French.

3. He is to commit the whole to memory so far as to give orally and fluently the French of all the English words and phrases, both in the vocabulary and in the exercises.

4. When this has been recited, and the written exercises corrected, the teacher is to ask the questions in French, to be answered by the learner in French.

N. B. I would urge particularly upon the teacher and learner not to omit, as is sometimes done, the committing of the lessons to memory and reciting them orally. I would recommend also, as much exercise as circumstances allow, in asking the questions in French to be answered by the learner in French. This forms for the learner a conversation in the language from the very beginning, and the more of this he has, the more his ear and his vocal organs are accustomed to the language, and the more familiar he is made with the construction and use of French sentences. The Key will be found useful to ask these questions from, and the teacher will find, from the fiftieth lesson onward, a portion of each lesson to consist of questions only, which will be at the same time more convenient to him and more improving to the pupil.

PRELIMINARY EXERCISES

1. PREMIÈRE LEÇON.

I. Have,	*Je. Ai,*
I have,	*J' ai.*

Je always becomes *j'* before a verb beginning with a vowel.

The. The *tea,*	*Le.* Le *thé,*
I have the tea. I have the *coffee,*	J' ai le thé. J' ai le *café,*
I have the *biscuit.* The *bread,*	J' ai le *biscuit.* Le *pain,*
The *sugar.* The *beef,* or *ox,*	Le *sucre.* Le *bœuf,*
The *mutton,* or *sheep.* The *fruit,*	Le *mouton.* Le *fruit,*
My. Your,	*Mon. Votre,*
I have my bread. I have your sugar,	J' ai mon pain. J' ai votre sucre.

I have the tea. I have the coffee. I have the biscuit. I have the bread. I have the sugar. I have the beef. I have the mutton. I have the fruit. I have my tea. I have my coffee. I have my biscuit. I have my bread. I have my sugar. I have my beef. I have my mutton. I have my fruit. I have your tea. I have your coffee. I have your biscuit. I have your bread. I have your sugar. I have your beef. I have your mutton. I have your fruit.

2. SECONDE LEÇON.

The *dish.* The *salt,*	Le *plat.* Le *sel,*
The *butter.* The *milk,*	Le *beurre.* Le *lait,*
The *bag.* The *button,*	Le *sac.* Le *bouton,*
The *paper.* The *cotton,*	Le *papier.* Le *coton,*
The *ribbon.* *Good,*	Le *ruban.* *Bon,*

Bad. I have the good dish,	*Mauvais.* J' ai le bon plat,
I have the bad salt,	J' ai le mauvais sel,
I have my good butter,	J' ai mon bon beurre,
I have your bad milk,	J' ai votre mauvais lait.

I have the dish. I have the salt. I have the butter. I have the milk. I have the bag. I have the button. I have the paper. I have the ribbon. I have the cotton. I have the good dish. I have the good butter. I have the good bag. I have the good paper. I have the good ribbon. I have the bad salt. I have the bad milk. I have the bad button. I have the bad cotton. I have my bad dish. I have your good salt. I have my good butter. I have your bad milk. I have my bad bag. I have your good button. I have my good paper. I have your bad cotton. I have my bad ribbon.

3. TROISIÈME LEÇON.

You. Have,	*Vous. Avez,*
You have. You have the *cider,*	Vous avez. Vous avez le *cidre,*
You have the *string,*	Vous avez le *cordon,*
You have the *lead pencil,*	Vous avez le *crayon,*
The *cap.* The *pantaloons,*	Le *bonnet.* Le *pantalon,*
The *tobacco*, or *snuff.* *Large,*	Le *tabac.* *Grand,*
Small, little. *Long,*	*Petit.* *Long,*
You have the long string,	Vous avez le long cordon,
You have my large pencil,	Vous avez mon grand crayon,
You have your little cap,	Vous avez votre petit bonnet.

You have the cider. You have the pencil. You have the string. You have the cap. You have the pantaloons. You have the tobacco. You have the large dish. You have the large bag. You have the large button. You have the long ribbon. You have the long string. You have the little pencil. You have the cap. You have the small pantaloons. You have the bad tobacco. You have the good cider. You have my cider. You have your tobacco. You have your little string. You have my little cap. You have your large pencil. You have my large pantaloons. You have your long pencil.

4. QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

Have you? Have you the bread?	*Avez-vous?* Avez-vous le pain?
I have the bread. The *barrel*,	J' ai le pain. Le *baril*,
The *pepper*. The *veal*, or *calf*,	Le *poivre*. Le *veau*,
The *chicken*. The *pie*,	Le *poulet*. Le *pâté*,
The *cake*. *What? which?*	Le *gâteau*. *Quel?*
What cake? *Pretty*,	Quel gâteau? *Joli*,
The *book*. The *first*,	Le *livre*. Le *premier*,
The *second*,	Le *second*, or le *deuxième*,
The *third*. The *last*,	Le *troisième*. Le *dernier*,
What barrel have you?	Quel baril avez-vous?
I have the pretty barrel,	J' ai le joli baril,
What book have you?	Quel livre avez-vous?
I have the first book,	J' ai le premier livre,
Have you the second book?	Avez-vous le second livre?
I have the third book,	J' ai le troisième livre,
Have you the last book?	Avez-vous le dernier livre?

Have you the barrel? I have the barrel. Have you the pepper? I have the pepper. Have you the veal? I have the veal. Have you the chicken? I have the chicken. Have you the pie? I have the pie. Have you the cake? I have the cake. What cake have you? I have the pretty cake. Have you the last book? I have the last book. Have you the last pie? I have the last pie. Have you the third chicken? I have the third chicken. Have you the second chicken? I have the second chicken. What chicken have you? I have the second chicken. Have you the first veal? I have the first veal. What pepper have you? I have my pretty pepper. Have you your pretty barrel? I have my pretty barrel. Have you my good barrel? I have your good barrel. What book have you? I have my first book. Have you the last book? I have the last book. What pie have you? I have my pie.

5. CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

The *celery*. The *cabbage*,	Le *céleri*. Le *chou*,
The *turnip*. The *pea*,	Le *navet*. Le *pois*,

It, or *him*,	*Le*, (placed before the verb,)
Have you the celery? I have it,	Avez-vous le céleri? Je l' ai.

Le becomes *l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

Have you it? I have it,	L' avez-vous? Je l' ai,
The *syrup*. The *punch*,	Le *sirop*. Le *punch*,
The *pepper-box*. The *sugar-bowl*,	La *poivrière*. Le *sucrier*,
The *cheese*. The *glove*,	Le *fromage*. Le *gant*,
Have you the glove?	Avez-vous le gant?
I have the glove,	J' ai le gant.

Have you the cabbage? I have the cabbage. Have you it? I have it. Have you the turnip? I have it. Have you the little pea? I have it. Have you the syrup? I have it. Have you the punch? I have it. Have you the pepper-box? I have it. Have you the sugar-bowl? I have it. Have you the cheese? I have it. Have you it? I have it. What beef have you? I have my beef. What fruit have you? I have the good fruit. What button have you? I have the little button. What paper have you? I have the large paper. Have you it? I have it. Have you the celery? I have the celery. Have you the turnip? I have the turnip. Have you the small pea? I have it.

6. SIXIÈME LEÇON.

Yes. No,	*Oui. Non*,
Mister, *sir*, *gentleman*,	*Monsieur*, contracted *Mr.*,
Yes, sir. No, sir,	Oui, monsieur, Mr. Non, Mr.,
The *gold*. The *silver*, or *money*	L' *or*. L' *argent*,
The *coat*. The *sideboard*,	L' *habit*. Le *buffet*,
The *apron*. The *bird*,	Le *tablier*. L' *oiseau*,
And. *But*,	*Et*. *Mais*,
Have you the gold?	Avez-vous l' or?
Yes, sir; I have the gold and the silver,	Oui, monsieur; j' ai l' or et l' argent,
Have you the coat?	Avez-vous l' habit?
No, sir; but I have the pantaloons,	Non, Mr.; mais j' ai le pantalon,
The *bed*. The large bed,	Le *lit*. Le grand lit,
Have you the bed?	Avez-vous le lit?
I have the bed and the pretty sideboard,	J' ai le lit et le joli buffet,
Have you the syrup?	Avez-vous le sirop?

I have the syrup and the punch,	J' ai le sirop et le punch,
Have you the pepper-box?	Avez-vous la poivriere?
No, sir; but I have the sugar-bowl,	Non, Mr.; mais j' ai le sucrier,
Have you the pretty bird?	Avez-vous le joli oiseau?
I have him,	Je l' ai,
Have you the mutton?	Avez-vous le mouton?
Yes, sir; and I have the beef,	Oui, Mr.; et j' ai le bœuf.

Have you the apron? No, sir. What bird have you? I have the pretty bird. Have you the gold and the silver? Yes, sir; and I have the salt and the butter. Have you the large bag? No, sir; but I have the good cotton and the long ribbon. Have you the cider? I have it. Have you it? Yes, sir. What tobacco have you? I have my good tobacco. Have you the pantaloons? No, sir; but I have the coat. Have you it? Yes, sir. Have you the pepper? I have it. Have you the celery and the cabbage? No, sir; but I have the turnip and the pea. Have you the cheese? I have it. Have you it? Yes, sir; and I have the pepper-box and the sugar-bowl. What apron have you? I have my small apron.

7. SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

Have I? You have,	***Ai-je?*** Vous avez,
Have I the money? You have it,	Ai-je l' argent? Vous l' avez,
Have I your coat?	Ai-je votre habit?
You have it, and you have my cap,	Vous l' avez, et vous avez mon bonnet,
The *wood.* The *iron,*	Le *bois.* Le *fer,*
Also. *Or,*	*Aussi.* *Ou,*
The wood or the iron,	Le bois ou le fer,
The *knife.* The *coal, charcoal,*	Le *couteau.* Le *charbon,*
Have I the knife?	Ai-je le couteau?
You have the knife and the charcoal also,	Vous avez le couteau et le charbon aussi,
The *onion.* The *inkstand,*	L' *oignon.* L' *encrier,*
The *horse.* The *servant,*	Le *cheval.* Le *domestique,*
Big, coarse. *Ugly,*	*Gros.* *Vilain,*
I have the wood and the coal also,	J' ai le bois et le charbon aussi,
Have I the big onion?	Ai-je le gros oignon?
You have it, and you have the ugly inkstand also,	Vous l' avez, et vous avez le vilain encrier aussi.

Have I the iron? You have it. Have I the horse? You have him, and you have the good servant also. Have I the big onion? Yes, sir; you have it, and you have the big inkstand also. Have I the ugly horse? Yes, sir; you have him and you have the ugly servant also. Have I the celery or the cabbage? You have the celery and the cabbage also. Have I the little pea? No, sir; but you have the little turnip. Have I the punch? You have the punch and the syrup. Have I the pepper-box or the sugar-bowl? You have the pepper-box and the sugar-bowl. Have I your knife? You have it, and you have the gold and the iron also. What sideboard have you? I have the large sideboard. Have I the coat or the apron? You have the coat and the apron also.

8. HUITIÈME LEÇON.

This, or *that*,	*Ce*,
This *razor*. That *stick*,	Ce *rasoir*. Ce *bâton*.

Ce becomes *cet* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

That *animal*. This *ass*,	Cet *animal*. Cet *âne*,
This *spur*. That *gun*,	Cet *éperon*. Ce *fusil*,
This *turkey*. That *duck*,	Ce *dindon*. Ce *canard*,
The *parasol*. The *umbrella*,	Le *parasol*. Le *parapluie*,
The *rice*. The *pork*,	Le *riz*. Le *porc*,
What razor have I?	Quel rasoir ai-je?
You have my razor,	Vous avez mon rasoir,
Have you that stick?	Avez-vous ce bâton?
I have this stick,	J' ai ce bâton,
Have I this spur?	Ai-je cet éperon?
You have that spur. You have it,	Vous avez cet éperon. Vous l' avez,
You have this duck and this turkey,	Vous avez ce canard et ce dindon,
What animal have I?	Quel animal ai-je?
You have the large horse and the ugly ass,	Vous avez le grand cheval et le vilain âne,
Have you that gun? I have it,	Avez-vous ce fusil? Je l' ai.

Have I the good bed? Yes, sir; you have it, and you have the wood and the iron. Have I your knife? Yes, sir; and you have my inkstand also. Have you it? I have it. Have I the onion or the cabbage? You have the onion and the cabbage. Have I the

inkstand? You have it, and I have the stick and the gun. Have I this razor? Yes, sir; you have it, and I have this spur and this gun. What servant have you? I have this good servant. Have I the parasol or the umbrella? You have the parasol and the umbrella also. Have I the rice or the pork? You have the rice and the pork, and I have the cheese and the butter. What animal have you? I have the ass. Have I the turkey? You have it, and you have the duck also. Have I the rice? You have it, and I have the pork.

9. NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

Not,	*Ne pas.*
Ne is placed before the verb and *pas* after it.	*Ne* becomes *n'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.
Have you not the tea?	N' avez-vous pas le thé?
I have not the tea,	Je n' ai pas le thé,
Have you not the coffee?	N' avez-vous pas le café?
I have not the coffee,	Je n' ai pas le cafe,
The *cat*. The *rat*,	Le *chat*. Le *rat*,
The *mattress*. The *bedstead*,	Le *matelas*. Le *bois de lit*,
The *bolster*. The *pillow*,	Le *traversin*. L' *oreiller*,
The *looking-glass*. The *picture*,	Le *miroir*. Le *tableau*,
The *seat*. The *arm-chair*,	Le *siège*. Le *fauteuil*,
The *marble*. The *hay*,	Le *marbre*. Le *foin*,
The *cloth*. The *leather*,	Le *drap*. Le *cuir*,
Have you not the cat?	N' avez-vous pas le chat?
I have not the cat, I have the rat,	Je n' ai pas le chat, j' ai le rat.

Have you not the mattress? I have not the mattress. Have you not the bedstead? I have it. Have you not the bolster? I have not the bolster, but I have the pillow. Have you the looking-glass? I have not the looking-glass, but I have the picture. Have you not the cloth and the leather? I have not the cloth, but I have the leather. What seat have you? I have this arm-chair. Have you not the marble and the hay? I have not the marble, but I have the hay. Have you not the long stick? I have not the long stick, but I have the big gun. Have you not the ugly animal? I have not that animal, but I have the horse and the ass. Have you not the turkey? I have it not, but I have the duck. What rat have you?

I have the little rat. Have you it? I have it. Have you not the bedstead? I have not the bedstead, but I have the bolster and the pillow. Have you not the picture and the looking-glass? I have the looking-glass, but I have not the picture.

10. DIXIÈME LEÇON.

The *shoe*. The *stocking*,	Le *soulier*. Le *bas*,
This *hat*. That *handkerchief*,	Ce *chapeau*. Ce *mouchoir*,
The *dog*. The *garden*,	Le *chien*. Le *jardin*,
My *pistol*. Your *jacket*, *waistcoat*,	Mon *pistolet*. Votre *gilet*,
The *cloak*. The *fan*,	Le *manteau*. L' *éventail*,
The *velvet*. The *morocco*,	Le *velours*. Le *maroquin*,
Handsome, *fine*. *Old*,	*Beau*. *Vieux*,
The handsome stocking,	Le beau bas,
The old shoe,	Le vieux soulier.

Beau becomes *bel*, and *vieux* often becomes *vieil* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

The handsome bird,	Le *bel* oiseau,
The handsome tree,	Le bel *arbre*,
The old spur,	Le *vieil* (or vieux) éperon,
Have you not the handsome hat?	N' avez-vous pas le beau chapeau?
I have the old handkerchief,	J' ai le vieux mouchoir,
I have not the large horse,	Je n' ai pas le grand cheval,
Have you not him? I have him not,	Ne l' avez-vous pas? Je ne l' ai pas,
I have not the old coat,	Je n' ai pas le vieux (or vieil) habit,
Have you it not? I have it not,	Ne l' avez-vous pas? Je ne l' ai pas.

Have you not the old dog? I have him not. Have you him not? No, sir; but I have the handsome garden. Have you the gun and the pistol? No, sir; I have the gun, but I have not the pistol. Have you it not? I have it not. Have you not the waistcoat? No, sir; I have not the waistcoat, but I have the cloak. Have you not the fan? I have it not. Have you it not? No, sir; I have not the fan, but I have the velvet and the morocco. What morocco have you? I have the handsome morocco. I have the shoe and the stocking; have you not the hat? I have it not. Have you it not? No, sir; I have not the hat, but I have the handsome handkerchief. Have you the dog or the horse? I have the dog. Have you not the handsome garden? I have it. Have you not the pistol? No, sir;

have you it not? I have it not. Have you the old cloak? I have it not; have you it not? I have it. Have you not the pork and the rice? I have the rice, but I have not the pork. Have you the large cat? I have him. Have you not the mattress? I have it not, but I have the pillow. Have you not my seat? No, sir; have you it not? I have it not, but I have your old arm-chair. Have you the marble? I have it; and I have the hay. What leather have you? I have the morocco.

11. ONZIÈME LEÇON.

This *steel*. That *lead*,	Cet *acier*. Ce *plomb*,
The *copper*. The *mahogany*,	Le *cuivre*. L' *acajou*,
The *bucket*. The *tumbler*,	Le *seau*. Le *verre, gobelet*,
This *curtain*. That *basin*,	Ce *rideau*. Ce *bassin*,
The *soap*. The *towel*,	Le *savon*. L' *essuie-main*,
The *candlestick*. The *bellows*,	Le *chandelier*. Le *soufflet*,
The *stove*. The *basket*,	Le *poêle*. Le *panier*,
What, (meaning what thing?)	*Que?*
What have you? I have the steel,	Qu' avez-vous? J' ai l' acier,
I have not the lead,	Je n' ai pas le plomb,
Have I not the copper?	N' ai-je pas le cuivre?
You have it not,	Vous ne l' avez pas.

Have I not the bucket? You have it not. Have I not the tumbler? You have it not. Have I not the curtain? You have it not, but you have the basin and the soap. Have I not your towel? You have it not. What have you? I have the candlestick. Have I not the bellows? No, sir; but you have the stove. Have I not the basket? You have it not. What have you? I have the shoe and the stocking, and I have the jacket and the cloak also. Have I not your copper? You have it not, but you have my gold and my silver. Have I not the old bucket? You have it not, but you have the basin and the tumbler. Have you the curtain? I have it not. Have you the soap or the towel? I have the soap, I have not the towel. Have I not your candlestick? You have it not, but you have my bellows. Have you the handsome stove? I have it not. Have I not your basket? You have it not. What have you? I

have the basin and the tumbler. What have you? I have the bedstead and the mattress. What mahogany have you? I have the fine mahogany.

12. DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

My *father*. My *brother*,	Mon *père*. Mon *frère*,
Your *uncle*. Your *friend*,	Votre *oncle*. Votre *ami*,
The *wine*. The *glass*,	Le *vin*. Le *verre*,
The old *desk*. The *pigeon*,	Le vieux *pupitre*. Le *pigeon*,
The *chocolate*. The *fish*,	Le *chocolat*. Le *poisson*,
The *bench*. The *andiron*,	Le *banc*. Le *chenet*,
The *word*. The *best*,	Le *mot*. Le *meilleur*,
Of. Of my father,	*De*. De mon père,
My brother's; or, of my brother,	De mon frère,
Your uncle's; or, of your uncle,	De votre oncle,
My friend's; or, of my friend,	De mon ami,
The desk of your brother; or, your brother's desk,	Le pupitre de votre frère,
I have not your friend's book,	Je n'ai pas le livre de votre ami.

The possessive case in English, is translated into French as above, with *de* before the possessor.

You have my friend's stick,	Vous avez le bâton de mon ami.

Have you not the wine of my uncle? I have not your uncle's wine. Have you it not? I have it not. Have you my father's money? I have it not, but I have the chocolate of your father. What glass have you? I have the glass of my brother. Have you the pigeon of my brother? I have it not, but I have your uncle's dog. Have I not the fish? You have it, and you have the handsome bird also. Have I the long bench? You have it, and you have the andiron also. What word have you? I have the best word. Have you the first word? I have it, and I have the second and the third. What desk have I? You have the last desk. Have I the pigeon? You have it not. Have I the chocolate of your friend? No, sir; you have it not, but you have my fish. What andiron have you? I have the best andiron. Have you the bucket? I have it not; have you it not? I have it. Have I your curtain?

You have it. Have I the basket? You have it not. What have you? I have the bellows and the stove. Have you my father's picture? Yes, sir; and I have your uncle's looking-glass.

13. TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

Has. He, it,	***A. Il,***
Has he? He has,	A-t-il? Il a,

The *t* in *a-t-il* is used merely for the sound.

Has he not? He has not,	N' a-t-il pas? Il n' a pas,
Has he it? He has it,	L' a-t-il? Il l' a,
Has he it not? He has it not,	Ne l' a-t-il pas? Il ne l' a pas,
Has he the handsome garden?	A-t-il le beau jardin?
He has it,	Il l' a,
Has he not my pistol?	N' a-t-il pas mon pistolet?
He has it not,	Il ne l' a pas,
He has the shoe; has he not the stocking also?	Il a le soulier; n' a-t-il pas le bas aussi?
What has he?	Qu' a-t-il?
His, (an adjective.) His cat,	***Son.*** Son chat,
Has he his glass?	A-t-il son verre?
He has it,	Il l' a,
Mine. Yours,	***Le mien. Le vôtre,***
His, (a pronoun,)	***Le sien.***

His belonging to a noun is rendered *son*, without a noun *le sien*.

Has he his bolster or mine?	A-t-il son traversin ou le mien?
He has his and yours,	Il a le sien et le vôtre.

Has he his pillow? He has his pillow. Has he his seat? He has it. Has he not his? Yes, sir; he has his and mine. Has he not yours? No, sir; he has not mine. What marble has he? He has yours. Has he his handkerchief? He has it not. Has he it not? No, sir; he has not his, but he has mine and yours. What fan has he? He has his. Has he the velvet? He has it. Has he not the lead? He has it not. What has he? He has his velvet. Has he the mahogany? Yes, sir; and he has the steel and the copper. Has he not the bucket? Yes, sir; and he has the tumbler and the glass. Has he the handsome curtain? He has it, and he has the

basin and the soap also. Has he not mine? He has yours and his. Has he his towel? He has it, and he has the bellows also. Has he not my father's stove? He has it not. Has he it not? No, sir; but he has the basket of your uncle. Have you the pigeon? I have it not, but I have the chocolate and the fish. What bench have you? I have the bench of my friend.

14. QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

The *man*. The *captain*,	L' *homme*. Le *capitaine*,
Has the man his wine?	L' homme a-t-il son vin?

This is the usual form of asking a question with a noun for the subject. The noun comes before the verb, and its pronoun is used also after the verb.

Has the captain his chocolate?	Le capitaine a-t-il son chocolat?
The *general*. The *son*,	Le *général*. Le *fils*,
The *soldier*. The *boy*,	Le *soldat*. Le *garçon*,
Young. The young soldier,	*Jeune*. Le jeune soldat,
Brave. *Wicked*,	*Brave*. *Méchant*,
The *prince*. The *countryman*,	Le *prince*, Le *paysan*,
Dear. *Excellent*,	*Cher*. *Excellent*,
The brave soldier. The wicked boy,	Le brave soldat. Le méchant garçon,
My dear friend. The excellent fish,	Mon cher ami. L' excellent poisson,
Has the general his horse?	Le général a-t-il son cheval?
The general has his horse, and his son has the gun,	Le général a son cheval, et son fils a le fusil,
Has not the soldier his hat?	Le soldat n' a-t-il pas son chapeau?
He has the hat of his captain,	Il a le chapeau de son capitaine,
What desk has that boy?	Quel pupitre ce garçon a-t-il?
He has your brother's desk,	Il a le pupitre de votre frère.

Has the prince his chocolate? He has it, and he has the pigeon and the fish. What bench has the countryman? He has the long bench. Has the son of our general his pistol? He has it not. What has he? He has the andiron and the bucket. Has that young man the best punch? Yes, sir; he has the best punch and the best syrup. Has the brave soldier his bed? He has it; and he has his bedstead also. Has the wicked boy his iron? He has it not. Has that young man your razor? He has it not. What has he? He has the turkey

and the duck. Has that man the parasol? He has it not. Has he it not? No, sir; but he has the umbrella, and his son has the rice and the pork. Has not your young friend the mattress and the cloth? Yes, sir; and he has the bolster and the pillow. Has he not the picture? He has it not. What seat has he? He has the arm-chair. Has he the marble? Yes, sir; and he has the hay and the leather. My dear friend, have you not the excellent wine? I have it not; the son of our brave captain has it. Has not that man my cloak? He has not yours. Has he his? No, sir; he has mine.

15. QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

The *egg*. This *pewter*,	L' *œuf*. Cet *étain*,
That *ivory*. That *wheat*,	Cet *ivoire*. Ce *froment*,
This *corn*, (Indian corn,)	Ce *maïs*,
The *thimble*. The *linen*,	Le *dé*. Le *linge*,
The *cork*. The *corkscrew*,	Le *bouchon*. Le *tire-bouchon*,
A, *an*, *one*. A *tailor*. A *baker*,	*Un*. Un *tailleur*. Un *boulanger*,
Which one? Which one have you?	*Lequel?* Lequel avez-vous?
Silly, *foolish*. A foolish book,	*Sot*. Un sot livre,
What has the tailor?	Le tailleur qu' a-t-il? / Qu' a le tailleur?
He has the thimble,	Il a le dé,
What has the baker?	Qu' a le boulanger? or, / Le boulanger qu' a-t-il?
Which one has he?	Lequel a-t-il?
What has that silly man?	Ce sot homme qu' a-t-il?
He has the pewter and the ivory,	Il a l' étain et l' ivoire.

What has the baker? He has the wheat and the corn. What has the young tailor? He has the linen. What has the brave soldier? He has the pewter and the ivory. Has he the cork? He has it, and he has the corkscrew also. Which one has he? He has his. Has he not mine? He has not yours. What wheat has that baker? He has the good wheat. Has he not the good corn? He has it not. What has that tailor. He has his thimble and the handsome linen. Has he not the onion and the egg? He has the onion, but he has not the egg. Has he it not? He has it not. Has the brave

general his horse? He has him. What has the wicked prince? He has the ivory. Has he it? He has it. What has the countryman? He has his corn.

My dear friend, have you our tailor's thimble? I have it not; you have it. Has the servant the cork? He has the cork and the corkscrew. What has that man? He has our captain's wine. What pie has he? He has our baker's pie. Has he not the pewter and the ivory of our prince? No, sir; he has the pewter and the ivory of this blacksmith. Has the countryman his wheat and his corn? No, sir; he has not his, he has yours. What book have you? I have the foolish book. Which one have you? I have mine.

---

16. SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

Have we? We have,	*Avons-nous? Nous avons,*
Have we it? We have it,	L' avons-nous? Nous l' avons,
Have we it? We have it,	L' avons-nous? Nous l' avons,
Have we not? We have not,	N' avons-nous pas? Nous n' avons pas,
Have we it not?	Ne l' avons-nous pas?
We have it not,	Nous ne l' avons pas,
What have we not?	Que n' avons-nous pas?
What have we?	Qu' avons-nous?
What has not the tailor?	Le tailleur que n' a-t-il pas?
What has he not?	Que n' a-t-il pas?
Our. Our *courage,*	*Notre.* Notre *courage,*
The *pink.* The *lily,*	L' *œillet.* Le *lis,*
Have we the pink?	Avons-nous l' œillet?
We have the pink,	Nous avons l' œillet,
Have we not the lily?	N' avons-nous pas le lis?
We have not the lily,	Nous n' avons pas le lis,
The *hammer.* The *carpenter,*	Le *marteau.* Le *charpentier,*
Our carpenter's hammer; or, the hammer of our carpenter,	Le marteau de notre charpentier,
My *cousin.* Our *neighbor,*	Mon *cousin.* Notre *voisin,*
Has our cousin the pink?	Notre cousin a-t-il l' œillet?
He has it not,	Il ne l' a pas,
The *least. Courage,*	Le *moindre. Courage,*
The least courage,	Le moindre courage,
Wit. The least wit,	*Esprit.* Le moindre esprit,

Ours. We have ours,	Le *nôtre.* Nous avons le nôtre,
Who? Who has ours?	*Qui?* Qui a le nôtre?
Who has our hammer?	Qui a notre marteau?
The carpenter has it,	Le charpentier l' a,
He has his and ours,	Il a le sien et le nôtre.

Have we the velvet and the morocco? We have the velvet, but we have not the morocco. Have we not the lead? We have it. Have we the mahogany of this carpenter? We have it not. What have we? We have the jacket of our cousin. What have we not? We have not the linen of our neighbor. Have we not the tumbler? We have it not, but we have the basin, the soap, and the towel. Who has the bellows? Our cousin has it, and he has the handsome curtain also. Have we a good stove? Yes, sir; and we have the excellent coal also.

Have we the glass? We have it. What word have we? We have the first and the second, and you have the third and the last. Have we that boy's pigeon? We have it. Have we our andiron? We have it not. Who has the third word? Our neighbor has it. My dear cousin, have you my friend's book? I have it. Who has the pink? The son of our neighbor has it. Has he the lily? He has it not. Has that soldier the least courage? He has not the least courage. Has the carpenter the least wit? He has not the least wit. Who has our hammer? That man has it. Has he his or ours? He has ours.

17. DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

The, (plural.) The gloves, *Les.* Les gants.

The plural of nouns and adjectives is generally formed by adding an *s* to the singular. Adjectives and articles agree in number with their nouns.

The brave soldiers. The good princes,	Les braves soldats. Les bons princes,
The wicked boys,	Les méchants garçons,
The little fishes,	Les petits poissons,
The great captains,	Les grands capitaines,
My, (plural,)	*Mes*, (plural of *mon*,)
Mine, "	*Les miens*, (plural of *le mien*,)
Your, "	*Vos*, (plural of *votre*,)

Yours, (plural,)	*Les vôtres*, (plural of *le vôtre*,)
His, *her*, *its*, (plural,)	*Ses*, (plural of *son*,)
His, *hers*, *its*, "	*Les siens*, (plural of *le sien*,)
Our, "	*Nos*, (plural of *notre*,)
Ours, "	*Les nôtres*, (plural of *le nôtre*,)
Their,	*Leur*, (singular,) *leurs*, (plural,)
Theirs,	*Le leur*, (singular,) *les leurs*, (plural,)
Them,	*Les*, before the verb,
Have you them? I have them,	Les avez-vous? Je les ai,
Which ones?	*Lesquels*, (plural of *lequel*?)
These, or *those*,	*Ces*, (plural of *ce*,)
The *merchant*,	Le *marchand*,
Have we this merchant's barrels?	Avons-nous les barils de ce marchand?
We have his barrels,	Nous avons ses barils,
Have you my buttons?	Avez-vous mes boutons?
I have your buttons,	J' ai vos boutons,
Have you mine?	Avez-vous les miens?
I have yours,	J' ai les vôtres,
Has the merchant our ribbons?	Le marchand a-t-il nos rubans?
He has not ours; he has his,	Il n' a pas les nôtres; il a les siens,
He has his guns; he has not theirs,	Il a ses fusils; il n' a pas les leurs,
Have we their salt?	Avons-nous leur sel?
We have not theirs,	Nous n' avons pas le leur,
Which ones has he?	Lesquels a-t-il?
He has mine,	Il a les miens,
Has he them? He has them not,	Les a-t-il? Il ne les a pas,
Have you them not?	Ne les avez-vous pas?
I have them not,	Je ne les ai pas,
Have we them? We have them,	Les avons-nous? Nons les avons,
Has he them not? He has them,	Ne les a-t-il pas? Il les a.

Have you my pencils? I have not yours, I have mine. Have you your small buttons? I have them not. Which ones have you? I have ours. Has he our inkstands? He has not ours; he has his. Have we the pies of those bakers? We have not their pies, but we have their bread. Who has their wheat? The merchant has theirs and ours. Have you their pinks and their lilies? I have not theirs, I have ours. Who has my books? This man has yours and mine. Who has our ribbons? The servant has yours and ours. Has he your turkies? No, sir; he has them not. but he has our ducks and your chickens.

Have you the cotton of those merchants? Yes, sir; I have their cotton and their corn. Have you not the pistols of those soldiers? I have not theirs, I have ours. Has not the boy my spurs? No, sir; he has not your spurs, he has his. Have we the corn of those countrymen? We have not theirs, we have ours. Have I not theirs? You have it not. Who has our pencils? The son of our neighbor has them. Which ones have you? I have mine. Which ones has your cousin? He has yours and his. Has not the young man our seats? He has not mine, he has yours.

18. DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

Have they? They have,	*Ont-ils? Ils ont.*
Have they not? They have not,	N' ont-ils pas? Ils n' ont pas,
Have they it? They have it,	L' ont-ils? Ils l' ont,
Have they them? They have them,	Les ont-ils? Ils les ont,
Have they it not? They have it not,	Ne l' ont-il pas? Ils ne l' ont pas,
Have they them not?	Ne les ont-ils pas?
They have them not,	Ils ne les ont pas,
The *lion.* The *tiger,*	Le *lion.* Le *tigre.*
Poor. Honest,	*Pauvre. Honnête,*
The *stranger.* The *child,*	L' *étranger.* L' *enfant,*
This *scholar.* The *mason,*	Cet *écolier.* Le *maçon,*
The *fisherman.* The *doctor,*	Le *pêcheur.* Le *docteur,*
Gentlemen, sirs, Messrs.,	*Messieurs,* contracted Mrs.,
Have the gentlemen my gloves?	Les messieurs ont-ils mes gants?
They have them,	Ils les ont,
Have those poor children their bread?	Ces pauvres enfants ont-ils leur pain?
They have it not,	Ils ne l' ont pas,
Have the gentlemen it?	Les messieurs l' ont-ils?
They have it,	Ils l' ont,
What have the strangers?	Les étrangers qu' ont-ils?
They have the lions and the tigers,	Ils ont les lions et les tigres,
What have those honest men?	Ces honnêtes hommes qu' ont-ils?
They have the books of that scholar,	Ils ont les livres de cet écolier,
Have you our mason's hammer?	Avez-vous le marteau de notre maçon?
Have the doctors their tobacco?	Les docteurs ont-ils leur tabac?
No, sir; the strangers have it,	Non, Mr.; les étrangers l' ont.

We have seen that the French adjectives thus far given, are placed before their nouns. It may be taken as a general rule that all other adjectives are placed after their nouns.

Live. Dead,	*Vivant. Mort,*
Live pigeons. Dead pigeons,	Pigeons vivants. Pigeons morts,
What have those fishermen?	Ces pêcheurs qu' ont-ils?
They have their fish,	Ils ont leurs poissons.

Have those poor children their beef? They have their beef and their mutton. What have those good scholars? They have their books. Have the masons our hammers? They have not ours; they have theirs. Have the fishermen the live fish? No, sir; they have the dead fish. Who has the lion and the tiger? The captain has them. Have they their peas? They have them. Have those poor children their milk? They have it. What has the countryman? He has the lion and the tiger. Have they the fish of this fisherman? They have his live fish. Have they not his ducks? They have not his; they have theirs. Have those masons their gloves? They have them.

Have the strangers my books? They have not yours, they have mine. Has the scholar his biscuits? He has his. Who has our inkstands? The doctor has them. Have those gentlemen the wood or the coal? They have the wood and the coal. Have the doctors their money? They have it. Have they your paper? No, sir; they have theirs. Have they not theirs and ours? No, sir; they have theirs, but they have not ours. Has he his little bags? He has them. Have we the papers of our doctor? We have them not. What have those honest men? They have their money and their papers. Have they not your papers? They have not my papers, but they have the papers of those strangers. Have not those poor children their caps and their pantaloons? They have them. Which ones have they? They have theirs.

19. DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

That *instrument.* This *stool,*	Cet *instrument.* Ce *tabouret,*
The *ham.* The *physician,*	Le *jambon.* Le *médecin,*
The instrument of copper,	L' instrument de cuivre.

REMARK 1. The material of which any thing is made, is often used as an adjective in English, in French, *de* precedes it.

The silver dish, or dish of silver,	Le plat d' argent,
The gold buttons, or buttons of gold,	Les boutons d' or,
The paper caps, or caps of paper,	Les bonnets de papier,
The cotton glove, or glove of cotton,	Le gant de coton,
The steel knife. The wooden stool,	Le couteau d' acier. Le tabouret de bois,
The *drawer*. The wooden drawer,	Le *tiroir*. Le tiroir de bois,
Of the, (singular,)	*Du*, *de l'*, before a vowel or silent *h*,
Of the, (plural,)	*Des*.

Remark 2. *Du* is a contraction of *de le*, and *des* of *de les*. These contractions, therefore, are to be used when *de* comes before these articles, which sometimes occurs when *the* is not used in the corresponding English, as

The captain's gun, or the gun of the captain,	Le fusil du capitaine,
The captains' guns, or the guns of the captains,	Les fusils des capitaines.

From the above it may be seen that the possessive case, preceded by *the*, is rendered into French by the noun, preceded by *du*, or *des*.

The boy's knife, or the knife of the boy,	Le couteau du garçon,
The boys' oxen, or the oxen of the boys,	Les bœufs des garçons,
The man's ham, or the ham of the man,	Le jambon de l' homme,
The men's hams, or the hams of the men,	Les jambons des hommes,
The friend's book, or the book of the friend,	Le livre de l' ami,
The physician's instruments,	Les instruments du médecin.

Du and *des* are used also when *of* in English precedes the possessive pronouns.

Of mine,	*Du mien*, (singular,) *des miens*, (plural,)
Of yours,	*Du vôtre*, " *des vôtres*, "
Of ours,	*Du nôtre*, " *des nôtres*, "
Of his,	*Du sien*, " *des siens*, "
Of theirs,	*Du leur*, " *des leurs*, "
Of which one. Of which ones,	*Du quel. Des quels*,
Have you the silver dish?	Avez-vous le plat d' argent?
No, sir; I have the pewter dish,	Non, Mr.; j' ai le plat d' étain,
Have those gentlemen our ivory sticks?	Ces messieurs ont-ils nos bâtons d' ivoire?
They have them,	Ils les ont,
What stool have you?	Quel tabouret avez-vous?
I have the captain's stool,	J' ai le tabouret du capitaine,
Have you the papers of your father or of mine?	Avez-vous les papiers de votre père ou du mien?
I have the papers of yours,	J' ai les papiers du vôtre,
Have you the words of your cousins or of ours?	Avez-vous les mots de vos cousins ou des nôtres?

I have the words of yours,	J' ai les mots des vôtres,
Has he the instrument of my physician?	A-t-il l' instrument de mon médecin?
No, sir; he has the instrument of his,	Non, Mr.; il a l' instrument du sien.

What instrument have you? I have the iron instrument. Have you not the ivory instrument? I have it not. Has not that scholar the mahogany stool? No, sir; he has the wooden stool. What sideboard have we? We have the mahogany sideboard. Have those little boys their silver tumblers? They have them. What fish have they? They have the fisherman's fish. Have they the live fish? They have the live fish, and they have the dead fish also. Who has the carpenter's hammer. My uncle has it, and he has the general's stick. What has the young physician? He has the tailor's thimble and the merchant's linen. Have the soldiers our guns? They have not ours, they have theirs. Have they the scholar's books? They have them not. Have they not mine? They have yours.

What have you? I have the countryman's chicken and the mason's hammer. What has the baker? He has the merchant's chocolate. Have we not the soldiers' guns? We have them not. What drawer have you? I have the wooden drawer. Have you the mahogany drawer? I have it not. Have you the boys' papers? We have them not. Have the servants our baskets? They have them not; they have the countrymen's baskets and the boys' seats. What have those boys? They have the children's fruit and the scholar's books. Have you the horse of your father or of ours? I have the horse of yours.

20. VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

Are you looking for? do you look for?	*Cherchez-vous?*
I look for, I am looking for,	*Je cherche,*
Are you not looking for?	Ne cherchez-vous pas?
I am not looking for,	Je ne cherche pas,
Me. Us. You,	*Me. Nous. Vous.*

These pronouns are placed before the verbs of which they are the objects.

Are you looking for me?	*Me* cherchez-vous?
I am looking for you,	Je *vous* cherche,
Are you not looking for us?	Ne *nous* cherchez-vous pas?

I am not looking for you,	Je ne *vous* cherche pas,
Are you not looking for him?	Ne le cherchez-vous pas?
I am not looking for him; I am looking for them;	Je ne le cherche pas; je les cherche,
Whom? Whom are you looking for?	*Qui?* Qui cherchez-vous?
Are you not looking for me?	Ne me cherchez-vous pas?
I am not looking for you,	Je ne vous cherche pas,
What are you looking for?	Que cherchez-vous?
I am looking for my brother's pigeon,	Je cherche le pigeon de mon frère,
Where. Here. There,	*Où. Ici. Là,*
On. Under. In,	*Sur. Sous. Dans,*
I am looking for the tailor's thimble,	Je cherche le dé du tailleur,
Where are you looking for it?	Où le cherchez-vous?
I am looking for it here on the floor,	Je le cherche ici sur le plancher,
You are looking for it there on the hearth,	Vous le cherchez là sur le foyer,
The *floor.* The *hearth,*	Le *plancher.* Le *foyer,*
Do you look for it on the bench, or under the bench?	Le cherchez-vous sur le banc, ou sous le banc?
I am looking for it here in this drawer,	Je le cherche ici dans ce tiroir.

Whom are you looking for? I am looking for my father and my uncle. Are you looking for them there? I am looking for them here in the garden. Are you looking for us? I am not looking for you, I am looking for the captain's boys. Are you looking for a glass of wine? No, sir; I am looking for the fisherman's fish. Are you looking for it here or there? I am looking for it here on the bench. Are you looking for me? I am looking for you, and I am looking for the young man also. You are looking for us; are you not looking for the son of the general also? I am looking for you, but I am not looking for him. What are you looking for? I am looking for the chocolate of this brave soldier. Are you looking for it on my desk? No, sir; I am looking for it on the hearth and on the floor.

Where are you looking for the andiron? I am looking for it here under the bench. What words have you? I have the first and the second. Who has the best ivory? The wicked prince has it. Have we not the countryman's eggs? We have them. What have those men? They have the excellent wheat and the excellent corn. What has the baker? He has the iron instrument. Which one has he? He has the doctor's instrument. Has he the instrument of our doctor or of yours? He has the instrument of ours.

21. VINGT-ET-UNIÈME LEÇON.

Do we look for? are we looking for?	*Cherchons-nous?*
We look for, are looking for,	Nous cherchons,
Are we not looking for?	Ne cherchons-nous pas?
We are not looking for,	Nous ne cherchons pas,
Are you not looking for us?	Ne nous cherchez-vous pas?
We are not looking for you,	Nous ne vous cherchons pas,
A *relation.* *Rich*,	Un *parent.* *Riche*,
White. *Black.* *Blue*,	*Blanc.* *Noir.* *Bleu*,
Other. The *other.* The *same*,	*Autre.* L' *autre.* Le *même*,
The one and the other, both, (singular,)	*L' un et l' autre*,
The ones and the others, both, (plural,)	*Les uns et les autres*,
Fat. *Lean*,	*Gras.* *Maigre*,
Are you looking for your relations?	Cherchez-vous vos parents?
We are not looking for them, we are looking for you,	Nous ne les cherchons pas, nous vous cherchons,
We are looking for you; are you looking for us?	Nous vous cherchons; nous cherchez-vous?
No, sir; I am looking for the rich man,	Non, Mr.; je cherche l' homme riche,
We are looking for the white handkerchiefs; are you looking for the same?	Nous cherchons les mouchoirs blancs; cherchez-vous les mêmes?
No, sir; we are looking for the black and the blue ones,	Non, M.; nous cherchons les blancs et les bleus.

Remark 1. *One, ones*, following adjectives are not to be rendered in French.

The good one. The good ones,	Le bon. Les bons,
The large one. The large ones,	Le grand. Les grands,
We are looking for the lean horse; are you looking for the same?	Nous cherchons le cheval maigre; cherchez-vous le même?
I am looking for the other,	Je cherche l' autre,
Are you looking for the fat one, or the lean one?	Cherchez-vous le gras, ou le maigre?
We are looking for both,	Nous cherchons l' un et l' autre,
We are looking for the white gloves; are you looking for the black ones, or the blue?	Nous cherchons les gants blancs; cherchez-vous les noirs ou les bleus?
We are looking for both,	Nous cherchons les uns et les autres.

I am looking for you; are you looking for me? No, sir; we are looking for our rich relation. Where are you looking for him? We are looking for him here. What are you looking for there on the

floor and on the hearth? We are looking for the cork and the corkscrew. What are you looking for here? I am looking for my handkerchief. Are you looking for the white, or the black one? I am looking for the blue; are you looking for the same, or for the other? I am looking for the other. We are looking for you; are you looking for us? No, sir; we are looking for your relation. Where are you looking for him? I am looking for him here in the garden. What are you looking for under the desk? I am looking for the cork and the corkscrew.

Has the servant the ham or the chicken? He has both. Has he the fat ham or the lean? He has the fat. Has the physician the black stockings, or the white ones? He has both. What has that poor child? He has the wooden stool. Has he the carpenter's hammer? He has his large hammer and his little stool. Has the physician the gardener's pinks? He has his pinks and his lilies. What have your cousins? They have the fisherman's fish. Have they the live ones, or the dead ones? They have both. We are looking for our rich neighbor; whom are you looking for? We are looking for the merchant. Which one are you looking for? We are looking for the rich one.

22. VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

Does he look for? Is he looking for?	*Cherche-t-il?*
He looks for, is looking for,	Il cherche,
Is he not looking for?	Ne cherche-t-il pas?
He is not looking for,	Il ne cherche pas,
Is he looking for me?	Me cherche-t-il?
He is not looking for you; he is looking for us,	Il ne vous cherche pas; il nous cherche.

REMARK 1. Nouns and adjectives ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, are the same in both numbers; as,

The wood, the woods,	Le bois, les bois,
The big pea, the big peas,	Le gros pois, les gros pois,
The old stocking, the old stockings,	Le vieux bas, les vieux bas.

REMARK 2. Nouns and adjectives ending in *al* change these letters into *aux*, and those in *au*, *eu*, add an *x* for the plural; as,

The calf, the calves,	Le veau, les veaux,

The cake, the cakes,	Le gâteau, les gâteaux,
The handsome bird, the handsome birds,	Le bel oiseau, les beaux oiseaux,
The horses. The animals,	Les chevaux. Les animaux,
The knives. The hats,	Les couteaux. Les chapeaux,
The pictures. The generals,	Les tableaux. Les généraux,
Neither, (conjunction,) *Nor*,	*Ne*, (before the verb,) *ni*, (after it,) *Ni*,
He is looking for neither the hats nor the cloaks,	Il ne cherche ni les chapeaux ni les manteaux,
They have neither the calves nor the horses,	Ils n' ont ni les veaux ni les chevaux,
We have neither ours nor yours,	Nous n' avons ni le nôtre ni le vôtre,
He has neither the good nor the bad,	Il n' a ni le bon ni le mauvais,
He has neither his nor mine,	Il n' a ni le sien ni le mien,
Neither, (adjective sing.,)	*Ni l' un ni l' autre*, (*ne* bef. verb,)
Neither, (adjective plural,)	Ni les uns ni les autres, (*ne* bef. verb,)
He is looking for neither the merchant nor the physician,	Il ne cherche ni le marchand ni le médecin,
He is looking for neither,	Il ne cherche ni l' un ni l' autre,
We are looking for neither the masons nor the carpenters,	Nous ne cherchons ni les maçons ni les charpentiers.
We are looking for neither,	Nous ne cherchons ni les uns ni les autres,
Whom is your relation looking for?	Votre parent qui cherche-t-il?
He is looking for the neighbors' children,	Il cherche les enfants des voisins,
Is the stranger looking for me?	L' étranger me cherche-t-il?
He is looking for us,	Il nous cherche.

Whom is that scholar looking for? He is looking for the son of the fisherman. Is he not looking for us? He is looking for me, he is not looking for you. Is that poor man looking for the stranger's child, (child of the stranger?) No, sir; he is looking for the gentleman's servant, (servant of the gentleman.) Is he not looking for me? No, sir; he is looking for us. I am looking for your honest neighbor; is he looking for me? He is looking for you. Where is he looking for me? He is looking for you in the general's garden. What is your relation looking for? He is looking for the scholars' books, (books of the scholars.) Where is he looking for them? He is looking for them on the hearth. Is he not looking for them under the desk on the floor? No, sir; he is looking for them under the bench on the hearth. Are you looking for me? I am not looking for you, but this honest mason is looking for you.

What are you looking for? I am looking for our gloves. Are you looking for the blue or the black ones? We are looking for neither the blue nor the black ones; we are looking for the white ones. What is your relation looking for? He is looking for the linen. Is he looking for his or yours? He is looking for both. Has the countryman the lion or the tiger? He has both. Are you looking for the linen or the cotton? I am looking for neither the linen nor the cotton. Which (*lequel*) is the servant looking for? He is looking for neither. Are you looking for the white handkerchiefs or the blue? We are looking for neither. Is the fisherman looking for your fish or mine? He is looking for neither mine nor yours; he is looking for his.

23. VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

Are they looking for? do they look for?	*Cherchent-ils?*
They are looking for, do look for,	Ils cherchent,
Are they not looking for?	Ne cherchent-ils pas?
They are not looking for,	Ils ne cherchent pas,
Whom are those men looking for?	Ces hommes qui cherchent-ils?
They are looking for us,	Ils nous cherchent,
Something, any thing,	*Quelque chose,*
Nothing, not any thing,	*Ne*, before the verb, *rien* after it,
The *blacksmith.* The *cook,*	Le *forgeron.* Le *cuisinier,*
Are the cooks looking for the live fish or the dead?	Les cuisiniers cherchent-ils les poissons vivants ou les morts?
They are looking for both,	Ils cherchent les uns et les autre,
Are the blacksmiths looking for the iron or the steel?	Les forgerons cherchent-ils le fer ou l'acier?
They are looking for neither,	Ils ne cherchent ni l' un ni l' autre,
Are they looking for the ham or the beef?	Cherchent-ils le jambon ou le bœuf?
They are looking for neither the ham nor the beef,	Ils ne cherchent ni le jambon ni le bœuf,
What are the blacksmiths looking for?	Les forgerons que cherchent-ils?
They are looking for nothing,	Ils ne cherchent rien,
Are the cooks looking for nothing?	Les cuisiniers ne cherchent-ils rien?
They are looking for something,	Ils cherchent quelque chose,
The *penknife.* The *broom,*	Le *canif.* Le *balai.*

REMARK 1. The termination *ci* is annexed to nouns to denote an object more near, and *là* to denote one more remote.

This penknife. That penknife,	Ce canif-ci. Ce canif-là,
This broom. That broom,	Ce balai-ci. Ce balai-là,
This, this one. That, that one,	*Celui-ci. Celui-là,*
These. Those,	*Ceux-ci. Ceux-là.*

REMARK 2. *Ce, ces,* are adjectives, and always belong to some noun; *celui-ci, celui-là, ceux-ci, ceux-là,* are pronouns, and used without nouns; as,

Are you looking for this penknife or that penknife?	Cherchez-vous ce canif-ci ou ce canif-là?
I am looking for this one and that one,	Je cherche celui-ci et celui-là,
Are you looking for these brooms or those?	Cherchez-vous ces balais-ci ou ceux-là?
I am looking for those brooms, I am not looking for these,	Je cherche ces balais-là, je ne cherche pas ceux-ci,
The cook is looking for neither this one nor that,	Le cuisinier ne cherche ni celui-ci ni celui-là,
We are looking for these and those,	Nous cherchons ceux-ci et ceux-là.

Are the blacksmiths looking for any thing? They are looking for nothing. Are the cooks looking for any thing? They are looking for something. What are they looking for? They are looking for the blacksmith's penknife. Are they looking for this one or that one? They are looking for neither this one nor that one, they are looking for the little one. Are the blacksmiths looking for the brooms? They are looking for them. Are they looking for these or those? They are looking for these and those. Are those gentlemen looking for any thing? They are looking for nothing. What are your relations looking for? They are looking for their gloves. Are they looking for the white or for the blue ones? They are looking for neither. I am looking for your friend; is he looking for me? He is not looking for you, he is looking for us.

Whom are you looking for? We are looking for the neighbor's child. Are you looking for this child or that one? We are looking for neither this one nor that one. What are those strangers looking for? They are looking for nothing. Are those scholars looking for any thing? They are looking for their books. Are they looking for these books or those? They are looking for these and those. Where are they looking for them? They are looking for them here on the floor, and they are looking for them there in that drawer. Are you looking for the same books or the others? We are looking for the same.

24. VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

Do you speak? I speak,	*Parlez-vous? Je parle,*
Do you not speak?	Ne parlez-vous pas?
I do not speak,	Je ne parle pas,
Do we speak? We speak,	*Parlons-nous?* Nous parlons,
Do we not speak?	Ne parlons-nous pas?
We do not speak,	Nous ne parlons pas,
To me. To you. To us,	*Me. Vous. Nous,*
To him. To them,	*Lui. Leur.*

REMARK. These pronouns also are placed before the verbs which they limit.

Do you speak to me? I speak to you,	*Me* parlez-vous? Je *vous* parle,
Do you not speak to us?	Ne *nous* parlez-vous pas?
We do not speak to you,	Nous ne *vous* parlons pas,
To. To the man. To my brother,	*À.* À l' homme. À mon frère,
Do you not speak to me?	Ne *me* parlez-vous pas?
I do not speak to you,	Je ne *vous* parle pas,
Do you speak to that man?	Parlez-vous à cet homme?
We speak to him,	Nous *lui* parlons,
Do you not speak to my cousins?	Ne parlez-vous pas à mes cousins?
We do not speak to them,	Nous ne *leur* parlons pas,
To whom? To whom do you speak?	*À qui?* À qui parlez-vous?
I speak to you; do you not speak to me?	Je *vous* parle; ne *me* parlez-vous pas?
I do not speak to you, I speak to my servant,	Je ne *vous* parle pas, je parle à mon domestique,
Do you speak to this servant or to that one?	Parlez-vous à ce domestique-ci ou à celui-là?
I speak to that servant, I do not speak to this one,	Je parle à ce domestique-là, je ne parle pas à celui-ci,
Do you speak to these soldiers or those?	Parlez-vous à ces soldats-ci ou à ceux-là?
We speak to neither these nor those,	Nous ne parlons ni à ceux-ci ni à ceux-là,
Do you speak to them?	*Leur* parlez-vous?
I speak to them,	Je *leur* parle,
Do you speak to your relation?	Parlez-vous à votre parent?
I speak to him,	Je *lui* parle.

To whom do you speak? I speak to our cook; do you not speak to him? I do not speak to him. Do you speak to those scholars? We speak to them; do you not speak to them? We speak to them. We speak to you; do you not speak to us? We speak to you. Do you speak to me? No, sir; I speak to those children. You speak

to us; do you not speak to our friends also? Yes, sir; we speak to them. Whom are you looking for? I am looking for the mason's boy; are you not looking for him? I am looking for him and he is looking for me. Is the countryman looking for you? He is looking for us. What have those countrymen? They have the lion and the tiger. Has the doctor the least courage? He has neither the least wit nor the least courage.

What are you looking for there under the bench? I am looking for the scholars' pencils. Do you speak to these children or those? I speak to those children, I do not speak to these. Are you looking for the knife of this man or of that? I am looking for the knife of that man. Is the man looking for this ribbon or that? He is looking for neither this one nor that one. Is the servant looking for both? He is looking for neither. Are the servants looking for these brooms or those? They are looking for both. Are you looking for the fat horse or the lean? I am looking for the fat, I am not looking for the lean. Which one is the boy looking for? He is looking for neither.

25. VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

Does he speak? is he speaking?	***Parle-t-il?***
He speaks, is speaking,	Il parle,
Does he not speak?	Ne parle-t-il pas?
He does not speak,	Il ne parle pas,
Does the farmer speak to you?	Le fermier vous parle-t-il?
He speaks to me,	Il me parle,
Does he speak to that lawyer?	Parle-t-il à cet avocat?
He speaks to him,	Il lui parle,
He does not speak to us,	Il ne nous parle pas,
The *farmer*. The *lawyer*,	Le *fermier*. L' *avocat*,
Do they speak? are they speaking?	***Parlent-ils?***
They speak, are speaking,	Ils parlent,
Do they not speak?	Ne parlent-ils pas?
They do not speak,	Ils ne parlent pas,
To whom do the farmers speak?	À qui les fermiers parlent-ils?
They speak to us,	Ils nous parlent,
Do they not speak to you?	Ne vous parlent-ils pas?
They do not speak to me,	Ils ne me parlent pas,

Do the lawyers speak to these farmers?	Les avocats parlent-ils à ces fermiers?
They speak to them,	Ils leur parlent,
Some one, somebody, any one,	*Quelqu' un,*
Nobody, none,	*Personne,* (with *ne* before the verb,)
Do they speak to any one?	Parlent-ils à quelqu' un?
They speak to no one,	Ils ne parlent à personne,
To the, (singular,)	*Au, à l'* before a vowel,
To the, (plural,)	*Aux,*
To whom do the lawyers speak?	À qui les avocats parlent-ils?
They speak to the farmers,	Ils parlent aux fermiers,
To whom do you speak?	À qui parlez-vous?
I speak to the farmer and to the lawyer,	Je parle au fermier et à l' avocat,
Why? Because,	*Pourquoi? Parce que,*
Why are you looking for that man?	Pourquoi cherchez-vous cet homme?
I am looking for him because he has my papers,	Je le cherche parce qu' il a mes papiers,
Does any one speak to you?	Quelqu' un vous parle-t-il?
No one speaks to me,	Personne ne me parle,
Who speaks to the lawyer?	Qui parle à l'avocat?
The physician speaks to him, and he speaks to the merchant also,	Le médecin lui parle, et il parle au marchand aussi,
Do you speak to any one?	Parlez-vous à quelqu' un?
I speak to no one,	Je ne parle à personne,
We speak to the merchants,	Nous parlons aux marchands.

To whom does that man speak? He speaks to nobody. Does he not speak to you? He does not speak to me. Does any one speak to us? Those lawyers speak to us. Do you speak to them? I do not speak to them. To whom does the farmer speak? He speaks to the neighbor and to the stranger. Does any one speak to you? No one speaks to me. To whom do the soldiers speak? They speak to the generals. Do they not speak to the captain? They speak to him. What is that scholar looking for? He is looking for his books. Is he looking for them on the desk or under the desk? He is looking for them under the desk on the floor. What is that lawyer looking for? He is looking for his papers. Is he looking for these or those? He is looking for these.

Is the scholar looking for his pencil or his penknife? He is looking for neither. Is the cook looking for this broom or that? The cook is looking for neither this one nor that, but the servant is looking for

both. To whom are those men speaking? They are speaking to the farmer and to the lawyer. Are you speaking to them? I am not speaking to them, I am speaking to the soldiers. Do you speak to the fisherman? I speak to him, and the cook is speaking to him also. Why do you speak to the foolish man? I speak to him because he speaks to me. Why are the soldiers looking for the captain? They are looking for him because he has their money. To whom are those blacksmiths speaking? They are speaking to the merchant. Why are they speaking to him? They are speaking to him because he has their steel.

26. VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

The persons of the verbs thus far given terminate as follows:—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
J' ai,	*tu as,*	*il a,*	*nous avons,*	*vous avez,*	*ils ont.*
I have,	thou hast,	he has,	we have,	you have,	they have.
1	2	3	1	2	3
Je cherche,	*tu cherches,*	*il cherche,*	*nous cherchons,*	*vous cherchez,*	*ils cherchent.*
I seek,	thou seekest,	he seeks,	we seek,	you seek,	they seek.
1	2	3	1	2	3
Je parle,	*tu parles,*	*il parle,*	*nous parlons,*	*vous parlez,*	*ils parlent.*
I speak,	thou speakest,	he speaks,	we speak,	you speak,	they speak.

From what has preceded we perceive that *the verb agrees with its subject in number and person;* that is, in the singular number, *je* always takes the first person of the verb, *tu* the second, *il* and all other subjects singular the third; in the plural, *nous* always takes the first person, *vous* the second, *ils* and all other subjects plural the third.

The verb *to give*, in French, is varied the same as the verbs *to seek* and *to speak*, as above.

1	2	3	1	2	3
Je donne,	*tu donnes,*	*il donne,*	*nous donnons,*	*vous donnez,*	*ils donnent.*
I give,	thou givest,	he gives,	we give,	you give,	they give.

The *hinge.* The *mackerel,*	Le *gond.* Le *maquereau,*
The *thread.* *Fine,*	Le *fil.* *Fin,*
The *master.* The *sailor,*	Le *maître.* Le *matelot,*
What do you give to the blacksmith?	Que donnez-vous au forgeron?
I give (to) him the iron hinge,	Je lui donne le gond de fer.

The *to* after *give*, is often omitted in English, but is always retained in French.

What does he give (to) the master?	Que donne-t-il au maître?
He gives him the mackerel,	Il lui donne le maquereau,
What do you give (to) the sailors?	Que donnez-vous aux matelots?

We give (to) them the fine thread,	Nous leur donnons le fil fin,
Do they give any thing to the master?	Donnent-ils quelque chose au maître?
They give him nothing,	Il ne lui donnent rien
It to me. Them to me,	*Me le. Me les,*
It to you. Them to you,	*Vous le. Vous les,*
It to us. Them to us,	*Nous le. Nous les,*
Do you give me the black thread?	Me donnez-vous le fil noir?
I give *it to you,*	Je *vous le* donne,
Does the master give you his book?	Le maître vous donne-t-il son livre?
He does not give *it to me,*	Il ne *me le* donne pas,
Does he give us his pencil?	Nous donne-t-il son crayon?
He gives *it to us,*	Il *nous le* donne,
Do the sailors give us the mackerel?	Les matelots nous donnent-ils les maquereaux?
They do not give *them to us,*	Ils ne *nous les* donnent pas,
Do they give *them to me?*	*Me les* donnent-ils?
They do not give *them to you,*	Ils ne *vous les* donnent pas.

Does the master give us his penknife? He does not give it to us. Does he give it to me? He gives it to you. What do the gardeners give you? They give us their pinks and their lilies. Do you give them to me? I do not give them to you. To whom does the master give his? He gives them to us. What has the tailor? He has the fine thread. To whom does he give it? He gives it to us. Do you give it to me? I do not give it to you. What have the blacksmiths? They have the iron hinges. Have they these hinges or those? They have neither these nor those. Has our tailor the fine thread or the coarse? He has the fine. Has he this thread or that? He has neither this nor that. Have the boys neither? They have both. I give the sailors their mackerel; do they give them to you? They do not give them to me. Do they give them to us? They do not give them to you.

Do you speak to me? I do not speak to you. Do you speak to the sailor? I speak to him. Why do you speak to him? I speak to him because he has the good mackerel. Does he give them to you? He gives them to us. Do you give them to me? We do not give them to you. What is the lawyer looking for? He is looking for his papers. Is he looking for them there in that drawer? No, sir; he is looking for them on the floor and on the hearth. Is he

looking for these papers or those? He is looking for neither; he is looking for these in the drawer. I give the gardener my fruit; does he give it to you? He gives it to us. Do you not give it to me? We give it to you. Who has the carpenter's hinge? The sailors have it.

27. VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

The *hemp*. The *flax*,	Le *chanvre*. Le *lin*,
A *collar*. A velvet collar,	Un *collet*. Un collet de velours,
The *nephew*. The *old man*,	Le *neveu*. Le *vieillard*,
The *pike*. The *broth*,	Le *brochet*. Le *bouillon*,
The *boiled-meat*. The *roast-meat*,	Le *bouilli*. Le *rôti*,
It to him, to it. Them to him, to it,	*Le lui. Les lui*,
It to them. Them to them,	*Le leur. Les leur*,
Do you give the tailor the hemp thread?	Donnez-vous le fil de chanvre au tailleur?
I give *it to him*,	Je *le lui* donne,
What does he give to his nephew?	Que donne-t-il à son neveu?
He gives him a velvet collar,	Il lui donne un collet de velours,
Do you give the pike and the broth to the old man?	Donnez-vous le brochet et le bouillon au vieillard?
We give *them to him*,	Nous *les lui* donnons,
Do you give the boiled-meat to the sailors?	Donnez-vous le bouilli aux matelots?
We give *it to them*,	Nous *le leur* donnons,
Do the fishermen give them the pike?	Les pêcheurs leur donnent-ils les brochets?
They give *them to them*,	Ils *les leur* donnent,
Do you give the stranger the roast-meat?	Donnez-vous le rôti à l' étranger?
I give it to him,	Je *le lui* donne,
What do you give me?	Que me donnez-vous?
I give you nothing,	Je ne vous donne rien,
Do you give me this flax?	Me donnez-vous ce lin?
I do not give it to you,	Je ne *vous le* donne pas,
Do you give it to the old man's nephew?	Le donnez-vous au neveu du vieillard?
I give *it to him*,	Je *le lui* donne,
Do you give the linen thread to the tailors?	Donnez-vous le fil de lin aux tailleurs?
We give *it to them*,	Nous *le leur* donnons,
Do the fishermen give the pike to the cook?	Les pêcheurs donnent-ils les brochets au cuisinier?

They do not give *them to him*,	Ils ne *les lui* donnent pas,
Do they give them to the sailors?	Les donnent-ils aux matelots?
They give *them to them*,	Ils *les leur* donnent.

What are you looking for? I am looking for the hemp. What is the tailor looking for? He is looking for his linen thread. Do you give him the velvet collar? I do not give it to him. Does the scholar give his books to the master? He gives them to him. Do you give your fruit to the sailors? We give it to them. Do the fishermen give them their pike and their mackerel? They give them to them. What do the cooks give the strangers? They give them the roast-meat and the boiled-meat. Do they not give them the broth? They do not give it to them. Do they give it to the old man? They do not give it to him, they give it to his nephew. What have you? I have the countryman's hemp. Do you not give it to him? I give it to him. Have you the cook's roast-meat and his boiled-meat? We have them. Do you not give them to him? We do not give them to him. Do you not give them to the sailors? We give them to them.

Does the servant give the children their broth? He gives it to them. Does he give them their cakes also? He gives them to them. To whom do you speak? I speak to the old man's nephew; do you not speak to him? I do not speak to him. I am looking for the fine thread; are you looking for the same or for the other? We are looking for the other. Is the tailor looking for these collars or for those? He is looking for both. Are his boys looking for both? They are looking for neither. Are you looking for the books or the papers? I am looking for neither. Which ones are the scholars looking for? They are looking for neither, they are looking for the inkstand. Where are they looking for it? They are looking for it on the hearth.

28. VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

REMARK 1. We have seen that the pronouns, DIRECT OBJECTS of the verb, i. e., the same as the object of the transitive verb in English, are these: *me*, me; *vous*, you; *nous*, us; *le*, him, or it; and *les*, them, placed before the verb.

We have seen also that the pronouns, INDIRECT OBJECTS of the verb, i. e., with *to* or *for*

expressed or implied before them in English, are these; *me*, to me; *vous*, to you; *nous*, to us; *lui*, to him, or it; *leur*, to them, placed before the verb.

We have seen further, that when the direct and indirect objects are both used with the verb, they are placed before it and in the following order:—

It to me. Them to me,	Me le. Me les,
It to thee. Them to thee,	Te le. Te les,
It to us. Them to us,	Nous le. Nous les,
It to you. Them to you,	Vous le. Vous les,
It to him. Them to him,	Le lui. Les lui,
It to them. Them to them,	Le leur. Les leur.

Remark 2. We here see that the objective pronouns in French, unlike those in English, follow the order of persons; the first and second persons are always placed before the third; and when both objects are third person, the direct is before the indirect. Thus we see that *me* and *nous* the first person, *te* and *vous* the second, are placed before *le* and *les* the third; and *le* and *les* the direct object, are before *lui* and *leur* the indirect.

The *chest*. The *honey*,	Le *coffre*. Le *miel*,
The *grocer*. The *apothecary*,	L' *épicier*. Le *pharmacien*,
The *traveler*. The *musician*,	Le *voyageur*. Le *musicien*,
Sometimes. *Always*,	*Quelquefois*. *Toujours*,
Ever,	*Jamais*,
Never,	*Jamais*, (with *ne* before the verb,)
The *store*. The *brook*,	Le *magasin*. Le *ruisseau*.

J' envoie,	*tu envoies*,	*il envoie*,	*nous envoyons*,	*vous envoyez*,	*ils envoient*
I send,	thou sendest,	he sends,	we send,	you send,	they send.

Do you send your chest to the store?	Envoyez-vous votre coffre au magasin?
I send it to the brook,	Je l' envoie au ruisseau,
Does the grocer send me his honey?	L' épicier m' envoie-t-il son miel?
He does not send it to you, he sends it to me,	Il ne *vous l'* envoie pas, il *me l'* envoie,
Do you send us the honey?	Nous envoyez-vous le miel?
We do not send it to you, we send it to the apothecaries,	Nous ne *vous l'* envoyons pas, nous l' envoyons aux pharmaciens,
Why do you send it to them?	Pourquoi *le leur* envoyez-vous?
We send it to them because we have their money,	Nous *le leur* envoyons parce que nous avons leur argent,
Do they not send it to us?	Ne *nous l'* envoient-ils pas?
They do not send it to you, they send it to me,	Ils ne *vous l'* envoient pas, ils *me l'* envoient,
Do you send the chest to the traveler?	Envoyez-vous le coffre au voyageur?
I send it to him,	Je *le lui* envoie,
Do you ever send your pinks to the musician?	Envoyez-vous jamais vos œillets au musicien?

I never send them to him,	Je ne *les lui* envoie jamais,
Does the gardener always send us his lilies?	Le jardinier nous envoit-il toujours ses lis?
He does not always send them to you, he sometimes sends them to me,	Il ne *vous les* envoie pas toujours, il *me les* envoie quelquefois.

REMARK 3. Adverbs are generally placed immediately after the verbs.

Do you ever send them to us?	*Nous les* envoyez-vous jamais?
I never send them to you,	Je ne *vous les* envoie jamais.

To whom does the musician send his instruments? He sends them to the grocer. Does he sometimes send them to the apothecary? He never sends them to him. Do the travelers send you their cloaks and umbrellas? They do not send them to me. Does the cook ever send you his broth? He never sends it to us. Where do you send your chests? We send them to the store. Do you send your corn to the store? No, sir; we send it to the brook. Does the countryman ever send you his honey? He sometimes sends it to us. Does he never send it to you? He never sends it to me. Do the gardeners ever send their fruit to the grocer? They sometimes send it to him. Does the grocer always send them the money? He always sends it to them. What does the cook send to the traveler? He sends him the roast-meat. Does he send him the fat or the lean? He sends him the fat and the lean.

Does the cook send you the roast-meat and the boiled? He sends them to us; does he not send them to you? He does not send them to me. Do the fishermen send their pike to any one? They send them to the lawyer. Why do they send them to him? They send them to him because they have his money. Do they never send them to the musician and to the grocer? They never send them to them. What has the countryman? He has the hemp and the flax. Does he give them to any one? He gives them to no one. Where does he send them? He sends them to the brook. Is that old man speaking to any one? He is speaking to no one. Does the mason give us the hinge? He does not give it to you, he gives it to me.

29. VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

Are you? I am,	*Êtes-vous? Je suis,*
Are you not? I am not,	N' êtes-vous pas? Je ne suis pas,
Sick. Pale,	*Malade. Pâle,*
Very. Very sick,	*Bien.* Bien malade,
Is he or it? He or it is,	*Est-il?* Il est,
Is he not? He is not,	N' est-il pas? Il n' est pas,
So. Quiet, still,	*Si. Tranquille,*
Much, many,	*Beaucoup,* (with *de* before the noun,)
How much, how many,	*Combien,* (with *de* before the noun,)
One, two, three, four,	*Un, deux, trois, quatre,*
You are pale; are you not sick?	Vous êtes pâle; n' êtes-vous pas malade?
I am pale, but I am not very sick,	Je suis pâle, mais je ne suis pas bien malade,
Why is that child so still?	Pourquoi cet enfant est-il si tranquille?
He is so still because his father is here,	Il est si tranquille parce que son père est ici,
How many brothers have you?	Combien de frères avez-vous?
I have one brother and two cousins,	J' ai un frère et deux cousins,
How many brothers has your friend?	Combien de frères votre ami a-t-il?
He has three brothers and four cousins,	Il a trois frères et quatre cousins,
My friend has much money,	Mon ami a beaucoup d' argent,
Some, any, (singular,)	*Du, de l',* (before a vowel or a silent *h*,)
Some, any, (plural,)	*Des,*
Some tea. Some coffee,	Du thé. Du café,
Some silver. Some gold,	De l' argent. De l' or,
Some trees. Some men,	Des arbres. Des hommes,
What has the apothecary?	Le pharmacien qu' a-t-il?
He has some fruit and some wine,	Il a du fruit et du vin,
What have the musicians?	Les musiciens qu' ont-ils?
They have some instruments and some books,	Ils ont des instruments et des livres.

Remark 1. When *some* is understood in English, it is always to be expressed in French.

He has (some) money and (some) friends,	Il a de l' argent et des amis,
The countryman has flax and hemp,	Le paysan a du lin et du chanvre,
Need. He has need,	*Besoin.* Il a besoin.

Remark 2. *Besoin* takes *de* after it without the article.

We have need of our books,	Nous avons besoin de nos livres,
I have need of my money,	J' ai besoin de mon argent,
Of what? Of what have you need?	*De quoi?* De quoi avez-vous besoin?
I have need of friends,	J' ai besoin d' amis,

The tailor has collars and buttons,	Le tailleur a des collets et des boutons,
The grocer has tea in his chest, and honey in his barrel,	L' épicier a du thé dans son coffre et du miel dans son baril.

Are you my friend? I am your friend. Are you not my relation? Yes, sir; I am your cousin. Is that man the apothecary? No, sir; he is the grocer. Where is the traveler? He is in the store of the grocer. Where is the musician's instrument? It is in that chest. Are you not sick? I am not sick. Are you not the nephew of that old man? No, sir; I am not his nephew, I am his son. Is not the traveler very pale? He is very pale and very sick. Has the grocer much honey? He has much honey and much sugar. How much honey has he? He has one barrel of honey and two barrels of sugar. Have you (some) horses? I have (some) horses and (some) oxen. How many horses have you? I have three horses and four oxen. Of what has the master need? He has need of books. Has he (some) scholars and (some) friends? He has many scholars and many friends. Are you the brother of my friend? No, sir; I am his cousin.

Have you (some) fruit? Yes, sir; I have much fruit, and the gardener has many pinks and lilies. Does he send them to you? He never sends them to me. Does he send you his fruit? He sends it to me. Do you send him the money? I send it to him. Does the carpenter send you his chest? He does not send it to us; he sends it to you. Do you send that book to the musicians? I do not send it to them. Do you send it to us? I send it to you. Do you give your fruit to the master? I give it to him. Does he not give it to you? He gives it to me. Do you send the hinges to the blacksmiths? I send them to them. What has that carpenter? The carpenter has (some) mahogany, and the blacksmith has steel and iron. Who has fine thread? The tailor has some fine thread and some fine cloth.

---

30. TRENTIÈME LEÇON.

Do you wish for? I wish for,	*Voulez-vous? Je veux,*
Do you not wish for?	Ne voulez-vous pas?
I do not wish for,	Je ne veux pas,

Do you wish for some wine?	Voulez-vous du vin?
No, sir; I wish for some tea,	Non, M.; je veux du thé,
Do you wish for some boiled-meat?	Voulez-vous du bouilli,
I wish for some,	J' en veux.

REMARK 1. *Some*, with a noun, is rendered by *du*; without one, by *en*.

Some, any, of it, of them,	*En*, placed before the verb,
Do you wish for some pike?	Voulez-vous des brochets?
I do wish for some,	J' en veux,
How many of them do you wish for?	Combien en voulez-vous?
I do not wish for many (of them,)	Je n' en veux pas beaucoup,
Do you wish for some broth?	Voulez-vous du bouillon?
I wish for some,	J' en veux,
How much (of it) do you wish for?	Combien en voulez-vous?
I wish for much of it,	J' en veux beaucoup.

REMARK 2. The equivalent of *en* is often understood in English; in French, the *en* is always to be expressed.

Do you wish for some mackerel?	Voulez-vous des maquereaux?
I do not wish for any,	Je n' en veux pas,
Has the countryman hemp and flax?	Le paysan a-t-il du chanvre et du lin?
He has some (of them,)	Il en a,
Have you some?	En avez-vous?
We have not any,	Nous n' en avons pas,
Have you any brothers?	Avez-vous des frères?
I have two, my cousin has three, and my friend has four,	J' en ai deux, mon cousin en a trois, et mon ami en a quatre,
Have you need of horses?	Avez-vous besoin de chevaux?
I have need of some,	J' en ai besoin,
Of how many have you need?	De combien en avez-vous besoin?
I have need of three,	J' en ai besoin de trois,
Are you going? I am going,	*Allez-vous? Je vais,*
Are you not going? I am not going,	N' allez-vous pas? Je ne vais pas,
The *mill.* The *market,*	Le *moulin.* Le *marché,*
The *garret.* The *pond,*	Le *grenier.* L' *étang,*
Are you going to the mill?	Allez-vous au moulin?
I am going there,	J' y vais,
There, to it, to them,	*Y*, placed before the verb,
Are you not going to the market?	N' allez-vous pas au marché?
I am not going there,	Je n' y vais pas,
Are you going to the garret?	Allez-vous au grenier?
I am going there,	J' y vais,
Are you going to the pond?	Allez-vous à l' étang?

I am not going there; I am going to the mill,	Je n' y vais pas; je vais au moulin,
I am going to the market; are you not going there?	Je vais au marché; n' y allez-vous pas?
I am not going there,	J n' y vais pas.

Y is placed after the direct objective pronouns.

Do you send the servants to the stores?	Envoyez-vous les domestiques aux magasins?
I do not send them there,	Je ne *les y* envoie pas,
Do you send them there?	*Les y* envoyez-vous?
We send them there,	Nous *les y* envoyons.

Whom are you looking for? I am looking for my friend. Is he not a soldier of the prince? No, sir; he is his physician. Are you not his neighbor? I am his neighbor and his relation. Do you wish for some roast-meat? I wish for some. Do you wish for some boiled-meat? I do not wish for any. I wish for some pike; do you wish for any, (*en voulez-vous?*) I wish for some. I wish for mackerel; do you not wish for some, (*n' en voulez-vous pas?*) I do not wish for any. Do you wish for some butter? I wish for some. How much do you wish for? I do not wish for much. Have those travelers horses? They have some. How many have they? They have four. Of what have you need? I have need of money. Have you need of much? I have need of much. How many brothers has your friend? He has two and I have three.

Has the gardener (some) fruit? He has much. Does he send it to you? He does not send it to me. Does he not send it to you? He does not send it to us. You are very pale; are you not sick? I am not sick. Is not the apothecary sick? He is very sick. Where are you going? I am going to the brook; are you not going there? I am not going there. Are you going to the pond? I am going there. Are you going to the garret? I am not going there. I am going to Boston, (*à Boston;*) are you going there? I am not going there; I am going to New York, (*à New-York.*) Are you going to the mill? No, sir; I am going to the market. Why are you going there? I am going there because my father sends me there. Does he not send you to the garret? He does not send me there, (*m' y.*) Does he send the servants to the stores? He sends them there. Are

you going to the pond? I am not going there; I am going to the brook. Who has some wine? The merchant has some. Where is it? It is in his store. Are you going there? I am going there. Do you wish for some? I do not wish for any.

31. TRENTE-ET-UNIÈME LEÇON.

Do you choose? I choose,	*Choisissez-vous? Je choisis,*
Do you not choose?	Ne choisissez-vous pas?
I do not choose,	Je ne choisis pas,
That *lamb.* A *quarter,*	Cet *agneau.* Un *quartier,*
A quarter of lamb. Some *rum,*	Un quartier d' agneau. Du *rhum,*
Some *vegetables.* An *only* son,	Des *légumes.* Un fils *unique,*
Do you choose rum or wine?	Choisissez-vous du rhum ou du vin?
I choose neither,	Je ne choisis ni l' un ni l' autre,
Do you come? I come,	*Venez-vous? Je viens,*
Do you not come? I do not come,	Ne venez-vous pas? Je ne viens pas,
Do you come from the mill?	Venez-vous du moulin?
No, sir; I come from the market,	Non, Mr.; je viens du marché,
Whence, from where?	*D' où?*
The morning, in the morning,	*Le matin,*
Whence do you come?	D' où venez-vous?
I come from the garret,	Je viens du grenier,
Does he go, is he going? He goes,	*Va-t-il? Il va,*
Does he come? He comes,	*Vient-il? Il vient,*
Whence does he come?	D' où vient-il?
He comes from the pond, and he is going to the market,	Il vient de l' étang, et il va au marché,
Is he not going to the mills also?	Ne va-t-il pas aux moulins aussi?
He is going there,	Il y va,
Do you go out? I go out,	*Sortez-vous? Je sors,*
Do you not go out? I do not go out,	Ne sortez-vous pas? Je ne sors pas,
Often. Do you often go out?	*Souvent.* Sortez-vous souvent?
I go out sometimes,	Je sors quelquefois,
Who, which? Whom, which?	*Qui? Que?*

REMARK. *Which*, the subject of a verb is rendered by *qui*; the object of a verb, by *que*.

What vegetables do you choose?	Quels légumes choisissez-vous?
I choose the vegetables which you choose,	Je choisis les légumes *que* vous choisissez,
You choose the lamb which is here,	Vous choisissez l' agneau *qui* est ici,

I seek the man whom you seek,	Je cherche l' homme *que* vous cherchez,
I seek the man who is my friend,	Je cherche l' homme *qui* est mon ami.

Here we see that *qui* is the subject, and *que* the object of the following verb; so in the following:—

Do you seek the servant who seeks you?	Cherchez-vous le domestique *qui* vous cherche?
I seek the servant whom you seek,	Je cherche le domestique *que* vous cherchez,
Do you choose the beef which I choose?	Choisissez-vous le bœuf *que* je choisis?
I choose the beef which is good,	Je choisis le bœuf *qui* est bon,
Do you wish for vegetables?	Voulez-vous des légumes?
I wish for some,	J' en veux,
How many do you wish for?	Combien en voulez-vous?
I wish for many,	J' en veux beaucoup,
How many servants have you?	Combien de domestiques avez-vous?
I have four,	J' en ai quatre,
How many sons has your uncle?	Combien de fils votre oncle a-t-il?
He has one only son,	Il a un fils unique.

Do you choose the quarter of lamb or the quarter of beef? I choose the latter, (*celui-ci.*) Has the grocer (some) rum or (some) wine? He has (*en a*) both. Has that apothecary brothers? No, sir; he is an only son. Are you the only son of your father? No, sir; I have some brothers. How many (of them) have you? I have three. Whence do you come? I come from the garret. Do you come from the mill or from the market? I come from the market. Do you often go out? I do not often go out. Do you ever go out? Yes, sir; I go out sometimes. Do you ever go out in the morning? No, sir; I never go out in the morning. Has the sailor need of rum? He has not need of it. Of what has he need? He has need of some vegetables and of a quarter of lamb. Is that man your cousin? Yes, sir; he is the only son of my uncle. Where are you going? I am going to the pond. Do you go there (*y*) often? I do not go there often. Whence does the apothecary come? He comes from his store. Is he going to the brook? He is going there.

Do you choose this coffee or that? I choose neither this nor that. Do you choose the lamb or the fish? I choose both. What vegetables do you choose? I choose the vegetables which the countryman has. Do you give them to me? I do not give them to you, I give

them to the cook. Why do you give them to him? I give them to him because he has need of them. Do you wish for some honey? I wish for some. What honey do you wish for? I wish for the honey which is in the store. Whom are you looking for? I am looking for the man who comes from the brook? Are you looking for the boy whom we are looking for? I am looking for him. Whence do you come? I come from the garden. Are you going to the garret? I am going there. I often go out in the morning; do you ever go out in the morning? No, sir; I never go out in the morning.

32. TRENTE-DUXIÈME LEÇON.

Do you give back? I give back,	*Rendez-vous? Je rends,*
Do you not give back?	Ne rendez-vous pas?
I do not give back,	Je ne rends pas,
What do you give back to the musician?	Que rendez-vous au musicien?
I give back to him his instrument,	Je lui rends son instrument,
Do you conduct? I conduct,	*Conduisez-vous? Je conduis,*
Do you conduct that man to *the shore?*	Conduisez-vous cet homme au *rivage?*
I conduct him there,	Je l'y conduis,
Do you pity? I pity,	*Plaignez-vous? Je plains,*
Why do you pity that stranger?	Pourquoi plaignez-vous cet étranger?
I pity him because he is sick,	Je le plains parce qu'il est malade,
Are you acquainted with?	*Connaissez-vous?*
I am acquainted with,	*Je connais,*
Are you acquainted with me?	Me connaissez-vous?
I am acquainted with you,	Je vous connais,
Are you not acquainted with the *hatter?*	Ne connaissez-vous pas le *chapelier?*
I am not acquainted with him,	Je ne le connais pas,
The *shore*, The *hatter*,	Le *rivage*. Le *chapelier*.
Do you conduct me to the garden?	Me conduisez vous au jardin?
I conduct you there,	Je vous y conduis,
Whom do you pity?	Qui plaignez-vous?
I pity him who is blind,	Je plains *celui qui* est aveugle,
I pity him whom you pity,	Je plains *celui que* vous plaignez.

Whom interrogative is *qui*, not interrogative, *que*.

Him who; the one, or that, which,	*Celui qui*, (subject,)
Him whom; the one, or that, which,	*Celui que*, (object,)

Those who; the ones, or those, which,	*Ceux qui,* (subject,)
Those whom; the ones, or those, which,	*Ceux que,* (object,)
What hat do you give back to the hatter?	Quel chapeau rendez-vous au chapelier?
I give back that which I have,	Je rends *celui que* j' ai,
I give back that which is on the bench,	Je rends *celui qui* est sur le banc,
Do you give back those which we have?	Rendez-vous *ceux que* nous avons?
I give back those which are black,	Je rends *ceux qui* sont noirs,
Do you pity him whom I conduct?	Plaignez-vous *celui que* je conduis?
I pity him who comes here,	Je plains *celui qui* vient ici,
Are you acquainted with those whom you are conducting?	Connaissez-vous *ceux que* vous conduisez?
I am acquainted with those who are in your store,	Je connais *ceux qui* sont dans votre magasin.

We see in all these, as in the preceding lesson, that *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb.

Do you give back those which I give you?	Rendez-vous *ceux que* je vous donne?
I give back those which are in this chest,	Je rends *ceux qui* sont dans ce coffre-ci.

Where do you conduct the hatter? I conduct him to the shore. Do you not conduct him to the store? I do not conduct him there. Whom do you pity? I pity him whom you pity. Do you not pity him who is sick? I pity him. Are you acquainted with the apothecary whom I am acquainted with? No, sir; but I am acquainted with him who comes here in the morning. Where is the hatter going? He is going to the shore. Whom do you conduct there? I conduct this old man there. Are you acquainted with him who is going to the shore? I am acquainted with him; he is the nephew of the hatter. What hat do you give back to the hatter? I give back to him the one which he gives me. What lambs is the countryman looking for? He is looking for those which the boy is looking for. Is he not looking for those which are (*sont*) here? He is looking for them.

What handkerchiefs do you choose? I choose those which the merchant has. Do you give back the papers to that lawyer? I do not give them back to him. Do you give them back to me? I give them back to you. Whom do you conduct to the shore? I conduct there the man whom you are acquainted with. Why do you pity

that man? I pity him because he is bad. Does the servant come from the mill? No, sir; he comes from the garret. From where do you come? I come from the shore. Do you ever go out in the morning? I never go out in the morning. Do you wish for some boiled-meat or some roast-meat? I wish for neither. Do you wish for some broth? I wish for some. Has the fisherman need of fish? He has need of some. Are you going to the pond? I am going there. Where is the stranger going? He is going to the shore Are you looking for the paper which the master has? No, sir; I am looking for that which is in this drawer. What hat do you give to me? I give the one which is there. Where is the hatter going? He is going to the shore. Why do you pity that child? I pity him because he has no (*pas de*) hat. What are you looking for? I am looking for the handkerchief which you have. Is not the stranger looking for the boiled meat and the roast meat? No sir, he is looking for the fish which is here in this drawer. What do you choose? I choose nothing. What does the countryman choose? He chooses the good handkerchief. Whom does he conduct to the shore? He conducts the pretty boy there. What do you give to the countryman? I give him the lambs which are here. Do they wish for some fat broth? They wish for some. Is he acquainted with the apothecaries whom you are acquainted with? No, but he is acquainted with those whom you are acquainted with. Where is the hatter going? He is going to the shore. Do you not pity that man? Yes, sir; I pity him very much. Why do you pity him? I pity him because he is sick. Whom do you pity? I pity him who is sick. What are you looking for? I am looking for the hat which is there. What do you choose? I choose the handkerchiefs which that lawyer has. Have you need of paper? No, sir; I have some. When (*quand*) do you go out? I go out in the morning. From where does the merchant come? He comes from his store. What do you wish for? I wish for some roast meat. Do you not wish for some boiled meat? No, sir, I do not wish for any.

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

1. PREMIÈRE LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Have you? Yes,	*Avez-vous? Oui,*
Sir. I,	*Monsieur,* (contracted M. or Mr.) *Je*
I have,	*J' ai.*

Je becomes *j'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

The. The *tea,*	*Le.* Le *thé,**
Have you the tea?	Avez-vous le thé?
Yes, sir; I have the tea,	Oui, Monsieur; j' ai le thé,
The *coffee.* The *milk,*	Le *café.* Le *lait,*
The *sugar.* The *fruit,*	Le *sucre.* Le *fruit,*
The *bread.* The *dish,*	Le *pain.* Le *plat,*
My. Your,	*Mon. Votre,*
Have you my coffee?	Avez-vous mon café?
I have your coffee,	J' ai votre café,
Have you your bread?	Avez-vous votre pain?
Yes, sir; I have my bread,	Oui, Monsieur; j' ai mon pain.

Have you the milk? I have the milk. Have you the sugar? Yes, sir; I have the sugar. Have you the fruit? I have the fruit. Have you the dish? Yes, sir; I have the dish. Have you my tea? I have your tea. Have you your coffee? I have my coffee. Have you my milk? I have your milk. Have you your sugar? I have my sugar. Have you my fruit? Yes, sir; I have your fruit. Have you your bread? I have my bread. Have you my dish? Yes, sir I have your dish.

* Words introduced for the first time are printed in Italics.

2. SECONDE LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

The *butter*. The *cheese*,	Le *beurre*. Le *fromage*,
The *beef*. *ox*. The *salt*,	Le *bœuf*. Le *sel*,
The *wine*. The *book*,	Le *vin*. Le *livre*,
The *volume*,	Le *tome* or *volume*,
Good, the good,	*Bon*, le bon,
Bad, the bad,	*Mauvais*, le mauvais,
No, *sir*,	*Non*, *Monsieur*,
The *first*,	Le *premier*,
The *second*,	Le *second*, le *deuxième*,
It, (object,) *him*,	*Le*, (*Le* is placed before the verb,)
Have you the butter? I have it,	Avez-vous le beurre? Je l' ai.

Le becomes *l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

Have you the good cheese?	Avez-vous le bon fromage?
Yes, sir; I have it,	Oui, Monsieur; je l' ai,
Have you the bad wine?	Avez-vous le mauvais vin?
Have you it?	L' avez-vous?
I have it,	Je l' ai,
Have you the book?	Avez-vous le livre?
Have you it? I have it,	L' avez-vous? Je l' ai,
Have you the first volume?	Avez-vous le premier tome?
Have you it?	L' avez-vous?
No, sir; I have the second,	Non, Monsieur; j' ai le second.

Have you the good beef? No, sir; I have the bad. Have you the good salt? No, sir; I have the bad salt. Have you the butter? No, sir; I have the cheese. Have you the beef? Yes, sir; I have it. Have you the wine? I have it. Have you my book? I have it. Have you the second volume? No, sir; I have the first volume. Have you your butter? I have it. Have you the good beef? No, sir; I have the bad beef. Have you the cheese? No, sir; I have the butter. Have you the book? I have it. Have you my salt? No, sir; I have my salt. Have you the good wine? No, sir; I have the bad wine. Have you my book? No, sir; I have my book. Have you the first volume? No, sir; I have the second volume.

3. TROISIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Have I? You have,	*Ai-je? Vous avez,*
The *stocking*. The *shoe*,	Le *bas*. Le *soulier*,
The *glove*. The *hat*,	Le *gant*. Le *chapeau*,
The *bag*. The *bed*,	Le *sac*. Le *lit*,
The *large*. The *small*, *little*,	Le *grand*. Le *petit*,
What? (adjective,) *And*,	*Quel? Et*,
Have I the stocking?	Ai-je le bas?
You have the stocking,	Vous avez le bas,
Have I the shoe? Have I it?	Ai-je le soulier? L' ai-je?
You have it. Have I the large hat?	Vous l' avez, Ai-je le grand chapeau?
Have I it? You have it,	L' ai-je? Vous l' avez,
Have I the small glove? Have I it?	Ai-je le petit gant? L' ai-je?
You have it. What bed have you?	Vous l' avez. Quel lit avez-vous?
I have the large one,	J' ai le grand,
What bag have I?	Quel sac ai-je?
You have the small one,	Vous avez le petit.

In phrases like the above, *one* is not to be translated into French.

I have the large (one) and the small (one),	J' ai le grand et le petit,
You have the stocking and the shoe,	Vous avez le bas et le soulier.

Have I your bag? You have it. Have I the small glove? You have it, and you have the large hat. Have I the large bed? You have it, and you have the little bag. Have I your glove? You have my glove and my hat. Have I my bag? You have it. Have I the good bed? You have it. Have I the small stocking? You have it, and you have the shoe. What hat have you? I have my hat. What bag have I? You have the small bag. Have I the bed? Yes, sir; you have it. Have I the tea? You have the tea and the coffee. Have you the milk and the sugar? No, sir; I have the fruit and the bread. Have I your dish? You have it. What volume have I? You have the first and the second. Have you the butter and the cheese? No, sir; I have the beef and the salt. Have I your

book? Yes, sir; you have it. What volume have I? You have the first volume and the second. Have I the good wine? You have it.

---

4. QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

The *knife*. The *lead-pencil*,	Le *couteau*. Le *crayon*,
The *paper*. The *copybook*,	Le *papier*. Le *cahier*,
The *stick*. The *button*,	Le *bâton*. Le *bouton*,
The *carpet*. *Pretty*,	Le *tapis*. *Joli*,
Coarse, *big*. *Old*,	*Gros*. *Vieux*,
Not,	*Ne* before the verb, *pas* or *point** after it.

Ne becomes *n'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

Have you not the knife?	N' avez-vous pas le couteau?
Have you it not?	Ne l' avez-vous pas?
I have not the knife,	Je n' ai pas le couteau,
Have you not the paper?	N' avez-vous pas le papier?
I have it not,	Je ne l' ai pas,
Have you it not?	Ne l' avez-vous pas?
No, sir; I have it not,	Non, Monsieur; je ne l' ai pas,
Have I not the lead-pencil?	N' ai-je pas le crayon?
You have not the lead-pencil,	Vous n' avez pas le crayon,
Have I it not? You have it not,	Ne l' ai-je pas? Vous ne l' avez pas,
Have I not the pretty button?	N' ai-je pas le joli bouton?
Have I it not?	Ne l' ai-je pas?
You have it not,	Vous ne l' avez pas,
Have you not the big stick?	N' avez-vous pas le gros bâton?
I have it not,	Je ne l' ai pas,
Have I not the old carpet?	N' ai-je pas le vieux tapis?
You have it not,	Vous ne l' avez pas,
Have you it not? I have it,	Ne l' avez-vous pas? Je l' ai,
Have you the copybook?	Avez-vous le cahier?
I have not the copybook; I have the paper and the pencil,	Je n' ai pas le cahier; j' ai le papier et le crayon.

---

* In conversation *pas* is used and no *point*, unless we want to deny with energy. In most other cases, *point* would be considered as an affectation.

Have you not the knife? I have it not. Have you not the paper? I have not the paper; I have the pencil and the copybook. Have you not the big stick? I have it not; I have the pretty button and the old carpet. Have I not your knife? No, sir; you have it not. Have I not your coarse carpet? No, sir; you have not the coarse carpet; you have the old copybook and the pretty stick. Have I not your pretty button? You have it not. Have I not your big button? No, sir; you have it not. What stick have you? I have your old stick. Have you not the tea and the coffee? No, sir; I have the milk and the sugar. Have I not your fruit? You have it not. Have I not your dish? Yes, sir; you have it, and you have the bread and the butter. What cheese have you? I have the good cheese. Have you not the beef and the salt? Yes, sir; and I have the bad wine. Have you not my book? Yes, sir; I have it. What volume have you? I have the first and the second.

5. CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Have we? We have,	*Avons-nous?* Nous avons,
The *coat*,	L' *habit.*

Le the article, like *le* the pronoun, becomes *l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

The *pantaloons*,	Le *pantalon*, or les *pantalons*,
The *cloak*. The *apron*,	Le *manteau*. Le *tablier*,
The *waistcoat*. The *cap*,	Le *gilet*. Le *bonnet*,
The *money*, *silver*,	L' *argent*,
The *gold*,	L' *or*,
Our,	*Notre*,
Handsome, *beautiful*,	*Beau*,*
Have we our money?	Avons-nous notre argent?
We have our money,	Nous avons notre argent,
Have we it?	L' avons-nous?
We have it,	Nous l' avons,

* *Beau* applies rather to what is noble and imposing; *joli*, to what is delicate, small, and regular.

Have we not our gold?	N' avons-nous pas notre or?
We have not our gold,	Nous n' avons pas notre or,
Have we it not?	Ne l' avons-nous pas?
We have it not,	Nous ne l' avons pas,
Have we your coat?	Avons-nous votre habit?
You have it not,	Vous ne l' avez pas,
Have we it not?	Ne l' avons-nous pas?
You have it,	Vous l' avez,
Have we the handsome cloak?	Avons-nous le beau manteau?
Yes, sir; we have it,	Oui, Monsieur; nous l' avons,
Have we the gold and the silver?	Avons-nous l' or et l' argent?
We have the gold; we have not the silver,	Nous avons l' or; nous n' avons pas l' argent,
We have the handsome coat,	Nous avons le bel habit.

Beau becomes *bel*, and *vieux* oftentimes becomes *vieil* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

The handsome silver,	Le bel argent,
The old coat,	Le vieux habit,* or le vieil habit,
We have the handsome coat and the handsome cap,	Nous avons le bel habit et le beau bonnet.

Have you your pantaloons? I have my pantaloons. Have we the pretty apron? We have it. Have we it? We have it not. Have I your pantaloons? You have not my pantaloons. What cloak have we? We have our cloak. Have we not our cloak? We have it. Have we it not? We have it not; we have the waistcoat and the cap. Have I your apron? You have my apron and my cap. Have we the handsome apron? We have the handsome apron. Have we it? We have it. Have we not the large waistcoat? We have not the large waistcoat. Have we it not? We have it not. Have we the waistcoat and the cap? No, sir; we have the cloak. Have we the tea and the coffee? Yes, sir; and we have the milk and the sugar. Have you the small dish? Yes, sir; and we have the bread and the fruit. Have I your glove? Yes, sir; and you have my shoe and my stocking. Have you the large bed? I have it not. Have we it? You have it. Have you the handsome gold? We have it not; we have the handsome coat and the handsome hat.

* It is allowable to use *vieux* in all cases, even before a vowel or a silent *h*.

6. SIXIÈME LEÇON

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

The *dog*. The *horse*,	Le *chien*. Le *cheval*,
The *wood*. The *iron*,	Le *bois*. Le *fer*,
The *coal*, *charcoal*,	Le *charbon*, *charbon de bois*,
The *biscuit*. The *egg*,	Le *biscuit*. L' *œuf*,
The *tobacco*, *snuff*,	Le *tabac*, *tabac à priser*,
The *soap*. The *exercise*, *theme*,	Le *savon*. Le *thème*,
Ugly. *Excellent*,	*Vilain*. *Excellent*,
This, *that*,	*Ce*, *cet* (before a vowel or silent *h*.)
This biscuit, this egg,	Ce biscuit, cet œuf,
That iron, that silver,	Ce fer, cet argent,
The wood or the coal,	Le bois ou le charbon,
The *third*, the *fourth*,	Le *troisième*, le *quatrième*,
The *last*. *Or*,	Le *dernier*. *Ou*,
Have we your dog or your horse?	Avons-nous votre chien ou votre cheval?
You have my horse,	Vous avez mon cheval,
Have we the wood or the coal?	Avons-nous le bois ou le charbon?
We have the wood and the coal,	Nous avons le bois et le charbon,
Have I the iron? You have it,	Ai-je le fer? Vous l' avez,
Have you it not? I have it not,	Ne l' avez-vous pas? Je ne l' ai pas,
Have you not the excellent biscuit?	N' avez-vous pas l' excellent biscuit?
I have it not. Have I it?	Je ne l' ai pas. L' ai-je?
You have it,	Vous l' avez,
What tobacco have we?	Quel tabac avons-nous?
We have the ugly tobacco,	Nous avons le vilain tabac,
What egg have you?	Quel œuf avez-vous?
I have this egg,	J' ai cet œuf,
What soap have you?	Quel savon avez-vous?
I have this soap, Have I it not?	J' ai ce savon, Ne l' ai-je pas?
You have it,	Vous l' avez,
Have we the third or the fourth exercise?	Avons-nous le troisième ou le quatrième thème?
We have the last exercise,	Nous avons le dernier thème.

Have you the iron or the silver? I have the iron. Have I your biscuit? You have not my biscuit. Have I it? You have it. Have you it? I have it not. Have we the dog or the horse? We

have the dog and the horse. Have you the wood? No, sir; I have the iron. Have you it not? I have it. Have I it not? You have it not. Have we the charcoal? We have it. Have we it? We have it. Have we it not? We have it not. What tobacco have we? We have the ugly tobacco. What soap have we? We have our good soap. What exercise have we? We have the second exercise. Have we the first? Yes, sir; and we have the third and the fourth. Have you the pretty book? I have it. Have you the third or the fourth volume? I have the third and the fourth. Have you the last volume? Yes, sir; I have the first and the last. Have you the excellent wine? Yes, sir; I have the excellent wine and the excellent beef. Have you the ugly carpet? I have not the ugly carpet; I have the pretty (one.) Have I your knife? No, sir; you have my pencil and my paper. Have you the handsome hat or the handsome coat? I have the handsome hat and the handsome coat.

---

7. SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Has he? He has,	***A-t-il? Il a.***

The *t* in *a-t-il* is used merely for better sound.

That *man*. Your *father*,	Cet *homme*. Votre *père*,
My *brother*. Our *friend*,	Mon *frère*. Notre *ami*,
His, *her*, *its*. His *cousin*,	*Son*. Son *cousin*,
The *whip*. This *gun*,	Le *fouet*. Ce *fusil*,
Young. That young man,	*Jeune*. Ce jeune homme,
The *boy*. *Who?*	Le *garçon*: *Qui?*
Who has my whip? That man has it,	Qui a mon fouet? Cet homme l' a,
Who has your gun?	Qui a votre fusil?
My father has it. Has he it?	Mon père l' a. L' a-t-il?
He has it. Has he it not?	Il l' a. Ne l' a-t-il pas?
He has it not,	Il ne l' a pas,
Has the boy my knife?	Le garçon a-t-il mon couteau?
He has it,	Il l' a,
Has not your brother it?	Votre frère ne l' a-t-il pas?
He has it not,	Il ne l' a pas,

REMARK 1. In interrogations, when there is no interrogative pronoun belonging to the object, the noun subject always comes immediately before the verb, and the pronoun subject is used also after the verb. But, if there be an interrogative pronoun with the object, the sentence may be constructed thus:

What bag has your cousin?	Quel sac votre cousin a-t-il? or, Votre cousin quel sac a-t-il? or, Quel sac a votre cousin?
What has your brother?	Votre frère qu' a-t-il? or, Qu' a votre frère?
Has your brother the large horse?	Votre frère a-t-il le grand cheval?
He has him not,	Il ne l' a pas,
Has not our friend the pretty dog?	Notre ami n' a-t-il pas le joli chien?
He has him. Has he him?	Il l' a. L' a-t-il?
He has him not,	Il ne l' a pas.

Who has the good butter? My friend has it. Has he the salt? He has it. Who has my stocking? The boy has it. Who has the small shoe? My cousin has the small shoe and the small stocking. Has not your brother my glove? He has it not. Has your father the good horse? He has him. Has your brother the ugly dog? He has him not. Has he his big whip? He has it not. Has your friend his large gun? He has his large gun and his big stick. Has that young man his pantaloons and his waistcoat? Yes, sir; and he has his handsome cap and his handsome coat. Who has the large bed? That young man has it. Has that boy my whip? He has your whip and your gun. Has he not it? He has it not. What wine has your father? He has the excellent wine. What gun has your friend? He has his gun. Has he his paper and his copybook? Yes, sir; and he has his knife and his pencil. What button has he? He has his pretty button. Who has my glove? Your friend has it. What bed has he? He has his bed. Have I your copybook? You have my copybook and my paper. Have I it? You have it. Has he it not? He has it not.

N. B. I would remind the teacher and learner, that one part of the method consists in asking the questions in French to be answered by the learner in French, without regard to the answers given in the exercises. For instance, after the seventh lesson has been recited as given above, the teacher is to ask the first question in French, *Qui a le bon beurre?* The learner is to form an answer extempore; *Cet homme l' a*, or *Mon cousin l' a*, etc. Teacher. *A-t-il le sel?* Learner. *Il ne l' a pas*, or *Il n' a pas le sel, il a le sucre*, etc. Teacher. *Qui a mon bas?* Learner. *Le garçon l' a*, or *Votre frère l' a*, etc. When there is a want of ease and fluency in making the answer, it may be given and answered several times, or passed round a class until it is sufficiently familiar. In this way the ear and the vocal organs are made familiar with the language, and the advantages of Manesca's system are united with those of the present method.

8, HUITIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

What? (what thing?)	*Que?*
Something, any thing,	*Quelque chose,*
The *cake.* The *ham,*	Le *gâteau.* Le *jambon,*
The *mutton, sheep.* The *chicken,*	Le *mouton.* Le *poulet,*
Nothing,	Without a verb, *rien;* with a verb of which it is the object, *ne* before the verb, *rien* after; with a verb of which it is the subject, *rien ne* both before the verb in the above order.
The *bird.* The *gentleman, Mr,*	*L' oiseau.* Le *monsieur,*
My *relation.* The *cloth,*	Mon *parent.* Le *drap,*
The *handkerchief.* *Poor,*	Le *mouchoir.* *Pauvre,*
Honest,	*Honnête,*
What have you? or, what is the matter with you?	Qu' avez-vous?

Que becomes *qu'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

I have the good cake,	J' ai le bon gâteau,
What have I? or, what is the matter with me?	Qu' ai-je?
You have the handsome bird,	Vous avez le bel oiseau,
What have we? or, what is the matter with us?	Qu' avons-nous?
Nothing. We have nothing,	Rien. Nous n' avons rien,
What has that gentleman?	Qu' a ce monsieur? / Ce monsieur qu' a-t-il?
Has he any thing? is any thing the matter with him?	A-t-il quelque chose?
He has (not any thing,) nothing; or, nothing is the matter with him,	Il n' a rien.

Quelque chose is not used with a negative.

What has that poor gentleman?	Ce pauvre monsieur qu' a-t-il?
He has nothing,	Il n' a rien,
Has that honest man any thing?	Cet honnête homme a-t-il quelque chose?
He has his money,	Il a son argent,
What has your relation?	Qu' a votre parent?
He has something,	Il a quelque chose.

What, with a noun is *quel;* equivalent to *what thing* it is, *que.*

What ham has he? He has his ham,	Quel jambon a-t-il? Il a son jambon.

Have you the mutton or the chicken? I have the mutton and the chicken. Have I your handkerchief and your cloth? Yes, sir; you have my handkerchief and my cloth. Has that poor boy the cake? He has it not. Have you it? We have it not. Have we it? You have it not. Has he it? He has it not. Have I it? You have it. What has that gentleman? He has the excellent cake and the good ham. Has he not the mutton? He has the mutton and the chicken. What has your relation? He has the handsome bird and the handsome cloth. What has that poor man? He has the old coat and the old hat. What has that honest man? He has nothing. Who has the ugly dog? The honest man has him. What has that poor boy? He has the excellent cake. What has your cousin? He has something. Has he his handkerchief? He has his handkerchief and his cloth. Who has the handsome bird? My relation has him. What has that honest gentleman? He has the good cake, the excellent ham, the little chicken, and the ugly bird. Has your relation his gun? He has it. What has that young boy? He has his whip and his knife. What has your father? He has the wood, the iron, and the coal. What has your brother? He has the biscuit, the egg, and the vile tobacco.

9. NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Have they? They have,	*Ont-ils?* Ils ont,
Them,	*Les*, (before the verb,)
The,	*Les*, (plural of *le*.)

RULE. Articles and adjectives in French, agree in number with their nouns. The plural, both of nouns and adjectives, is formed by adding an *s* to the singular, as;

The *fish*, the *fishes*,	Le *poisson*, les *poissons*,
The *onion*, the *onions*,	L' *oignon*, les *oignons*,
The *parasol*, the *parasols*,	Le *parasol*, les *parasols*,
The *sofa*, the *sofas*,	Le *canapé*, les *canapés*,
The *broom*, the *brooms*,	Le *balai*, les *balais*,
The *chest*, the *chests*,	Le *coffre*, les *coffres*,

My, (plural,)	*Mes*, (plural of mon,)
Your, "	*Vos*, (plural of votre,)
Our, "	*Nos*, (plural of notre,)
His, *her*, *its*,	*Ses*, (plural of son,)
Their,	*Leur*, (singular,) *leurs*, (plural,)
These, *those*. The *best*,	*Ces*, (plural of *ce*.) Le *meilleur*,
The little fishes. What brooms?	Les petits poissons. Quels balais?
These onions. These pretty parasols,	Ces oignons. Ces jolis parasols,
My large sofas,	Mes grands canapés,
Our best brooms,	Nos meilleurs balais,
Your good chests,	Vos bons coffres,
His young cousins,	Ses jeunes cousins,
Their best soap,	Leur meilleur savon,
Their ugly dogs,	Leurs vilains chiens,
Have your friends their copybooks?	Vos amis ont-ils leurs cahiers?
Have your friends them?	Vos amis les ont-ils?
They have them,	Ils les ont,
Have not your cousins our books?	Vos cousins n' ont-ils pas nos livres?
Have your cousins them?	Vos cousins les ont-ils?
They have them not,	Ils ne les ont pas,
Have they them?	Les ont-ils?
Yes, sir; they have them,	Oui, M.; ils les ont,
What have those *gentlemen?*	Ces *messieurs* qu' ont-ils?
They have their whips and their guns,	Ils ont leurs fouets et leurs fusils,
Have they not my gloves?	N' ont-ils pas mes gants?
They have them not,	Ils ne les ont pas,
Have you them?	Les avez-vous?
I have them not,	Je ne les ai pas,
Have we them not?	Ne les avons-nous pas?
We have them,	Nous les avons,
You have them not,	Vous ne les avez pas,
Has he them?	Les a-t-il?
He has them not,	Il ne les a pas.

Have those gentlemen our books? They have them. Have my brothers their little fish? They have them not. Have my cousins them? They have them not; those young boys have them. What pencils have your friends? They have their pencils. Have they their paper? They have it. Who has our sticks? My cousins have them. What have those gentlemen? They have the large fishes. Have they the onions? They have them. Has the boy his chickens?

He has them not. Have his brothers them? They have them not. Have we them? We have them not. Have you not them? I have them not. Has he them? He has them not. Have they them not? They have them. What chests has your father? He has the best chests. Have your relations the best sofas? They have the best sofas and the best beds. Have those gentlemen the pretty parasols? They have the pretty parasols and the pretty caps. Has your father his papers? He has them. What brooms has that boy? He has his brooms. Have those gentlemen my exercises? They have them not. Have they the excellent cloth? They have it not. Have they it not? No, sir; our relations have it. Who has our sticks? Those gentlemen have them. Have you them not? I have them not. Has he them not? He has them not. Have they them? They have them. Have they the pantaloons and the cloak? Yes, sir; and they have the waistcoat and the cap.

10. DIXIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Nouns and adjectives ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, are unchanged in the plural, as:

The wood, the *woods*,	Le bois, les *bois*,			
The *nose*, the *noses*,	Le *nez*, les *nez*,			
The old carpet, the *old carpets*,	Le vieux tapis, les *vieux tapis*,			
The coarse stocking,	Le gros bas,			
The *coarse stockings*,	Les *gros bas*,			
Which one, what one,	*Lequel*,			
Which ones, what ones,	Lesquels,			
Mine,	Le *mien*,	(s.)	les miens,	(pl.)
Yours,	Le *vôtre*,	"	les vôtres,	"
Ours,	Le *nôtre*,	"	les nôtres,	"
His, hers, its,	Le *sien*,	"	les siens,	"
Theirs,	Le *leur*,	"	les leurs.	"

The above pronouns are used without a noun.

The *general*,	Le *général*,
The *captain*,	Le *capitaine*.

The *corporal.* The *leather*,	Le *caporal.* Le *cuir*,
The *cotton.* The *hammer*,	Le *coton.* Le *marteau*,
My *uncle.* *Of*,	Mon *oncle.* *De*,
What horse has the general?	Quel cheval le général a-t-il?
He has my uncle's horse,	Il a le cheval de mon oncle.

Remark 1. Possession, which is expressed in English either by *of* before the possessor, or by the possessive case, is expressed in French only by *de* before the possessor. The French have no possessive case.

Our captain's gun, or the gun of our captain,	Le fusil de notre capitaine,
The hammer of our corporal, or our corporal's hammer,	Le marteau de notre caporal,
Our general's cloak, or the cloak of our general,	Le manteau de notre général,
Your uncle's leather,	Le cuir de votre oncle.

Remark 2. The material of which a thing is made may also in English be placed as an adjective before the thing; in French it must be placed after it and preceded by *de*. The article, in such cases, is not used before the name of the material.

The iron hammer, or, hammer of iron,	Le marteau de fer,
The leather shoe, or shoe of leather,	Le soulier de cuir,
The cotton cap, or cap of cotton,	Le bonnet de coton,
What cotton has that gentleman?	Quel coton ce monsieur a-t-il?
He has his,	Il a le sien,
He has the gold button,	Il a le bouton d' or.

De becomes *d'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

Has he not mine?	N' a-t-il pas le mien?
He has not yours,	Il n' a pas le vôtre,
Have those men my father's papers?	Ces hommes ont-ils les papiers de mon père?
They have not his; they have theirs,	Ils n' ont pas les siens; ils ont les leurs,
Which ones have the gentlemen?	Lesquels ont les messieurs?
They have ours,	Ils ont les nôtres.

What sticks have the boys? They have the big sticks. Which ones have they? They have mine and yours. What chest has the general? He has ours. Has he our captain's chest? He has it not. Which one has he? He has his. Which hammer have your cousins? They have theirs. Have they the cloth shoes? No, sir; they have the leather shoes. Has the corporal his wooden hammer (*hammer of*

wood?) He has not the wooden hammer; he has the silver knife. Have you my uncle's gloves? I have them not. Which ones have we? You have mine. Has the captain your iron chest? No, sir; he has not mine, he has his. Have I your cotton stockings? No, sir; you have them not. Have you our general's carpets? We have not our general's carpets, we have yours. Have you my brother' exercises? I have not theirs, I have ours. Have you the cotton bags No, sir; we have the leather bags. Has the captain the silver knife? He has it. Has he the silver knife of my uncle? He has it not. Have those gentlemen the good cotton stockings? No, sir; they have the bad cotton stockings. Have they our corporal's gun? They have it. Have they his iron gun? They have his iron gun and his cotton cap. Who has my brother's books? Your cousins have them. What gold buttons (*Quels boutons d'or*) have they? They have our uncle's gold buttons (the gold buttons of our uncle).

J' ai l' argent, l' or et le fer, et vous avez le pain, le beurre et le fromage. Le capitaine qu' a-t-il? Il a le beau fusil du caporal et le joli bas du joli garçon. Quel chapeau avez-vous, Monsieur? J' ai mon chapeau. N' avez-vous pas le mien? Non, Monsieur; je n' ai pas le vôtre; j' ai le mien. N' ont-ils pas le jambon de mon frère? Ils n' ont pas son jambon; ils ont le leur. Votre frère n' a rien. Mon frère a quelque chose; il a le papier, le tabac et le poulet

11. ONZIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Are you? I am,
Are we? We are,
You are. Where?
Here. There,
On. In,
The *bench.* The *floor,*
The *store.* That *animal,*
Wicked, worthless, bad,
The *glass.* The *steel,*
The *ivory,*

Êtes-vous? Je suis,
Sommes-nous? Nous sommes,
Vous êtes. Où?
Ici. Là,
Sur. Dans,
Le *banc.* Le *plancher,*
Le *magasin.* Cet *animal,*
Méchant,
Le *verre.* L' *acier,*
L' *ivoire.*

RULE.—Nouns and adjectives ending in *al* change this termination into *aux* for the plural, and those in *au, eu,* take an *x,* as:

The horse, the horses,	Le cheval, les chevaux,
The general, the generals,	Le général, les généraux,
The corporal, the corporals,	Le caporal, les caporaux,
The animal, the animals,	L' animal, les animaux,
The hat, the hats,	Le chapeau, les chapeaux,
The knife, the knives,	Le couteau, les couteaux,
The handsome bird, the handsome birds,	Le bel oiseau, les beaux oiseaux,
Where are you? I am here,	Où êtes-vous? Je suis ici,
Are you not there?	N' êtes-vous pas là?
I am here on the bench,	Je suis ici sur le banc,
Are we in your store?	Sommes-nous dans votre magasin?
You are in my store,	Vous êtes dans mon magasin.

We have seen sufficiently in the preceding lessons that the verb agrees with its subject in number and person. *Vous* may be either singular or plural, and the adjective, and the noun in apposition, must be varied accordingly, as follows:

Are you poor? I am poor,	Êtes-vous pauvre? Je suis pauvre,
Are you not poor?	N' êtes-vous pas pauvres?
We are not poor,	Nous ne sommes pas pauvres,
Are you my relation?	Êtes-vous mon parent?
I am your uncle,	Je suis votre oncle,
Are you not my relations?	N' êtes-vous pas mes parents?
We are your cousins,	Nous sommes vos cousins,
Are we not the friends of the captain?	Ne sommes-nous pas les amis du capitaine?
Yes, sir; and you are the friends of the general,	Oui, M.; et vous êtes les amis du général,
Of the, from the,	*Du* before a consonant, *de l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*. *Des*, (plural,)
Are you the friend of the captain?	Êtes-vous l' ami du capitaine?
Yes, sir; and I am the friend of the corporals,	Oui, M.; et je suis l' ami des caporaux,
Are we not the friends of the generals?	Ne sommes-nous pas les amis des généraux?
You are the friends of the generals,	Vous êtes les amis des généraux.

Where are you? We are here. Are you on the bench or on the floor? I am on the floor. Are we not in your store? You are in

my store. Are we not your relations? Yes, sir, you are my cousins. Are you there? I am here. Are you the brother of the (*du*) captain? I am the brother of the captain, and the friend of the (*des*) corporals. Are we not the relations of the general? We are the relations of the general and the friends of the poor men. Are we the friends of the wicked man? You are not the friends of the wicked man, you are the friends of the good men. Have you the glass or the steel? I have the glass and the steel. Have we your ivory knives? You have them not, we have them. Have we them? You have them not. Have we the ivory knife or the steel knife? You have the ivory knife. Has your father the money of the gentlemen? He has not the money of the gentlemen, he has the money of the corporal. What glass have the boys? They have mine. Have they yours? They have it not, they have theirs. What have you? I have the wicked horse of the gentleman. Who has those wicked animals? My father has them. Where are we? We are in the store of the general. Are you there? I am here on the bench. Are we not poor? You are not poor. Are we not your friends? You are not ours, you are his. Are we not yours? You are mine. Are you my friend? I am yours, and I am his.

N' avons-nous pas les poissons de l' homme? Non, M.; nous avons ses moutons, ses poulets, et ses chiens. Avez-vous ses oignons ou ses œufs? J' ai ses oignons; je n' ai pas ses œufs. Qu' avez vous? Je n' ai rien. J' ai le meilleur bœuf; n' avez-vous pas quelque chose? Nous avons le grand crayon du garcon? Qui a le gros jambon de notre général? Le capitaine a son jambon. Qui a le bel habit de l' homme? Je ne l' ai pas; vous l' avez. Qu' a ce méchant homme? Il a le meilleur drap dans son magasin.

12. DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Is he? is it? He is, it is. *Est-il? Il est.*

There is no neuter gender in French. *Il* applies to all nouns not feminine.

Are they? They are, *Sont-ils? Ils sont,*
The *tree.* The *garden,* L' *arbre.* Le *jardin,*
His *nephew,* Son *neveu,*

The *merchant*,	Le *marchand*,
The *physician*,	Le *médecin*,
The *servant*,	Le *domestique*,
Under. The *child*,	*Sous.* L' *enfant*,
All. The *neighbor*,	*Tout*, plural *tous.* Le *voisin*,
The *tailor.* The *cook*,	Le *tailleur.* Le *cuisinier*,
The *pepper*,	Le *poivre*,
The *roast beef*,	Le *bœuf rôti*,
The *roast meat*,	Le *rôti*,
The cook's roast meat,	Le rôti du cuisinier,
The neighbors' children,	Les enfants des voisins.

Du and *des*, let it be borne in mind, are contractions of *de le* and *de les*.

The tailor's cloth, or cloth of the tailor,	Le drap du tailleur,
The cook's pepper, or pepper of the cook,	Le poivre du cuisinier,
The servant's cap, or cap of the servant,	Le bonnet du domestique,
The physician's garden,	Le jardin du médecin,
The children's copybooks, or copybooks of the children,	Les cahiers des enfants,
The merchants' stores,	Les magasins des marchands,
The gentlemen's gold,	L' or des messieurs,
Where is your nephew?	Où est votre neveu?
He is in the garden,	Il est dans le jardin,
Nothing is pretty here,	Rien n' est beau ici,
Is not the merchant in his store?	Le marchand n' est-il pas dans son magasin?
He is not in his store,	Il n' est pas dans son magasin,
Where are the physicians?	Où sont les médecins?
They are here,	Ils sont ici,
Are those men your neighbors?	Ces hommes sont-ils vos voisins?
They are my neighbors,	Ils sont mes voisins,
Is that young man the general's brother?	Ce jeune homme est-il le frère du général?
No, sir; he is his nephew,	Non, M.; il est son neveu,
Is the handsome bird on the tree?	Le bel oiseau est-il sur l' arbre?
No, sir; he is under the tree,	Non, M.; il est sous l' arbre,
Are all the birds under the tree?	Tous les oiseaux sont-ils sous l' arbre?
They are all under the tree,	Ils sont tous sous l' arbre,
Where is the cook's roast beef?	Où est le bœuf rôti du cuisinier?
All the cook's roast beef is there,	Tout le bœuf rôti du cuisinier est là,
Are all the children's caps under the bench?	Tous les bonnets des enfants sont-ils sous le banc?
They are all under the bench,	Ils sont tous sous le banc.

Where is the general's horse? He is under the tree. Where is the merchant's servant? He is in the store. Where is the cook's glass dish (*le plat de verre du cuisinier?*) It is here on the floor. Where is the servant's steel knife? It is there on the bench. Is the merchant's ivory knife on the floor? It is on the floor under the bench. Where are the merchant's cotton handkerchiefs? They are in his store. Where are the physician's nephews (*neveux?*) They are here. Are the tailor's steel knives here? They are on the floor. Are all the birds in the garden? They are all in the garden. Are they all on the tree or under the tree? They are all under the tree. Is that young man the nephew of the physician? He is the nephew of the physician. Is that young boy the child of the neighbor? He is the child of the neighbor. Where are the neighbor's bad (*méchants*) animals? They are in the garden. What has the servant? He has the cook's roast beef. Has he his roast meat? He has all his roast meat. Has he his pepper? He has all his pepper. Has he his roast meat or his pepper? He has his roast meat and his pepper. What has the child? He has the tailor's cotton handkerchief. Are the children pretty here? Nothing is pretty here.

Are you the nephew of the merchant? No, sir; I am the captain's nephew. Are we in your garden? No, sir; you are in the physician's garden. Who has my silver dish? The tailor's child has it. Have you my cloth pantaloons? I have your cloth pantaloons and your waistcoat. Who has the merchant's coal? The tailor has it. Who has our soap? The servant has it. What exercises have the neighbors' children? They have the third, the fourth and the last.

Ce bel oiseau est là sur cet arbre, et ce beau chien est ici sur ce banc de bois. Où est l' enfant de notre parent? Il est dans le jardin du médecin sous le grand arbre. Nos amis sont dans le magasin sur le canapé, et les amis du tailleur sont ici sur le lit de notre capitaine. Mes poissons sont ici dans ce verre d' eau[1]; les vôtres où sont-ils? Les nôtres ne sont pas dans l' eau; ils sont sur le gazon[2] dans le jardin de notre père. Où êtes-vous? Je suis sur mon cheval; n' êtes-vous pas sur le vôtre? Non, M.; je ne l' ai pas; mon domestique l' a. Nous sommes sous le manteau du cuisinier, et vous êtes sous le vôtre.

1, *Eau*, water. 2, *Gazon*, turf.

18. TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Do you go? Are you going?	*Allez-vous?*
I go. I am going. I do go,	*Je vais,*
Does he go? Is he going?	*Va-t-il?*
He goes. He is going. He does go,	*Il va,*
Do we go? Are we going?	*Allons-nous?*
We go. We are going. We do go,	*Nous allons,*
You go. You are going. You do go,	*Vous allez,*
Do they go? Are they going?	*Vont-ils?*
They go. They are going. They do go,	*Ils vont,*
To or *at the house of,*	*Chez,* (preposition,)
To *my* house, at *my* house,	Chez *moi,*
To *your* house, at *your* house,	Chez *vous,*
To *his* house, at *his* house,	Chez *lui,*
To *our* house, at *our* house,	Chez *nous,*
To *their* house, at *their* house,	Chez *eux.*

REMARK 1. The personal pronouns following prepositions have the above form

The *president.* The *doctor,*	Le *président.* Le *docteur,*
The one of, that of,	*Celui de,*
The ones of, those of,	*Ceux de,*
The *blacksmith.* The *candlestick,*	Le *forgeron.* Le *chandelier,*
Are you going to my house?	Allez-vous chez moi?
I am going to your house,	Je vais chez vous,
We are going to the house of the president, (or to the president's,)	Nous allons chez le président,
We are not going to his house,	Nous n' allons pas chez lui,
The doctor is at our house,	Le docteur est chez nous,
Are they going to their house (home?)	Vont-ils chez eux?
They are going to the doctor's,	Ils vont chez le docteur,
Are we not going home (to our house?)	N' allons-nous pas chez nous?
You are going home (to your house,)	Vous allez chez vous,
I am going home (to my house,) and he is going home (to his house,)	Je vais chez moi, et il va chez lui.
What candlestick have you?	Quel chandelier avez-vous?
I have the one of silver,	J' ai celui d' argent,
The iron one, the one of iron, that of iron,	Celui de fer,
The iron ones, the ones of iron, those of iron,	Ceux de fer.

The glass one, the one of glass, that of glass,	Celui de verre,
The glass ones, the ones of glass, those of glass,	Ceux de verre.

Remark 2. When the object of the possessive case is omitted its place is supplied in French by *celui* or *ceux*.

Have you the blacksmith's horse?	Avez-vous le cheval du forgeron?
No, sir; I have the doctor's,	Non, M.; j' ai celui du docteur,
Have you the tailor's candlesticks?	Avez-vous les chandeliers du tailleur?
I have the tailor's,	J' ai ceux du tailleur,
The children's, that of the children,	Celui des enfants,
The men's, those of the men,	Ceux des hommes,
Where is the doctor going?	Où va le docteur?
He is going into the garden,	Il va dans le jardin,
Have you the servant's hammers?	Avez-vous les marteaux du domestique?
No, sir, I have the cook's,	Non, M.; j' ai ceux du cuisinier,
We have those of the blacksmith, and he has that of the tailor	Nous avons ceux du forgeron, et il a celui du tailleur.

Where are you going? I am going to the house of the president. Are you not going to the doctor's? No, sir, I am going to the physician's. Where is the doctor going? He is going home. Is he not going to the neighbor's? No, sir, he is going to the blacksmith's. Where is the president going? He is going home. Are you going to my house? We are going to your house. Are we not going home? You are not going home. Are we going to the president's? No, sir, you are going to the neighbor's. Are we going to the merchant's? You are going to the merchant's. We are going home; is not your nephew going home? He is going home. Are the children going home? They are going home. I am going home; are not your nephews going home? They are not going home, they are going to my father's. What candlestick have you? I have the silver one. Have you not the glass one? No, sir; I have not the glass one. Has not the blacksmith the iron one? He has the iron one. What gloves have you? I have the cotton ones. Have you not the leather ones? I have not the leather ones. Which ones (*lesquels*) has the cook? He has the tailor's. Has he not the servant's? He has not the servant's. What gun has the boy? He has the corpo-

ral's. Which one has he? He has the iron one. Has he not the captain's? He has the captain's.

What has the servant? He has the blacksmith's iron, and the tailor's cloth. What candlestick has he? He has the cook's. Which one has he? He has the neighbor's. Where are my books? They are there. Are they there? Yes, sir; they are here on the bench. Where are the children? They are at the house of the neighbor. Are they not at your house? They are not at my house.

Le cheval est plus[1] gros que[2] le chien, mais[3] le bœuf est plus gros que le cheval. Pourquoi[4] n' allez-vous pas chez le médecin? Je ne vais pas chez lui parce que[5] je ne suis pas malade. Je vais chez ce marchand parce qu' il a le meilleur drap, et je vais chez ce tailleur parce qu' il a les meilleurs habits. N' allez-vous pas aussi[6] chez eux? Non, M.; parce que je n' ai pas l' argent nécessaire[7]. Vos enfants ont-ils le premier ou le second plat? Ils ont le premier, mais ils n' ont pas le second.

1, *Plus*, more. 2, *Que*, than. 3, *Mais*, but. 4, *Pourquoi*, why. 5, *Parce que*, because. 6, *Aussi*, also. 7, *Nécessaire*, necessary.

14. QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

INTRODUCTORY EXERCISES.

Do you wish (for?) *will you have?*	*Voulez-vous?*
I wish (for,) *I will have,*	*Je veux,*
Does he wish (for?) *will he have?*	*Veut-il?*
He wishes (for,) *he will have,*	*Il veut,*
Do we wish (for?)	*Voulons-nous?*
We wish (for,) *we will have,*	*Nous voulons,*
Do they wish (for?) *are they willing?*	*Veulent-ils?*
They wish (for,) *they are willing,*	*Ils veulent,*
If,	*Si,*
If you please, (if it please you,)	*S' il vous plaît,*
No, sir; *I thank you,*	Non, M.; *je vous remercie,*
The *same.* The *other,*	Le *même.* L' *autre,*
The *stranger.* The *nail,*	L' *étranger.* Le *clou,*
The *copper.* The *sick man, sick,*	Le *cuivre.* Le *malade, malade,*
Do you wish for the tea?	Voulez-vous le thé?
Yes, sir; if you please,	Oui, M.; s' il vous plaît,

Do you wish for the coffee?	Voulez-vous le café?
No, sir; I thank you,	Non, M.; je vous remercie,
Does the stranger wish for the milk?	L' étranger veut-il le lait?
He wishes for it,	Il le veut,
What do you wish for?	Que voulez-vous?
We wish for the sugar,	Nous voulons le sucre,
Do the children wish for the fruit?	Les enfants veulent-ils le fruit?
They wish for it,	Ils le veulent,
Does the blacksmith wish for the nails?	Le forgeron veut-il les clous?
He wishes for them,	Il les veut,
We wish for that book; do you wish for the same book?	Nous voulons ce livre; voulez-vous le même livre?
We wish for the other book,	Nous voulons l' autre livre,
I wish for the second volume,	Je veux le second tome,
The sick man wishes for the eggs,	Le malade veut les œufs,
My brother is sick,	Mon frère est malade,
What nails do the blacksmiths wish for?	Quels clous les forgerons veulent-ils?
They wish for the merchant's copper nails,	Ils veulent les clous de cuivre du marchand,
I wish for the cook's glass dish,	Je veux le plat de verre du cuisinier,
He wishes for the gentlemen's leather gloves,	Il veut les gants de cuir des messieurs.

REMARK. The syllable *ci* is often annexed to denote an object near, and *là* to denote one more remote.

This, this one, the *latter*. *That, that one*, the *former*,	*Celui-ci, Celui-là,*
These, these here, the *latter*. *Those, those there*, the *former*,	*Ceux-ci, Ceux-là,*
This apron, these aprons,	Ce tablier-ci, ces tabliers-ci,
That cake, those cakes,	Ce gâteau-là, ces gâteaux-là,
Do you wish for this ham or that ham?	Voulez-vous ce jambon-ci ou ce jambon-là?
I wish for this one, he wishes for that,	Je veux celui-ci, il veut celui-là,
Do they wish for these chickens, or for those?	Veulent-ils ces poulets-ci ou ceux-là?
They wish for those chickens, they do not wish for these,	Ils veulent ces poulets-là; ils ne veulent pas ceux-ci.

Do you wish for (will you have) the tea? No, sir; I thank you, I wish for the coffee. Do you wish for the milk? I wish for the milk and the sugar. Does the sick man wish for the fruit? He wishes for it. What bread does the sick man wish for? He wishes

for the cook's bread. Will you have the butter? No, sir; I thank you. Will you have the roast beef? Yes, sir; if you please. Does the stranger wish for the cheese? He wishes for it. Does the sick man wish for the salt? He wishes for the salt and the pepper. Do those sick men wish for the biscuit? They wish for the biscuit and the eggs. Do the children wish for any thing? They wish for something. What does the stranger wish for? He wishes for nothing. We wish for the mutton; do you not wish for it? I wish for it. Is your nephew sick? He is not sick. Where are you going? I am going home. Is the stranger going to your house? No, sir; he is going home. Are the sick men going to the physician's? No, sir; they are going home. Do you wish for this fish or that? I wish for this one. Does the child wish for these cakes or those? He wishes for these. Does he wish for this paper or that? He wishes for that paper, and his cousins wish for this. Do they wish for these pantaloons or those? They wish for these and those.

What has the doctor's boy? He has the bad cheese and the bad butter. Where is the boy's silver pencil? It is here on the bench. Where are the doctor's leather shoes? They are here on the floor. I wish for this copybook; do you wish for the same? No, sir; I wish for the other. Do you wish for the merchant's copper nails? I wish for them. Does not the blacksmith wish for them? He does not wish for them.

Mon gâteau est petit, mais celui-ci est encore[1] plus petit. Mon bon petit ami, voulez-vous le joli oiseau de mon frère? Non, M.; je vous remercie. Pourquoi ne le voulez-vous pas? Parce qu'il est bien méchant, et il est encore plus méchant que joli. Bonjour,[2] Monsieur. Bonjour, Madame.[3] Où allez-vous ainsi[4]? Je vais chez mon cousin le docteur; il est bien[5] malade, le pauvre homme! Alors[6] je vais avec[7] vous, si vous voulez. Je le veux bien[8], Madame. Le lion[9] est le roi[10] des animaux terrestres[11], et l'aigle[12] est le roi des animaux de l'air.[13]

1, *Encore*, still. 2, *Bonjour*, good day or good morning. 3, *Madame*, madam. 4, *Ainsi*, so. 5, *Bien*, very. 6, *Alors*, then. 7, *Avec*, with. 8, *Bien*, well. 9, *Lion*, lion. 10, *Roi*, king. 11, *Terrestres*, terrestrial. 12, *Aigle*, eagle. 13, *Air*, air.

15. QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

PRESENT TENSE OF AVOIR, &C.

The present tenses of the four following are all the verbs which have thus far been given.

TO HAVE,			AVOIR, (INFINITIVE,)		
J' ai,	*tu as,*	*il a,*	*nous avons,*	*vous avez,*	*ils ont,*
I have,	thou hast.	he has,	we have,	you have,	they have,

TO BE,			ÊTRE, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je suis,	*tu es,*	*il est,*	*nous sommes,*	*vous êtes,*	*ils sont,*
I am,	thou art,	he is,	we are,	you are,	they are,

TO GO,			ALLER, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je vais,	*tu vas,*	*il va,*	*nous allons,*	*vous allez,*	*ils vont,*
I go,	thou goest,	he goes,	we go,	you go,	they go,

TO WISH,			VOULOIR, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je veux,	*tu veux,*	*il veut,*	*nous voulons,*	*vous voulez,*	*ils veulent,*
I wish,	thou wishest,	he wishes,	we wish,	you wish,	they wish.

Thou. Thy, Thine,	*Tu. Ton* (sing,) *tes* (plur,)
Hast thou thy cloak?	Le *tien*, les *tiens*,
Thou art sick,	As-tu ton manteau?
Where art thou going?	Tu es malade,
	Où vas-tu?

REMARK 1. *Tu*, *ton* and *le tien* are to be used only in speaking to inferiors, as to servan and children, or as denoting great familiarity and endearment, or as *thou* in English, in the solemn and sublime style and sometimes to superiors, as kings and to the Supreme Being. In other circumstances *vous*, *votre* and *le vôtre* are to be used.

The *baker.* The *fisherman,*	Le *boulanger.* Le *pêcheur,*
The *carpenter.* The *umbrella,*	Le *charpentier.* Le *parapluie,*
The *grocer,*	L' *épicier.*

RULE. The place of the adjective in French is influenced by emphasis, perspicuity and euphony. The adjectives thus far given are generally placed before the noun. The learner may understand it as a general rule, with few exceptions, that other adjectives are placed after their nouns.

Fresh, cool, the fresh butter,	*Frais,* le beurre frais,
Black, the black cloth,	*Noir,* le drap noir,
White, the white handkerchief,	*Blanc,* le mouchoir blanc,
Yellow, the yellow birds,	*Jaune,* les oiseaux jaunes,

Blue, the blue cloaks,	*Bleu*, les manteaux bleus,
Sweet, gentle, the sweet fruit,	*Doux*, le fruit doux,
Sour, the sour milk,	*Aigre*, le lait aigre.

Remark 2. *Quelque chose*, *rien*, and *que* interrogative pronoun, require *de* before an adjective following.

What have you fresh?	Qu' avez-vous de frais?
I have nothing fresh,	Je n' ai rien de frais,
Have you something white?	Avez-vous quelque chose de blanc?
I have the white apron,	J' ai le tablier blanc,
What have you sweet?	Qu' avez-vous de doux?
I have something sweet,	J' ai quelque chose de doux,
Neither. Nor,	*Ne* (before the verb,) *ni* (after it.) *Ni*,
Do you wish for these cakes or those?	Voulez-vous ces gâteaux-ci ou ceux-là?
I wish for neither these nor those,	Je ne veux ni ceux-ci ni ceux-là,
Does he wish for this nail or that?	Veut-il ce clou-ci ou celui-là?
He wishes for neither this one nor that,	Il ne veut ni celui-ci ni celui-là.

When *ne* is used with *ni*, or with any other word having the force of a negative, *pas* or *point* is omitted, as in the above answers.

Remark 3. *Ce* and *ces* are adjectives and are used with nouns; *celui* and *ceux* are pronouns and used without them.

Have you the pantaloons or the waistcoat?	Avez-vous le pantalon ou le gilet?
I have neither the pantaloons nor the waistcoat,	Je n' ai ni le pantalon ni le gilet,
We wish to be tall,	Nous voulons être grands,
We wish to go home,	Nous voulons aller chez nous,
Dost thou wish for thy umbrella or for mine?	Veux-tu ton parapluie ou le mien?
I wish for neither thine nor mine,	Je ne veux ni le tien ni le mien.

Where dost thou wish to go? I wish to go home. Where art thou going? I am going to the baker's. Art thou not my friend? I am thy friend. Hast thou thy gloves or mine? I have neither thine nor mine. What has the baker? He has the coarse carpet. What has he good? He has the good bread and the good cakes. Are you going to the baker's or to the grocer's? I am going neither to the baker's nor to the grocer's. Are you going to the fisherman's? No, sir; we are going home. Where are those carpenters going? They are going to the grocer's. Do you wish for these umbrellas or

for those? We wish for neither these nor those; we wish for the black cotton umbrellas (*les parapluies de coton noirs.*) Do the strangers wish for the same umbrellas or for the others? They wish for the same. Is the fisherman going home? No, sir; he is going to the carpenter's. Is the carpenter going to the fisherman's? No, sir; he is going to our house. Where are those strangers going? The strangers are going to your house, and the fishermen are going home. What sticks do those children wish for? They wish for the carpenter's black sticks.

Do you wish for the sweet biscuit? No, sir; I thank you. Do you wish for these fresh eggs? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for this mutton? Yes, sir; if you please. Do the strangers wish for the same mutton or for the other? They wish for the other. Does the carpenter wish for the copper nails or for the iron ones? He wishes for the blacksmith's copper nails. What has the grocer fresh? He has the fresh butter. What have you black? I have the black cloak and the black apron. Have you any thing white? We have our white cloth. Have you nothing yellow? We have nothing yellow. Have you the yellow whip or the blue one? I have neither the yellow nor the blue one.

Ces deux[1] oiseaux sont-ils noirs? Non, Madame; ils ne sont pas noirs, car[a] celui-ci est bleu, et celui-là est rouge. Ces deux jambons sont excellents, mais celui-ci est beaucoup[2] meilleur que celui-là; le voulez-vous? Non, M.; je ne le veux pas, je vous remercie beaucoup. Pourquoi cela[3]? Parce que le jambon n'est pas à[4] mon goût.[5] Alors voulez-vous ces beaux gâteaux? Je veux bien, M.; vous êtes bien bon, et je vous remercie. Votre frère a-t-il le fruit aigre ou le doux? Il n'a ni l'aigre ni le doux. Ton cousin va-t-il chez le médecin quand[6] il est malade? Oui, M.; il va chez lui quelquefois.[7]

1, *Deux*, two. 2, *Beaucoup*, much. 3, *Cela*, that. 4, *À*, to. 5, *Goût*, taste. 6, *Quand*, when. 7, *Quelquefois*, sometimes. *a*, *Car*, for.

16. SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS,—DIRECT OBJECT.

TO LOOK FOR, TO SEEK,			CHERCHER, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je cherche,	*tu cherches,*	*il cherche,*	*nous cherchons,*	*vous cherchez,*	*ils cherchent.*
seek,	thou seekest.	he seeks,	we seek,	you seek,	they seek,

REMARK 1. Let it be borne in mind, that English verbs have three forms of the present tense, as; *I seek, do seek,* or *am seeking; thou seekest, dost seek, art seeking; he seeks, does seek, is seeking, etc.*, these three are to be rendered by the one form in French given above.

The *cat.* The *rat,*	Le *chat.* Le *rat,*
The *sailor,*	Le *matelot,*
Superb, that superb tree,	*Superbe,* cet arbre superbe,
That *clerk.* *But,*	Ce *commis.* *Mais,*
But not. *Me, to me,*	*Mais non, mais pas, mais non pas.* *Me, Te,*
Thee, to thee,	
You, (objective,) *to you.* *Us, to us,*	*Vous.* *Nous.*

RULE. These four pronouns like *le* and *les* are placed immediately before the verb, in negative as well as in other sentences

Whom? (interrogative.)	*Qui?*
Whom art thou looking for?	Qui cherches-tu?
I am looking for thee,	Je te cherche,
Are you looking for me?	Me cherchez-vous?
We are looking for you,	Nous vous cherchons,
I am looking for the clerks; are they looking for me?	Je cherche les commis; me cherchent-ils?
You are looking for them, and they are looking for you,	Vous les cherchez, et ils vous cherchent,
Are you not looking for me?	Ne me cherchez-vous pas?
I am not looking for you,	Je ne vous cherche pas,
Is not the sailor looking for you?	Le matelot ne vous cherche-t-il pas?
He is not looking for us,	Il ne nous cherche pas.

REMARK 2. Pronouns which are objects of the verb, in the above manner, that is, like the object of the verb in English, are called *direct objects*, or direct objective pronouns.

Is the clerk looking for you?	Le commis vous cherche-t-il?
Is he not looking for us?	Ne nous cherche-t-il pas?
He is looking for you,	Il vous cherche,
Is the cat looking for the rat?	Le chat cherche-t-il le rat?
He is looking for him,	Il le cherche,
The *scholar.* The *dictionary,*	L' *écolier.* Le *dictionnaire,*
Are the scholars looking for this dictionary or for that one?	Les écoliers cherchent-ils ce dictionnaire-ci ou celui-là?
They seek this one, but not that one,	Ils cherchent celui-ci, mais non (pas celui-là,
Do you wish for these gloves and those gloves?	Voulez-vous ces gants-ci et ces gants-là?
I wish for these but not those,	Je veux ceux-ci, mais non ceux-là.

REMARK 3. As the possessive pronouns *le mien*, *le vôtre*, etc., have the article when preceded by *de*, the contractions *du*, *des*, take place according to *Remark*, *Lesson* 12.

Of mine, or from mine,	Du mien,	(sing,)	des miens,	(plu,)
Of yours,	Du vôtre,	"	des vôtres,	"
Of thine,	Du tien,	"	des tiens,	"
Of his,	Du sien,	"	des siens,	"
Of ours,	Du nôtre,	"	des nôtres,	"
Of theirs,	Du leur,	"	des leurs,	"

Has he the book of your brother or of mine? A-t-il le livre de votre frère ou du mien?

Has he the money of my father or of his? A-t-il l'argent de mon père ou du sien?

He has that of yours, Il a celui du vôtre.

Do you wish to look for your dictionary? I wish to look for it. Are you going to look for it? I am going to look for it. What is the sailor going to look for? He is going to look for his dog. Are the sailors going to look for the captain? No, sir; they are going to look for their leather caps. Are you looking for me? I am looking for you. Art thou looking for us? I am looking for you. We are looking for you; are you looking for us? We are not looking for you; we are looking for the good scholar. Art thou not looking for me? I am not looking for thee. Whom art thou looking for? I am looking for the clerk of the merchant. Whom are the clerks looking for? They are looking for us. What is the servant looking for? He is looking for the cat and the rat. Is the cat looking for the rat? No, sir; the cat is not looking for the rat. Whom is the sailor looking for? The sailor is looking for the physician. Have you any thing superb? I have nothing superb. What has the clerk? He has the superb horse. Has the scholar his dictionary and his exercise? He has his dictionary but not his exercise. Does he wish for his dictionary or his knife? He wishes for neither his dictionary nor his knife.

Where are you going? I am going home. Where is the scholar going? He is going to your house. What does the president wish for? He wishes for the fresh bread. Does he wish for the bread of thy baker or of mine? He wishes for the bread of thine. Does he wish for the horse of my father or of yours? He wishes for the one of yours. Do the scholars wish for the books of your merchant or

those of theirs? They wish for those of ours. Does the blacksmith wish for the tobacco? He wishes for the tobacco, the coal, and the soap. Does the sick man wish for me? He wishes for you. Does he wish for us? He wishes for us.

Pourquoi ce bon écolier va-t-il chercher le dictionnaire de son ami? Il va le chercher parce que notre maître[1] le veut. Tous les hommes ne sont-ils pas frères? Ils sont frères, car ils sont enfants du même père. L' éléphant[2] mange[3] le fruit et le grain[4]; le lion et le tigre mangent fréquemment[5] les autres animaux. L' éléphant est naturellement[6] doux; le lion et le tigre sont naturellement féroces[7]. N' aimez-vous pas les écoliers dociles[8] et studieux[9]? Oui, certainement,[10] je les aime beaucoup, et tout le monde[11] les aime. Notre général aime trop[12] l' argent; il est plus avare[13] qu' honnête.[14]

1, *Maître*, master. 2, *Éléphant*, elephant. 3, *Manger*, to eat. 4, *Grain*, grain. 5, *Fréquemment*, frequently. 6, *Naturellement*, naturally. 7, *Féroce*, ferocious. 8, *Docile*, docile. 9, *Studieux*, studious. 10, *Certainement*, certainly. 11, *Tout le monde*, every body. 12, *Trop*, too much. 13, *Avare*, avaricious 14. *Honnête*, honest.

17. DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

FIRST CONJUGATION,—PRESENT TENSE.

REMARK 1. Verbs whose infinitive terminates in ER are of the FIRST CONJUGATION. They constitute about nine-tenths of all the verbs in the language, and all of them, except *aller*, have the terminations of the indicative present, with a few slight variations, like *chercher* in the preceding lessons, so the following:

TO LOVE, TO LIKE,			AIMER, (INFINITIVE,)		
TO LISTEN TO,			ÉCOUTER, (INFINITIVE.)		
INDICATIVE, *Present.*					
J' aime,	*tu aimes,*	*il aime,*	*nous aimons,*	*vous aimez,*	*ils aiment,*
I love,	thou lovest,	he loves,	we love,	you love,	they love,
J' écoute,	*tu écoutes,*	*il écoute,*	*nous écoutons,*	*vous écoutez,*	*ils écoutent,*
I listen to,	thou listenst to,	he listens to,	we listen to,	you listen to,	they listen to

The *shoemaker.* The *mason,*	Le *cordonnier.* Le *maçon,*
The *master,*	Le *maître,*
He has neither father nor brother,	Il n' a ni père ni frère,
We have neither bread nor cheese,	Nous n' avons ni pain ni fromage,
The *king.* The *prince,*	Le *roi,* Le *prince,*
The *bishop,*	L' *évêque,*

The *soldier*,	Le *soldat*,
The *vessel*. The *ship*,	Le *vaisseau*. Le *navire*,

REMARK 2. The article is prefixed to titles and epithets commonly applied to proper names.

General *Jackson*,	Le général *Jackson*,
President *Taylor*,	Le président *Taylor*,
King *George*. Prince *Charles*,	Le roi *George*. Le prince *Charles*,
Bishop *John*. Doctor *Peter*,	L' évêque *Jean*. Le docteur *Pierre*,
Good *David*. Big *William*,	Le bon *David*. Le gros *Guillaume*,

When *de* precedes such epithets, coming as it then does before *le*, it is, of course, contracted with *the* into *du*, though *of the* is not used in English. (*See Less.* 12.)

Doctor Peter's paper,	Le papier du docteur Pierre,
Captain John's whip,	Le fouet du capitaine Jean,
The soldiers of prince William,	Les soldats du prince Guillaume,
The ships of king Charles,	Les vaisseaux du roi Charles,
How much, how many,	*Combien*, (with *de* before the noun,)
Much, many,	*Beaucoup*, (with *de* before the noun,)
How many soldiers has king George?	Combien de soldats le roi George a-t-il?
He has many soldiers,	Il a beaucoup de soldats,
Has prince John many vessels?	Le prince Jean a-t-il beaucoup de vaisseaux?
He has not many vessels,	Il n' a pas beaucoup de vaisseaux,
Has bishop Peter much money?	L' évêque Pierre a-t-il beaucoup d' argent?
He has much money and many friends,	Il a beaucoup d' argent et beaucoup d' amis,
Of whom? whose? (with a noun,)	*De qui?*
Whose? the one of whom? (without a n.)	*Celui de qui?*
Whose? the ones of whom? (without a n.)	*Ceux de qui?*
Whose shoes have you?	Les souliers de qui avez-vous?
Whose (the ones of whom,) have you?	Ceux de qui avez-vous?
I have the shoemaker's,	J' ai ceux du cordonnier,
Whose hammer have you?	Le marteau de qui avez-vous?
Whose (the one of whom,) have you?	Celui de qui avez-vous?
I have the mason's,	J' ai celui du maçon.
Do your friends love you?	Vos amis vous aiment-ils?
They love me and I love them,	Ils m' aiment et je les aime.

REMARK 3. *Me* becomes *m'* and *te t'*, before a vowel or a silent *h*.

We love thee; dost thou love us?	Nous t' aimons; nous aimes-tu?
I love you,	Je vous aime,

Whom are you listening to?	Qui écoutez-vous?
I listen to you and you listen to me,	Je vous écoute et vous m' écoutez,
They listen to us,	Ils nous écoutent.

Whose coal have you? I have the blacksmith's. Whose has the master? He has the baker's. Whose has the shoemaker? He has his. Whose has the mason? He has ours. Whose nails has the carpenter? He has the grocer's. Whose have the masons? They have theirs. Whose have the shoemakers? They have theirs. Whose has the soldier? He has ours. Which ones (*lesquels*) has the fisherman? He has the carpenter's copper nails. Whom do you love? I love all my friends. Do they love you? They love me. Dost thou love thy brother? Yes, sir; I love him and he loves me. Does the master love you? He loves us and we love him. Whom do you not love? We do not love the wicked. Do you listen to the master? We listen to him. Dost thou listen to me? I listen to thee. Dost thou listen to thy master? I listen to him. Does the bad scholar listen to him? He does not listen to him, but we listen to him. Whom art thou listening to? I am listening to thee. Has king Charles many soldiers? He has many soldiers and many ships. How many ships and how many sailors has prince John? He has neither ships nor sailors.

Where is the shoemaker going? He is going to the mason's. Where is the prince going? He is going to the king's. Are the scholars going to the master's? No, sir; they are going to bishop William's. Does the bishop love the king? He loves the king and the prince. How many friends has bishop Peter? He has many friends. What have you sour (*aigre?*) I have the sour fruit and the sour wine. Whose whip have you? I have mine. Whose has the child? He has thine. What has the baker? He has the good coal, the fresh biscuit, and the fresh eggs. Has the grocer the tobacco and the soap? He has the tobacco and the soap, and he has the leather whips and the cotton handkerchiefs.

Tout le monde est à bord.[1] Tout est prêt.[2] Nous allons lever l' ancre.[3] Le temps[4] est [5]très-beau. Je vous souhaite[6] un[7] passage agréable.[8] Je vous remercie. Adieu.[9] [10]Passons-nous devant[11] Douvres.[12]? Non; nous le laissons[13] à gauche.[14] Nous entrons[15] à présent[16] dans la Tamise.[17] Nous arrivons[18] main

tenant.[19] Et où [20]débarquons-nous? Nous débarquons au pont[21] de Londres.[22] Où est ce pont? Le voilà[23] à gauche. Garçon,[24] voulez-vous me chercher un fiacre?[25] Oui, M.; certainement. Cocher,[26] nous allons à l' hôtel[27] du Prince[28] de Galles.[29] Bonjour, Monsieur, j' ai l' honneur[30] de vous saluer.[31] Je veux rester[32] quelques jours[33] à votre hôtel. Bien, M.; quels appartements[34] [35]désirez-vous?

1, *À bord*, on board. 2, *Prêt*, ready. 3, *Lever l' ancre*, to weigh the anchor. 4, *Temps*, weather. 5, *Très*, very. 6, *Souhaiter*, to wish. 7, *Un*, a. 7, *Agréable*, agrecable. 9, *Adieu*, adieu. 10, *Passer*, to pass. 11, *Devant*, before. 12, *Douvres*, Dover. 13, *Laisser*, to leave. 14, *À gauche*, to the left. 15, *Entrer*, to enter. 16, *À présent*, at present. 17, *La Tamise*, the Thames. 18, *Arriver*, to arrive. 19, *Maintenant*, now. 20, *Débarquer*, to land. 21, *Pont*, bridge. 22, *Londres*, London. 23, *Le voilà*, there it is. 24, *Garçon*, boy. 25, *Fiacre*, coach. 26, *Cocher*, coachman. 27, *Hôtel*, hotel. 28, *Prince*, prince. 29, *Galles*, Wales. 30, *Honneur*, honor. 31, *Saluer*, to salute. 32, *Rester*, to stav. 33, *Jour*, day. 34, *Appartement*, apartment. 35, *Désirer*, to wish.

18. DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS,—INDIRECT OBJECT.

Remark 1. In the phrases, *to be warm, to be cold, to be hungry, to be thirsty, to be sleepy to be afraid, to be ashamed, to be right, to be wrong*, instead of the verb *to be* and *an adjective* as in English, the French make use of the verb *to have* and *a noun*, literally meaning *to have heat, to have cold, to have hunger, etc.*, as follows:

Are you *cold?* I am cold,	Avez-vous *froid?* J' ai froid,
Very. I am not very cold,	*Bien.* Je n' ai pas bien froid,
Is he *warm?* He is very warm,	A-t-il *chaud?* Il a bien chaud,
Art thou not *hungry?*	N' as-tu pas *faim?*
I am not hungry,	Je n' ai pas faim,
Are they *thirsty?*	Ont-ils *soif?*
They are very thirsty,	Ils ont bien soif,
Who is *afraid?*	Qui a *peur?*
Those masons are afraid,	Ces maçons ont peur,
Are they not *ashamed?*	N' ont-ils pas *honte?*
They are not ashamed,	Ils n' ont pas honte,
Is not the scholar *sleepy?*	L' écolier n' a-t-il pas *sommeil?*
He is very sleepy,	Il a bien sommeil,
Are we not *right?*	N' avons-nous pas *raison?*
No, sir; we are *wrong*,	Non, M.; nous avons *tort*,
Am I right or wrong?	Ai-je raison ou tort?

You are neither right nor wrong,	Vous n' avez ni raison ni tort,
To speak,	*Parler.*

REMARK 2. Let the learner bear in mind hereafter, that all verbs in *er* are varied in the present tense like *chercher*, *aimer*, and *écouter*, given in the two last lessons.

To him, to her. To them,	***Lui***, (before verb,) ***Leur***, (bef. verb,)
Dost thou speak to me?	Me parles-tu?
I speak to thee. Do you speak to us?	Je te parle. Nous parlez-vous?
We speak to you,	Nous vous parlons,
Do you speak to bishop John?	Parlez-vous à l' évêque Jean?
I speak to him. ***To,***	Je lui parle. ***À,***
Do the gentlemen speak to those boys?	Les messieurs parlent-ils à ces garçons?
They speak to them,	Ils leur parlent.

REMARK 3. Pronouns which are objects of the verb in the manner of the above six, that is, with *to* or *some other preposition* expressed or implied before them, are called *indirect objects*, or *indirect objective pronouns*. They are placed as above immediately before the verb in negative sentences as well as in others.

They speak to him; does he speak to them?	Ils lui parlent; leur parle-t-il?
He speaks to them. I speak to him,	Il leur parle. Je lui parle,
What is the matter with you?	Qu' avez-vous?
I am sleepy,	J' ai sommeil,
What is the matter with that child?	Qu' a cet enfant?
Nothing is the matter with him,	Il n' a rien.

Are you cold? I am not cold. Are you warm? I am not warm. Are you warm or cold? I am neither warm nor cold. I am hungry; are you not hungry? I am hungry. Is not that sick man thirsty? He is very thirsty. Is he not sleepy? No, sir; he is thirsty, but not sleepy. What is the matter with that sailor? He is afraid. Are those soldiers afraid? No, sir; they are not afraid. Are they ashamed? They are ashamed. What is the matter with that fisherman? Nothing is the matter with him. Is he afraid or ashamed? He is ashamed. Are we not right? We are not right. Are we wrong? We are not wrong. Are we right or wrong? We are neither right nor wrong. What is the matter with big William? Nothing is the matter with him. Is he not hungry? He is very hungry and very thirsty. To whom (*à qui*) do you speak? I speak to that shoemaker. Do you speak to him? I speak to him. Does the corporal speak to that captain? He speaks to him. Dost thou

speak to him? I speak to him. Do you speak to those soldiers? We do not speak to them. Does the grocer speak to them? He speaks to them.

Do you speak to me? I speak to you. I speak to thee; dost thou speak to me? I speak to thee. Do you speak to us? We do not speak to you. We speak to you; do you not speak to us? We speak to you. To whom does prince William speak? He speaks to us; does he not speak to us? He speaks to me. Do not those soldiers speak to thee? They speak to me. Where is bishop Peter going? He is going to the president's. We are going home, are you going home? We are not going home; we are going to doctor John's? Are the fishermen going to my house, or to your house? They are going home. Has the cook the ham? He has the ham, the mutton, and the chicken. What have you? I have the white handkerchiefs and the black umbrella. What has the servant? He has the fish, the ham, the mutton, the chickens, and the sweet cakes.

Voulez-vous déjeuner[1] à présent, Monsieur? Est-il temps de déjeuner? Oui, il est temps, et le déjeuner est prêt. Que désirez-vous? Aimez-vous le bœuf rôti, le bifteck,[a] les pommes de terre,[2] le beurre? Ce petit morceau[3] de bœuf rôti est assez.[4] Je n' ai pas bien faim; mais j' ai bien soif. Dans ce cas,[5] ce bon vin français[6] est à votre service. Je vous remercie beaucoup, mon cher[7] monsieur. Êtes-vous bien où vous êtes? N' avez-vous pas froid? Notre feu[8] n' est pas bien bon. Je n' ai pas froid, et je suis très-bien ici. À propos, vous ne mangez rien. Vous plaisantez;[9] je mange beaucoup.

1, *Déjeuner*, to breakfast. 2, *Pomme de terre*, potatoe. 3, *Morceau*, piece. 4, *Assez*, enough. 5, *Cas*, case. 6, *Français*, French. 7, *Cher*, dear. 8, *Feu*, fire. 9, *Plaisanter*, to jest. *a*, *Bifteck*, beefsteak.

19. DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

PRONOUNS,—DIRECT AND INDIRECT OBJECT.

To give. To taste,	*Donner. Goûter,*
To carry, to wear. A, one,	*Porter. Un,*
The one and the other, both,	*L' un et l' autre,*
The ones and the others, both,	Les uns et les autres,
Neither the one nor the other, neither,	*Ni l' un ni l' autre,* (*ne* before verb,)

Neither the ones nor the others, neither,	Ni les uns ni les autres, (*ne* bef. verb,)
The *brook*,	Le *ruisseau*,
To the, *at the*, (singular,)	*Au*, before a consonant, *à l'* before a vowel and silent *h*,
To the, *at the*, (plural,)	*Aux*,
We are going to the brook,	Nous allons au ruisseau,
I speak to the bishop,	Je parle à l' évêque,
They are going to the stores,	Ils vont aux magasins,
The master speaks to the scholars,	Le maître parle aux écoliers.

Remark 1. *Au* and *aux*, let it be borne in mind, are contractions of *à le* and *à les*, (as *du* and *des* are of *de le* and *de les*, *Less.* 11 *and* 12,) and are to be used when one of the pronouns which take the article, as, *lequel*, *le mien*, *le vôtre*, etc., is preceded by *à*.

Does he carry the fish to my cook or to yours?	Porte-t-il le poisson à mon cuisinier ou au vôtre?
He carries it neither to mine nor to yours,	Il ne le porte ni au mien ni au vôtre,
Does he give the fruit to his friends or to ours?	Donne-t-il le fruit à ses amis ou aux nôtres?
He gives it to his,	Il le donne aux siens,
Do you taste the sweet fruit or the sour?	Goûtez-vous le fruit doux ou l' aigre?
We taste neither,	Nous ne goûtons ni l' un ni l' autre,
Do they wear the blue pantaloons or the blue coats?	Portent-ils les pantalons bleus ou les habits bleus?
They wear both,	Ils portent les uns et les autres,
To send,	*Envoyer*.

Remark 2. Verbs in *ayer*, *oyer*, and *uyer*, change *y* into *i*, in all parts of the verb where it is followed by *e* mute, as in the following present:

J' envoie,	*tu envoies*,	*il envoie*,	*nous envoyons*,	*vous envoyez*,	*ils envoient*,
I send,	thou sendest,	he sends,	we send,	you send,	they send.

Remark 3. When the direct and indirect objective pronouns come together, they are placed as follows: the indirect object of the first and second persons before the direct, and of the third person after it, as:

It or *him to me*, *them to me*,	*Me le*, *me les*,*
It or *him to thee*, *them to thee*,	*Te le*, *te les*,
It or *him to you*, *them to you*,	*Vous le*, *vous les*,
It or *him to us*, *them to us*,	*Nous le*, *nous les*,
It or *him to him*, *them to him*,	*Le lui*, *les lui*,
It or *him to them*, *them to them*.	*Le leur*, *les leur*,
Do you give me the parasol?	Me donnez-vous le parasol?
I give it to you,	Je vous le donne,
Do you give it to me?	Me le donnez-vous?

* It will help the learner's memory to bear in mind that these pronouns follow the order of persons; the first and second before the third.

We do not give it to you; we give it to him,	Nous ne vous le donnons pas; nous le lui donnons,
Does he give it to us?	Nous le donne-t-il?
No, sir; he gives it to them,	Non, M.; il le leur donne,
Do they give it to thee?	Te le donnent-ils?
They do not give it to me,	Ils ne me le donnent pas,
Dost thou send me thy books?	M' envoies-tu tes livres?
I send them to thee,	Je te les envoie,
Dost thou send them to him?	Les lui envoies-tu?
No, sir; I send them to them,	Non, M.; je les leur envoie,
Do they send them to you?	Vous les envoient-ils?
They send them to us,	Ils nous les envoient,
Do you send them to me?	Me les envoyez-vous?
We do not send them to you,	Nous ne vous les envoyons pas.

To whom do you speak? I speak to the president. Do you not speak to the doctor? I speak to him. Does that scholar speak to doctor Peter? He speaks to him. Does captain John speak to the soldiers? He speaks to them. Do they speak to the sailors? They do not speak to them. Do they speak to thee? They do not speak to me. To whom dost thou give the handsome sofa? I give it to thee. To whom does the master give the pretty book? He gives it to me. Dost thou not give it to us? I do not give it to you. To whom do the grocers give their fruit? They give it to me. Do they not give it to us? They do not give it to you. Do they give it to thee? Yes, sir; they give it to me. To whom do you give your money? I give it to prince William. Do you give it to him? I give it to him. To whom do you give yours? We give it to our brothers. Do you give it to them? We give it to them. To whom do the fishermen carry their fish? They carry them to the grocer. Do they not carry them to the shoemaker? They do not carry them to him. To whom does the clerk send the gloves? He sends them to the stranger. Does he send them to thee? He does not send them to me. Does he send them to us? He does not send them to you.

Does the shoemaker carry the shoes to the merchant? He does not carry them to him. Does he carry them to the soldiers? He does not carry them to them. Do you carry those fruits to your relations? I do not carry them to them. Do you give them to me?

I give them to thee. Where do you send those onions? I send them home. Do you not send them to us? I send them to you. Whose wine do you taste? I taste my uncle's. Whose does the mason taste? He tastes the grocer's. Whose dost thou taste? I taste thine. What dost thou taste fresh? I taste nothing fresh. Do those strangers taste the sweet fruit or the sour? They taste both. Dost thou carry the black umbrella or the blue? I carry neither. Has the carpenter the copper nails or the iron ones? He has neither. Where is the fisherman going? He is going to the brook, and we are going home.

N' allez-vous pas à Paris, Monsieur? Oui, nous quittons[1] Londres pour[2] quelque temps. Je vais à Paris aussi. Nous sommes charmés[3] d' avoir votre compagnie.[4] Monsieur, vous êtes bien honnête.[5] Tout est prêt. Adieu à Londres pour quelque temps. Maintenant nous avançons[6] rapidement.[7] Quel est ce bel édifice[8] à gauche? Cet édifice est l' observatoire.[9] Où sommes-nous maintenant? Nous sommes sur le chemin[10] de Kent. Passons-nous par[11] Greenwich? Non, nous le laissons à gauche. Où mène[12] ce beau chemin à droite?[13] Il mène à Woolwich. Où [14]arrêtons-nous pour manger? Nous n' arrêtons pas parce que nous arrivons à Douvres avant[15] le soir.[16]

1, *Quitter*, to leave. 2, *Pour*, for. 3, *Charmé*, charmed. 4, *Compagnie*, company. 5, *Honnête*, polite. 6, *Avancer*, to advance. 7, *Rapidement*, rapidly. 8, *Edifice*, edifice. 9, *Observatoire*, observatory. 10, *Chemin*, road. 11, *Par*, through. 12, *Mener*, to lead. 13, *À droite*, on the right. 14, *Arrêter*, to stop. 15, *Avant*, before. 16, *Soir*, evening.

20. VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

INTERROGATION WITH EST-CE-QUE.

Do I seek? am I looking for?	*Est-ce que je cherche?*
Do I love?	*Est-ce que j' aime?*
Do I listen?	*Est-ce que j' écoute?*
Do I speak?	*Est-ce que je parle?*
Do I give?	*Est-ce que je donne?*
Am I?	*Est-ce que je suis?*
What *do I taste?*	Qu' *est-ce que je goûte?*

Do I not wish for my money?	*Est-ce que je ne veux pas* mon argent?
Do I not wish for it?	Est-ce que je ne le veux pas?*

This mode of introducing the subject is often used also with the other persons.

Do we not give?	Est-ce que nous ne donnons pas?
Do you taste?	Est-ce que vous goûtez?
Dost thou wear a white hat?	Est-ce que tu portes un chapeau blanc?
Does he taste the roast beef?	Est-ce qu' il goûte le bœuf rôti?
Do they taste it?	Est-ce qu' ils le goûtent?
To lend. To buy,	*Prêter. Acheter.*

Remark 1. In verbs of the first conjugation, having *e* mute in the last syllable but one, the *e* takes the grave accent in all those persons where the next consonant is followed by *e* mute.

J' achète,	*tu achètes,*	*il achète,*	*nous achetons,*	*vous achetez,*	*ils achètent,*
I buy,	thou buyest,	he buys	we buy,	you buy,	they buy,

To study. Well,	*Étudier. Bien,*
He studies well. The *air,*	Il étudie bien. L' *air,*
The *morning, in the morning,*	Le *matin,*
The *evening, in the evening,*	Le *soir,*
The *weather, time.* This *climate,*	Le *temps.* Ce *climat,*
The *country.* The *countryman,*	Le *pays.* Le *paysan,*
The *Spaniard, Spanish language,*	L' *Espagnol,* l' *espagnol,*
The *Frenchman, French language,*	Le *Français,* le *français,*
The *German, German language,*	L' *Allemand,* l' *allemand,*
The *Englishman, English language,*	L' *Anglais,* l' *anglais,*
The *Italian, Italian language,*	L' *Italien,* l' *italien.*

The name of a people, when used as a noun, begins with a capital letter; when used as an adjective, it begins with a small letter.

Are you willing to lend me your gun?	Voulez-vous me prêter votre fusil?
I am willing to lend it to you,	Je veux vous le prêter,
What does the countryman buy?	Qu' achète le paysan?
He buys a parasol, a sofa, and a broom,	Il achète un parasol, un canapé, et un balai.

Remark 2. The articles and adjective pronouns are to be repeated before each noun in the same construction, and before each adjective belonging to a separate noun.

---

* The interrogative form *est-ce que* is always used when the first person singular of the present indicative is a monosyllable. Except that either form is used with *avoir, dire, devoir, faire, pouvoir, être, aller* and *voir.*

With *je* after the verb, the final *e* mute of the first person singular present indicative, in verbs of the first conjugation, takes an acute accent. So *donne-je? goûte-je?* become *donné-je? goûté-je?* and sound accordingly.

In the sublime style, the form *est-ce que* is little used.

He wishes for the bread, butter and cheese,	Il veut le pain, le beurre et le fromage,
He lends the third, fourth and last volumes,	Il prête le troisième, le quatrième et le dernier tomes,
I have my knife, pencil and copybook,	J' ai mon couteau, mon crayon et mon cahier,
Do you study Spanish?	Est-ce que vous étudiez l' espagnol?
No, sir; I study French,	Non, M.; j' étudie le français,
Do I not study German?	Est-ce que je n' étudie pas l' allemand?
You study it,	Vous l' étudiez.

Remark 3. Adverbs are generally placed immediately after the verbs which they modify, except those of place and interrogation which stand as in English.

He studies French and German well,	Il étudie bien le français et l' allemand,
He loves his friends well,	Il aime bien ses amis.

Remark 4. Nouns used in a general sense take the article in French.

Sugar is sweet. Gold is yellow,	Le sucre est doux. L' or est jaune,
Silver is white,	L' argent est blanc,
Coal is black,	Le charbon est noir,
I like coffee in the morning,	J' aime le café le matin,
I like tea in the evening,	J' aime le thé le soir.

Do I buy the best sofa? You do not buy the best. Do I buy the blue umbrella or the black one? You buy neither. Do you buy this parasol or that one? I buy both. Do you buy the cotton parasol? I buy it. What do those servants carry? They carry the onions, the brooms and the large chest. Do I lend you my books? You lend them to me. Do I lend you the third volume or the fourth? You lend me neither. Do I lend you the last? You lend me the last. What do those countrymen buy? They buy the best knives. Do they buy the steel ones or the ivory ones? They buy both. Do I not study well? You study well. Do I not study Spanish well? You study Spanish and French well. Where does the fisherman carry his fish? He carries them home. Where do you carry your books? We carry them to the store. What do you buy? We buy a chest and a sofa.

Do you wish to buy the glass candlesticks or the silver ones? I wish to buy neither. Does the blacksmith buy the steel or the ivory? He buys both. Does the Spaniard study French? Yes, sir; the

Spaniard studies French, and the Frenchman studies Spanish. Do the Englishmen study German? No, sir; the Englishmen do not study German; but the Germans study English. Dost thou study Italian? I study Italian, and the Italian studies English. Do you like the weather of this climate? I like it well. Does the Frenchman like the climate of this country? He likes it well. Are the friends of the president going home? No, sir; they are going to the general's. Do you like coffee (*Rem.* 4, *Les.* 20?) I like coffee and tea. Do you like wine? I like sweet wine. Is not steel white? No, sir; steel is blue, and gold is yellow. Is not coal black? Coal is black and silver is white. Does prince John like air in the morning? He likes air in the morning and in the evening.

To whom dost thou lend the money? I lend it to thee. Dost thou lend it to the baker? I lend it to him. Dost thou lend it to us? No, sir; I lend it to the merchant's clerk. Does he lend it to the sailors? He does not lend it to them. Do you lend your books to the scholars? I lend them to them. Does the scholar lend his books to the shoemaker? He lends them to him. Does he lend them to you? He lends them to us.

Bonsoir[1], Monsieur. J' ai l' honneur de vous saluer. Que désirez-vous? J' ai besoin[2] de drap[3]. De quel genre[4] de drap avez-vous besoin? Avez-vous un bon assortiment[5]? Certainement, Monsieur. Combien demandez[6]-vous pour le meilleur drap? Pour celui-ci, Monsieur, qui est notre meilleur drap noir[7], nous demandons vingt-cinq[8] francs[9] le mètre.[10] Il est cher. Non, M.; car[11] il est bien bon et bien beau. Si vous voulez me le laisser à vingt-deux[12] francs, je veux bien[13] acheter cinq[14] mètres. Bien, je vous le laisse à ce prix[15]. Voulez-vous un reçu?[16] Non, cela n' est pas nécessaire.

1, *Bonsoir*, good evening. 2, *Besoin*, need. 3, *Drap*, cloth. 4, *Genre*, kind. 5, *Assortiment*, assortment. 6, *Demander*, to ask. 7, *Noir*, black. 8, *Vingt-cinq*, twenty-five. 9, *Francs*, francs. 10, *Le mètre*, a metre. 11, *Car*, for. 12, *Vingt-deux*, twenty-two. 13, *Je veux bien*, I am willing. 14, *Cinq*, five. 15, *Prix*, price. 16, *Reçu*, receipt.

21. VINGT ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

SECOND CONJUGATION.—PRESENT TENSE.

Remark 1. Verbs whose infinitive ends in IR are of the SECOND CONJUGATION. There are more than two hundred verbs of this conjugation, and most of them terminate in the indicative present, as follows:

	TO CHOOSE,				CHOISIR, (INFINITIVE.)
Je choisis,	*tu choisis,*	*il choisit,*	*nous choisissons,*	*vous choisissez.*	*ils choisissent,*
I choose,	thou choosest,	he chooses,	we choose,	you choose,	they choose.

TO COME,	VENIR, (INFINITIVE.)
TO HOLD,	TENIR, (INFINITIVE.)

Venir, tenir and their compounds terminate as follows:

Je viens,	*tu viens,*	*il vient,*	*nous venons,*	*vous venez,*	*ils viennent,*
I come.	thou comest,	he comes,	we come,	you come,	they come.

Verbs in TIR have their terminations generally as follows:

	TO GO OUT,				SORTIR, (INFINITIVE.)
Je sors,	*tu sors,*	*il sort,*	*nous sortons,*	*vous sortez,*	*ils sortent,*
I go out,	thou goest out,	he goes out,	we go out,	you go out,	they go out.

A few verbs of this conjugation differ from the above models; these will be noted in the subsequent lessons.

Ever,	*Jamais,*
Never,	*Ne* before the verb and *jamais* after; without a verb *jamais,*
Often, frequently. Sometimes,	*Souvent. Quelquefois,*
Already. Still,	*Déjà. Encore,*
Not yet. Live, living,	*Pas encore,* (*ne* before verb.) *Vivant,*
Dead. To find,	*Mort. Trouver,* (*à* before infinitive,)
Who, which, that,	*Qui,* (subject of the following verb,)
Whom, which, that,	*Que,* (object of the following verb,)
What, that which,	*Ce qui,* (subject,) *ce que,* (object.)

REMARK 2. *What* equivalent to *that which* is rendered in French by *ce qui* or *ce que.*

Him who, the one which, etc.,	*Celui qui,* (subject,)
Him whom, the one which, etc.,	*Celui que,* (object,)
Those who, the ones which, etc.,	*Ceux qui,* (subject,)
Those whom, the ones which, etc.,	*Ceux que,* (object.)

REMARK 3. In all these relatives *qui* is the subject, and *que* the object of the following verb.

Are you looking for the man who is here?	Cherchez-vous l' homme qui est ici?
Do you seek the man whom I seek?	Cherchez-vous l' homme que je cherche?
I choose the umbrella which is black,	Je choisis le parapluie qui est noir,
I choose the umbrella which you choose,	Je choisis le parapluie que vous choisissez,
Do you hold what (that which) is good?	Tenez-vous ce qui est bon?
Do you hold what (that which) I give you?	Tenez-vous ce que je vous donne?
What fish do you wish for?	Quel poisson voulez-vous?
I wish for the one which is alive,	Je veux celui qui est vivant,
I wish for the one which you carry home,	Je veux celui que vous portez chez vous,

Do you wish for those which are large?	Voulez-vous ceux qui sont grands?
I wish for those which I am holding,	Je veux ceux que je tiens,
Do you come from the store?	Venez-vous du magasin?

De before *le magasin* forms of course *du magasin*, (*See Less.* 12.)

No, sir; I come from the brook,	Non, M.; je viens du ruisseau,
Whose horse is the countryman holding?	Le cheval de qui le paysan tient-il?
He holds his,	Il tient le sien,
Do you go out often?	Sortez-vous souvent?
I go out sometimes, but not often,	Je sors quelquefois, mais pas souvent,
Are you studying still?	Étudiez-vous encore?
I am studying still,	J' étudie encore,
Do you ever go out in the evening?	Sortez-vous jamais le soir?
We never go out in the evening,	Nous ne sortons jamais le soir,
Is the shoemaker already hungry?	Le cordonnier a-t-il déjà faim?
He is not yet hungry,	Il n' a pas encore faim,
Does the cook choose the live fish or the dead?	Le cuisinier choisit-il le poisson vivant ou le mort?
He chooses the dead,	Il choisit le mort,
Do you find the ivory buttons or the copper ones?	Trouvez-vous les boutons d' ivoire ou ceux de cuivre?
I find both,	Je trouve les uns et les autres.

Do the cooks choose the live fish or the dead? They choose the live. Dost thou choose the glass candlestick, or the copper one? I choose neither. Do you come from the brook? No, sir; I come from the (*du*) store. Does the mason come from the brook? No, sir; he comes from the ship. Does the king come here often? He comes here sometimes but not often. Do the countrymen ever come here? They never come here. What books are you holding? We are holding ours. Are the scholars holding theirs? They are holding theirs. Whose money is the countryman holding? He is holding his. Is he not holding yours? He is not holding ours. Whose books dost thou hold? I hold my friends'. Do they not hold theirs? No, sir; I hold theirs. Do you ever go out in the morning? I often go out in the morning. Do you ever go out in the evening? I sometimes go out in the evening. Does your uncle ever go out in the evening? He never goes out in the evening.

Do the children often go out? They sometimes go out but not often. Is the shoemaker already hungry? He is not yet hungry.

Is the mason still thirsty? He is still thirsty. Is your uncle already sleepy? He is already sleepy. Are the children sleepy? They are not yet sleepy. Do you find the candlestick which you seek? I do not find the one which I seek. Do you look for the hat which is on the floor? No, sir; I look for the other. Does the countryman find what he looks for? He does not find it. Does he look for what is here? No, sir; he looks for what the clerk has. Does he choose what you choose? No, sir; he chooses what is at the merchant's. Does he wish for the copper which the carpenter has? No, sir; he wishes for that which is here. Does he wish for that which we buy? No, sir; he wishes for that which is in the store. Do you look for the men whom I look for? I do not look for those whom you look for. Do you look for those who are at the neighbor's? I do not look for those who are at the neighbor's, but for those who are at the (*au*) store.

To whom do the Germans lend their books? They lend them to me. Do they not lend them to us? They do not lend them to you. Do you lend yours to them? I lend them to them. Does the Italian like the weather of this climate? He likes it. Do you like the climate of this country? I like it well.

Est-ce que Paris est aussi[1] grand que[2] Londres? Non, M.; Londres est beaucoup plus grand que Paris, mais Paris est plus beau que Londres. Quel est le nombre[3] des habitants[4] de Londres? Environ[5] un million[6] et demi[7]. Les palais[8] et les édifices publics[9] sont-ils aussi beaux que ceux de Paris? Je ne pense[10] pas. Combien de ponts[11] comptez-vous à Londres? Nous comptons six[12] ponts, et parmi[13] ces six deux sont de fer. Les quais[14] sont-ils beaux? Non, ils sont bien vilains. Pourquoi cela? Comme[15] Londres est le port[16] le plus commerçant[17] du monde[18], un nombre immense[19] de vaisseaux[20] déchargent[21] continuellement[22] sur les quais les productions[23] de tous les pays du globe.[24] Ainsi les quais sont toujours[25] encombrés[26] de marchandises[27].

1, *Aussi*, as. 2, *Que*, as. 3, *Nombre*, number. 4, *Habitant*, inhabitant. 5, *Environ*, about. 6, *Million*, million. 7, *Demi*, half. 8, *Palais*, palace. 9, *Public*, public. 10, *Penser*, to think. 11, *Compter*, to reckon. 12, *Six*, six. 13, *Parmi*, among. 14, *Quai*, quay. 15, *Comme*, as. 16, *Port*, port. 17, *Commerçant*, commercial. 18, *Monde*, world. 19, *Immense*, immense. 20, *Vaisseau*, vessel. 21, *Décharger*, to unload. 22, *Continuellement*, continually. 23, *Production*, production. 24, *Globe*, globe. 25, *Toujours*, always. 26, *Encombré*, encumbered. 27, *Marchandise*, merchandise.

22. VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

PARTITIVE NOUNS.

RULE. We have seen (*Less.* 20. *Rem.* 4,) that nouns used in a general sense take the article. Those used in a partitive sense are preceded by *de* and the article, making of course *du* (before a consonant) or *des*. (*Less.* 12.)

Some beef. *Some* gold,	*Du* bœuf. *De l'* or,
Some gloves. *Some* trees,	*Des* gants. *Des* arbres,
Do you wish for some roast beef?	Voulez-vous du bœuf róti?
I wish for some biscuit and some butter,	Je veux du biscuit et du beurre,
He has some pencils and some copy-books,	Il a des crayons et des cahiers.

REMARK 1. *Some* is not always expressed before partitive nouns in English, but the learner can easily determine on reflection whether the noun is used in a partitive or general sense. In the first three of the following sentences the noun is general, and therefore takes the article, but without *de;* in the other three it is partitive and takes *de* with the article.

He loves money. He loves coffee,	Il aime l' argent. Il aime le café,
He loves *chocolate*. He has money,	Il aime le *chocolat*. Il a de l' argent,
He has coffee. He has chocolate,	Il a du café. Il a du chocolat.

Here the learner readily perceives that the phrase *he loves money* means he is fond of it generally, but *he has money* means only, he has a limited quantity or some money. Hence, the former noun is general, and takes the article only; the latter is partitive, and takes *de* also

To the above rule of partitive nouns taking *de* and the article, there are two exceptions.

REMARK 2. *First Exception:*—Negative partitives take *de* without the article; as,

He has no money,	Il n' a pas d' argent,
Have you no biscuit?	N' avez-vous point de biscuit?
I have (some) biscuit,	J' ai du biscuit.

REMARK 3. *Second Exception:*—Partitives immediately preceded by an adjective take *de* without the article.

I have some pretty buttons,	J' ai de jolis boutons,
He has excellent wine,	Il a d' excellent vin.

The above rule and its two exceptions are illustrated in the four following phrases.

Has he (any) ivory?	A-t-il de l' ivoire?
He has no ivory,	Il n' a pas d' ivoire,
He has (some) good sheep,	Il a de bons moutons,

He has some white sheep,	Il a des moutons blancs,
To pick up, gather up. To break,	*Ramasser. Casser,*
To show. Red,	*Montrer,* (*à* before infinitive.) *Rouge,*
Hard. Soft,	*Dur. Mou,*
Warm. Cold,	*Chaud. Froid,*
Cooked. Well done,	*Cuit. Bien cuit,*
Raw. Rare, little cooked,	*Cru. Peu cuit,*
A *note*, *billet*. A *bank-bill,*	Un *billet*. Un *billet de banque,*
A *portfolio*, *pocket-book,*	Un *porte-feuille,*
The *gardener*. A *matress,*	Le *jardinier*. Un *matelas,*
Do you pick up the onions?	Ramassez-vous les oignons?
I do not pick them up; but the gardener picks them up,	Je ne les ramasse pas; mais le jardinier les ramasse,
What do the Spaniards break?	Que cassent les Espagnols?
They break their glasses,	Ils cassent leurs verres,
Do you show us the bank-bills?	Est-ce que vous nous montrez les billets de banque?
We show them to you,	Nous vous les montrons,
Do you choose the red pocket-book or the blue?	Choisissez-vous le porte-feuille rouge ou le bleu?
I choose the red one,	Je choisis le rouge,
Do the Frenchmen choose the hard matress or the soft?	Les Français choisissent-ils le matelas dur ou le mou?
They choose the soft one,	Ils choisissent le mou,
Does the German wish for the warm bread or the cold?	L' Allemand veut-il le pain chaud ou le froid?
He wishes for the cold,	Il veut le froid,
Dost thou choose the raw fruit or the cooked?	Est-ce que tu choisis le fruit cru ou le cuit?
I choose the cooked,	Je choisis le cuit,
We like beef rare, the Englishman likes it well done,	Nous aimons le bœuf peu cuit, l' Anglais l' aime bien cuit.

Do you like chocolate? (*Less.* 20, *Rem.* 4.) I like chocolate and tea. Do you like roast beef rare or well done? I like roast beef rare and eggs well done. Does the Italian like fruit raw or cooked? He likes it raw. Is not iron hard? Iron is hard; and copper is hard. Do you wish for some bread? No, sir; I thank you. Do you wish for some warm biscuit? Yes, sir; if you please. Does the gardener wish for some onions? No, sir; he wishes for some trees. Does the physician's nephew wish for some pepper? He wishes for pepper and

salt and some roast beef. What has the gardener in his garden? He has fruit and trees in his garden. Do you wish for warm chocolate? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for red wine? No, sir; I thank you. Do you choose hard fruit or soft? I choose hard fruit.

Has king John soldiers? He has no soldiers. Has prince William ships? He has no ships. Has the scholar books? He has no books. That poor man has no money; has he friends? He has good friends. You have no coffee; have you wine? I have good wine. Have you red wine? I have red wine. The gardener has no fruit; has he trees? He has large trees. What does the master pick up? He picks up his papers. What does the gardener pick up? He picks up the onion which is on the floor. What does the clerk break? He breaks the glass candlestick. What does the baker break? He breaks his dishes. What do you break? I break the big stick. Do you pick up what you find? I pick it up. Do you pick up what is on the floor? I pick it up. Do you show me the note which you have? I show it to you. Do you show the one which is in your portfolio? I show it.

Do you like this country? I do not like it. Does bishop Peter like the climate of this country? He likes it well. To whom does the Spaniard show the note which he has? He shows it to me. To whom does he show the one which is in his portfolio? He shows it to us. Does the Frenchman choose the hard matress, or the soft? He chooses the soft one. Is your wicked animal dead? He is dead.

Je désire de bons rasoirs[1] avec les manches[2] en ivoire. Bien, M.; nous avons un grand assortiment. Combien en voulez-vous? Quatre.[3] Ceux-ci sont nos meilleurs. Combien demandez-vous pour les quatre. Le dernier prix est de quatre dollars, et ils ne sont pas chers, je vous assure.[4] Bien, je les achète. Avez-vous de bons canifs?[5] Oui, M.; voulez-vous me les montrer? Quel est le prix de celui-ci? Un dollar. Et celui-là? Un dollar et demi. Pourquoi celui-là est-il plus cher que l' autre? Parce qu' il a deux lames.[6] Très-bien, cela est juste;[7] j' achète celui qui a deux lames. Combien est le tout? Le tout est cinq dollars et demi. Bonsoir, Mr. Bonsoir, M.; je vous remercie.

1, *Rasoir*, razor. 2, *Manche*, handle. 3, *Quatre*, four. 4, *Assurer*, to assure. 5, *Canif*, penknife. 6, *Lame*, blade. 7, *Juste* just.

23. VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

THIRD CONJUGATION,—PRESENT TENSE.

Why. Because,	*Pourquoi. Parce que,*
Sad. Badly,	*Triste. Mal,*
Very, very hard,	*Très*, très-dur.

Très is always joined by a hyphen to the following word.

Little, few. A little	*Peu. Un peu*, (*de* before a noun,)
A few,	*Quelques,*
He has little money, he has a few friends,	Il a peu d' argent, il a quelques amis,
To fill with. The *barrel,*	*Remplir de.* Le *baril,*
A *cask. Rich,*	Un *tonneau. Riche,*
Full. Empty,	*Plein. Vide,*
The *vinegar*,	Le *vinaigre.*

We have already seen the form of the personal pronouns following a preposition. (*Less.* 13.)

Of me, of thee, of us, of you,	De moi, de toi, de nous, de vous,
Of him, of them,	De lui, d' eux,
Of which one, of which ones,	Duquel, desquels,
Of *what*,	De *quoi*,
No one, nobody,	*Personne*, (with *ne* before the verb,)
Some one, somebody, any one,	*Quelqu' un*,
Some ones, some, a few,	*Quelques-uns.*

Verbs whose infinitive ends in OIR, are of the THIRD CONJUGATION. There are only seven regular verbs of this conjugation. These have the terminations of the indicative present, as follows:

TO RECEIVE,			RECEVOIR, (INFINITIVE.)		
Je reçois,	*tu reçois,*	*il reçoit,*	*nous recevons,*	*vous recevez,*	*ils reçoivent,*
I receive,	thou receivest,	he receives,	we receive,	you receive,	they receive.

Do you fill that barrel with wine?	Remplissez-vous ce baril de vin?
No, sir; I fill it with vinegar,	Non, M.; je le remplis de vinaigre,
With what does the countryman fill that cask?	De quoi le paysan remplit-il ce tonneau?
He fills it with fruit,	Il le remplit de fruit,
This barrel is full and that one is empty,	Ce baril-ci est plein et celui-là est vide,
Has any one my blue cap?	Quelqu' un a-t-il mon bonnet bleu?
No one has it,	Personne ne l' a,
Do you speak of me?	Parlez-vous de moi?
I do not speak of you,	Je ne parle pas de vous,
Do they speak of him or of them?	Parlent-ils de lui ou d' eux?

They speak of thee,	Ils parlent de toi
Have you any one's note?	Avez-vous le billet de quelqu' un?
No, sir; I have no one's,	Non, M.; je n' ai celui de personne,
Does the German speak English well?	L' Allemand parle-t-il bien l' anglais?
He speaks it very well; but the Italian speaks it very badly,	Il le parle très-bien; mais l' Italien le parle très-mal,
Why are you afraid?	Pourquoi avez-vous peur?
I am afraid because I have no gun,	J' ai peur parce que je n' ai pas de fusil,
Do you receive the notes which I send you?	Recevez-vous les billets que je vous envoie?
I receive them all,	Je les reçois tous,
Does your father receive those which we send him?	Votre père reçoit-il ceux que nous lui envoyons?
He receives them all,	Il les reçoit tous,
Why is the rich man sad?	Pourquoi l' homme riche est-il triste?
He is sad because he is sick,	Il est triste parce qu' il est malade.

Why are you cold? I am cold because I have no cloak. Why is the countryman ashamed? He is ashamed because he has no hat. Why is the gardener sad? He is sad because he has no trees. Does the Spaniard speak French well? He speaks it very well. Does the Frenchman speak English well? No, sir; he speaks it very badly. Do the English speak German badly? They speak it very badly. Do you speak Italian? I speak it a little. Do you wish for some pepper? (*Attend to the rule for partitives and the two exceptions, Less.* 22.) No, sir; I thank you. Do you wish for roast meat well done? Yes, sir; if you please. Does the clerk wish for something cold? No, sir; he wishes for something warm. Does he wish for some warm bread or some warm biscuit? He wishes for neither; he wishes for some warm eggs and some warm chocolate. Why is he ashamed? He is ashamed because he has no shoes. Has he no stockings? He has some stockings and some handsome gloves.

With what does the countryman fill that cask? He fills the cask with vinegar, and the barrel with wine. With what do you fill your chest? I fill it with books. With what do the servants fill the cask? They fill the cask with sugar, and the barrel with vinegar. How much fruit has the gardener? He has a barrel full of fruit. Do you choose the barrel full or the barrel empty? I choose the empty one. What have you good? I have a little (*un peu de*) good wine. How

much money has that rich man? He has a chest full of silver and gold. What has that rich man? He has much money, but few friends. With what dost thou fill the empty chest? I fill it with notes and papers. Of whom does the master speak? He speaks of thee and of me. Does he speak of us? He speaks of you and of us. Does he speak of the shoemakers? He speaks of them. Of which ones does he speak? He speaks of those who are here.

Do you receive the notes which I send you? I receive them. Does the rich man speak often of the poor? He speaks often of his poor neighbor. Of which one does he speak? He speaks of the one who is sick. Of which one does the doctor speak? He speaks of the mason. Does he speak of the same or of the other? He speaks of the same. Does the king like the weather of this country? He does not like the cold weather.

Est-ce que vous n' avez point de voitures[1] pour Douvres? Oui, M.; tous les matins et tous les soirs. Quels sont les prix des places? L' intérieur[2] est de vingt-cinq francs. Je veux trois[3] places dans l' intérieur. Quels sont les départs?[4] Nous en avons deux; l' un à huit[5] heures du matin, l' autre à sept[6] heures du soir. Nous voulons partir[7] demain[8] matin. Très-bien. Désirez-vous payer[9] le tout maintenant? Oui, M.; et je désire un reçu. Avez-vous beaucoup de bagage?[10] Non, deux malles[11] et un sac[12] de nuit.[13] [14]Donnez-vous quelque chose pour le postillon?[15] Volontiers.[16] Combien les voyageurs[17] donnent-ils ordinairement?[18] Deux schelins.[19]

1. *Voiture*, carriage. 2, *Intérieur*, inside. 3, *Trois*, three. 4, *Départ* departure. 5, *Huit*, eight. 6, *Sept*, seven. 7, *Partir*, to start. 8, *Demain*, to-morrow. 9, *Payer*, to pay. 10, *Bagage*, baggage. 11, *Malle*, trunk. 12, *Sac*, bag. 13, *Nuit*, night, (carpet-bag.) 14, *Donner*, to give. 15, *Postillon*, postillion. 16, *Volontiers*, willingly. 17, *Voyageur*, traveller. 18, *Ordinairement*, ordinarily. 19, *Schelin*, shilling.

24. VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

PRONOUN EN.

To thank, to thank for,	*Remercier, remercier de,*
Pleased, contented (with,)	*Content*, (*de* before the noun and verb,)
A *service.* A *penknife,*	Un *service.* Un *canif,*

New. To doubt of,	*Neuf. Douter de,*
His *courage. Clean,*	Son *courage. Propre,*
Dirty. To have need of,	*Sale. Avoir besoin de,*
He has need of your service,	Il a besoin de votre service,
The *linen,*	Le *linge,*
For what do you thank that man?	De quoi remerciez-vous cet homme?
I thank him for his service,	Je le remercie de son service,
He is contented with his servant,	Il est content de son domestique,
Is that new handkerchief dirty?	Ce mouchoir neuf est-il sale?
No, sir; it is very clean.	Non, M.; il est très-propre.

Remark 1. When several nouns or pronouns in the singular, joined together form the subject of the verb, unless they are connected by *ou*, the verb must be plural.

The king and the prince have ships,	Le roi et le prince ont des vaisseaux,
The bishop and the doctor are at home,	L' évêque et le docteur sont chez eux,
My brother or my cousin has my penknife,	Mon frère ou mon cousin a mon canif,
What is the matter with that child?	Qu' a cet enfant?
He is cold,	Il a froid,
What is the matter with you?	Qu' avez-vous?
Nothing is the matter with me,	Je n' ai rien,
Is any thing the matter with him?	A-t-il quelque chose?
Something is the matter with him,	Il a quelque chose,
Of it, of them, of him, from it, from them, from him, some,	*En,* (before the verb and after all the other objective pronouns,)
Have you need of money?	Avez-vous besoin d' argent?
I have need of it,	J' en ai besoin,
Is that child afraid of the guns?	Cet enfant a-t-il peur des fusils?
He is not afraid of them,	Il n' en a pas peur,
Does any one doubt of our courage?	Quelqu' un doute-t-il de notre courage?
No one doubts of it,	Personne n' en doute,
Do you speak of that bank-bill?	Parlez-vous de ce billet de banque?
We speak of it,	Nous en parlons.

Remark 2. *En* supplies the place of *de*, and a pronoun of the third person. When, therefore, a noun of the third person and object of *de* is replaced by a pronoun, *en* is used, although *of* be not used in the corresponding English, as:

Do you come from the brook?	Venez-vous du ruisseau?
I come from there, (or from it,)	J' en viens,
Do you fill your chests with linen?	Remplissez-vous vos coffres de linge?
We fill them with it,	Nous les en remplissons,
Does he thank you for your service?	Vous remercie-t-il de votre service?
He thanks me for it,	Il m' en remercie,

Are you pleased with your servants?	Êtes-vous content de vos domestiques?
I am pleased with them,	J' en suis content.

As the nouns in the above sentences are objects of *de*, when they are replaced by pronouns *en* is used. For the same reason partitive nouns being preceded by *de*, when replaced by pronouns require *en*.

Have you some linen?	Avez-vous du linge?
I have some,	J' en ai,
Has the Italian no courage?	L' Italien n' a-t-il point de courage?
He has none,	Il n' en a point,
Have you some new gloves?	Avez-vous des gants neufs?
We have some new,	Nous en avons des neufs, (*Less.* 25, *R.* 2,
Have you some good penknives?	Avez-vous de bons canifs?
I have no good ones,	Je n' en ai pas de bons,
Has the merchant some soft matresses?	Le marchand a-t-il des matelas mous?
He has none, but we have some,	Il n' en a pas, mais nous en avons.

En is generally to be used when *of it, of them*, may be supplied in English.

I have wine; have you some (of it?)	J' ai du vin; en avez-vous?
I have some good,	J' en ai de bon,
He has biscuit, and I have some (of it,)	Il a du biscuit, et j' en ai,
Have you books?	Avez-vous des livres?
I have some, few (of them,)	J' en ai quelques-uns,
Who has some (of them?)	Qui en a?
The doctor has many (of them,)	Le docteur en a beaucoup,
I wish for a few (of them;) have you not some (of them?)	J' en veux quelques-uns; n' en avez-vous point?
I have none (of them,)	Je n' en ai pas.

Have you some lead-pencils? I have some. Has the carpenter some wooden chests? He has not any. Has not that honest man friends? He has many (of them.) Has the honest man money? He has not much (of it.) Do you thank your friends for their service? We thank them for it. Dost thou thank the countrymen for their fruit? I thank them for it. Do they thank you for your service? They thank me for it. Are you pleased with your servants? I am pleased with them. Do you doubt of my courage? I do not doubt of it. Do the soldiers doubt of it? They do not doubt of it. Do you doubt of the Englishman's courage? We doubt of it. Dost thou doubt of the German's courage? I doubt of it. Have you need of good penknives? I have need of some good ones. Have you

need of new handkerchiefs? I have need of a few. Have you need of linen? I have not need of any.

Is that linen clean or dirty? It is clean. Are those handkerchiefs clean or dirty? They are dirty. Do you come from the brook? I do come from it? Does the sailor come from the brook? He comes from there. Has the scholar our books? He has not our books; he has his. Which volumes has the master? He has the third, the fourth, and the last. Which one have you? I have the last. Is that poor man honest? He is very honest. Have the honest many friends? They have many. Has the servant his brooms or ours? He has his. What has that boy? He has his paper and our penknives. Who has the best coffee? The grocer has the best coffee and the best chocolate. Do you lend me your penknive? I lend it to you. (*See Less.* 19, *Rem.* 3.) Do you lend the money to the soldiers? We lend it to them. Do they lend it to us? They do not lend it to you. Do they lend it to me? They lend it to thee. Do you show me your notes? I show them to thee. Do you show them to us? I do not show them to you. Do you send them to your father? I send them to him. Do you wish for the fruit raw or cooked? I wish for it raw. Do you wish for the roast-meat well done or rare? I wish for it rare. Are you already thirsty? I am not yet thirsty. Do you buy the vinegar which is in that cask? (*See Less.* 21, *Rem.* 3.) No, sir; I buy that which the grocer has. Do you wish for what is in this barrel? No, sir; I wish for what you have.

Monsieur C.... est-il chez lui? Oui, M.; voulez-vous le voir?[1] Oui, si cela ne le dérange[2] pas. Je pense que non. Bonjour, monsieur C.... Bonjour, monsieur B.... Comment allez-vous?[3] Très-bien, M.; je vous remercie. Et vous? Très-bien aussi. Comment va monsieur votre frère? Parfaitement[4] bien. Vous êtes bien bon de venir nous voir. Votre compagnie nous flatte[5] beaucoup. Vous êtes bien honnête, Monsieur. Comment trouvez-vous Paris? Je l' aime beaucoup. J' espère[6] que vous voulez bien dîner avec nous. Non, Monsieur; je vous remercie; cela est vraiment[7] impossible.[8] Comment cela? J' ai un monsieur à voir à deux heures. Cela n' est pas un obstacle,[9] car nous dînons à midi.[10] Dans ce cas, Monsieur, j' accepte[11] votre aimable[12] invitation.[13]

1, *Voir*, to see. 2, *Déranger*, to disturb. 3, *Comment allez-vous*, how do you do. 4 *Parfaitement*, perfectly. 5, *Flatter*, to flatter. 6, *Espérer*, to hope. 7, *Vraiment*, truly. 8, *Impossible*, impossible. 9, *Obstacle*, obstacle. 10, *Midi*, noon. 11, *Accepter*, to accept. 12, *Aimable*, amiable. 13, *Invitation*, invitation.

25. VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

FOURTH CONJUGATION,—PRESENT TENSE.

Verbs whose infinitive ends in RE, are of the FOURTH CONJUGATION. There are not many over a hundred verbs of this conjugation, about five and twenty of which ending in ENDRE and ONDRE, have the terminations of the indicative present as follows:

TO GIVE BACK, TO RETURN,			RENDRE, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je rends,	*tu rends,*	*il rend,*	*nous rendons,*	*vous rendez,*	*ils rendent,*
I return,	thou returnest,	he returns,	we return,	you return,	they return.

Those ending in UIRE, (about twenty,) have their terminations as follows:

TO CONDUCT,			CONDUIRE, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je conduis,	*tu conduis,*	*il conduit,*	*nous conduisons,*	*vous conduisez,*	*ils conduisent,*
I conduct,	thou conductest,	he conducts,	we conduct,	you conduct,	they conduct.

Those in AINDRE, EINDRE, OINDRE, (fifteen,) terminate as follows:

TO PITY,			PLAINDRE, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je plains,	*tu plains,*	*il plaint,*	*nous plaignons,*	*vous plaignez,*	*ils plaignent,*
I pity,	thou pitiest,	he pities,	we pity,	you pity,	they pity.

Those ending in OÎTRE and AÎTRE, (nine,) terminate as follows:

TO BE ACQUAINTED WITH, TO KNOW,			CONNAÎTRE, (INFINITIVE,)		
Je connais,	*tu connais,*	*il connaît,*	*nous connaissons,*	*vous connaissez,*	*ils connaissent,*
I know,	thou knowest,	he knows,	we know,	you know,	they know,

Blind, that blind man,	*Aveugle*, cet aveugle,
Blind of one eye, one-eyed,	*Borgne,*
The *workman. Always,*	L' *ouvrier. Toujours,*
To-day. Care, to take care	*Aujourd' hui. Soin, avoir soin,*
The *wit, spirit, mind,*	L' *esprit,*
The *judgment.* The *village,*	Le *jugement.* Le *village,*
Green. Gray,	*Vert. Gris,*
Somebody's, that of somebody,	*Celui de quelqu' un,*
Nobody's, that of nobody,	*Celui de personne,* (*ne* before the verb,)
Has that child your bank-bill?	Cet enfant a-t-il votre billet de banque?
He has not mine,	Il n' a pas le mien,
Has he not somebody's?	N' a-t-il pas celui de quelqu' un?
He has nobody's,	Il n' a celui de personne,
Has he not those of some one?	N' a-t-il pas ceux de quelqu' un?
He has no one's, (nobody's,)	Il n' a ceux de personne,
What do you give back to that man?	Que rendez-vous à cet homme?
I give back to him his green cloth,	Je lui rends son drap vert,
Does he give back to you your penknife?	Vous rend-il votre canif?
He gives it back to me,	Il me le rend,

Where do you conduct the blind man?	Où conduisez-vous l' aveugle?
I conduct him to the village,	Je le conduis au village,
The workman conducts him home,	L' ouvrier le conduit chez lui,
What is the matter with that workman?	Qu' a cet ouvrier?
He is blind of one eye,	Il est borgne,
Is he at home to-day?	Est-il chez lui aujourd' hui?
He is always at home,	Il est toujours chez lui,
Do you give him some bank-bills?	Lui donnez-vous des billets de banque?
I give him some,	Je lui en donne.

Remark 1. *En* used with the other objective pronouns must always stand last.

Some to me, some to us,	*M' en, nous en,*
Some to thee, some to you,	*T' en, vous en,*
Some to him, some to them,	*Lui en, leur en,*
Do you give me some?	M' en donnez-vous?
I give you some, I give them some,	Je vous en donne, je leur en donne,
They give us some, they give him some,	Ils nous en donnent, ils lui en donnent,
Whom do you pity?	Qui est-ce que vous plaignez?
I pity that one-eyed person,	Je plains ce borgne,
Are you acquainted with good John?	Est-ce que vous connaissez le bon Jean?
I am acquainted with him,	Je le connais,
Is the Frenchman acquainted with him?	Est-ce que le Français le connaît?

Remark 2. We have seen (*Less.* 22, *Rem.* 3,) that a partitive noun immediately preceded by an adjective takes *de* without the article. When a partitive noun is understood with an adjective, it takes or omits the article, the same as if the noun were expressed.

Have you some biscuit?	Est-ce que vous avez du biscuit?
I have some good,	J' en ai de bon,
I have some warm,	J' en ai du chaud.

In the last of these phrases, *du* is used because *chaud* is an adjective which is placed after its noun; and in the preceding *de*, because *bon* is one which is placed before its noun, making with the nouns expressed, *de bon biscuit*, *du biscuit chaud*. So also with the following:

Has he handkerchiefs?	Est-ce qu' il a des mouchoirs?
He has some pretty ones,	Il en a de jolis,
He has some white ones,	Il en a des blancs,
I doubt of his judgment and of his wit,	Je doute de son jugement et de son esprit.

Do you give back to the stranger his bank-bills? I give them back to him. Does the blind man give back to you your money? He gives it back to me. Do the scholars give back to us our books? They give them back to us. Do the workmen conduct that blind man to the store? No, sir; they conduct him to the village. Do

you conduct the stranger to the village? No, sir; I conduct him to my house. Is not the Spaniard blind? No, sir; he is one-eyed, but not blind. Whom do you pity? I pity that one-eyed man. Why do you pity him? I pity him because he is wicked. Does the German pity his horse? He pities him. Do the children pity that poor animal? They pity him. Do you not pity the poor animals? We pity them much.

Is not the workman's hammer on the floor? It is on the floor, under the sofa. Are you acquainted with doctor Peter? I am acquainted with him. Is the Englishman acquainted with him? He is not acquainted with him. Are those Italians acquainted with prince William? They are acquainted with prince William and king John. Does the gardener always take good care (*bien soin*) of his garden? He always takes good care of it. Are you going to the village to-day? No, sir; I am going to the store to-day. Do you doubt of that man's wit? I doubt of it. Do you doubt of his judgment? I do not doubt of it. Does your uncle doubt of his wit or of his judgment? He doubts of both. Do you choose the green cloth or the gray? I choose both. Do you choose the same which I choose or the other? I choose the same, and that one-eyed man chooses the other. Does he buy the green cloth or the gray? He buys the gray.

Of whose wit does the blind man doubt? He doubts of no one's. Does he doubt of some one's judgment? He doubts of some one's. Does the countryman give you some fruit? He gives me some. (*Rem.* 1.) Does he give us some? He gives you some. Does he carry some to the sick man? He carries some to him. Does he carry him some sour? (*Rem.* 2.) No, sir; he carries him some sweet. Does he carry him some good? He carries him some good. Does he carry him some hard? No, sir; he carries him some soft. How much fruit has the countryman? He has much (of it.) Has he a barrel full (of it?) He has some casks full (of it.) Do you wish for some (of it?) Yes, sir; if you please.

Connaissez-vous un monsieur S...., qui habite[1] ce [2]quartier-ci? Oui, M.; je le connais particulièrement;[3] il est mon ami. À quel numéro[4] [5]demeure-t-il? Il demeure au numéro 25. Mais il n'est pas en ville[6] à présent. Garçon,[7] avez-

vous quelque chose de bon. Oui, M.; nous avons du poulet[8] rôti, un côtelettes[9] et de bons légumes.[10] Je veux des légumes, des côtelettes de poulet. À propos, avez-vous de bon vin? Oui, M.; quel vin désire Du vin français. Après[11] mon dîner[12] je veux du café. Le voulez-vous fo faible?[14] Je l'aime bien fort. Garçon, mon café et des cigares.[15] Mainten voulez-vous m' indiquer[16] le chemin pour aller au musée?[17] Volontiers,[18] M.

1, *Habiter*, to inhabit. 2, *Quartier*, quarter. 3, *Particulièrement*, particularly. 4, *Numéro*, number. 5, *Demeurer*, to dwell. 6, *Ville*, town. 7, *Garçon*, waiter. 8, *Poulet*, chicken. 9, *Côtelettes*, cutlets. 10, *Légumes*, vegetables. 11, *Après*, after. 12, *Dîner*, dinner. 13, *Fort*, strong. 14, *Faible*, weak. 15, *Cigares*, cigars. 16, *Indiquer*, to indicate. 17, *Musée*, museum. 18, *Volontiers*, willingly.

ORDINAL NUMBERS.	NOMBRES CARDINAUX.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	NOMBRES ORDINAUX.
1,	*Un, une,*	1st,	*Premier,* (m.) *première,* (f.)
2,	*Deux,*	2d,	*Second,* (m.) *seconde,* (f.) *deuxième*
3,	*Trois,*	3d,	*Troisième,*
4,	*Quatre,*	4th,	*Quatrième,*
5,	*Cinq,*	5th,	*Cinquième,*
6,	*Six,*	6th,	*Sixième,*
7,	*Sept,*	7th,	*Septième,*
8,	*Huit,*	8th,	*Huitième,*
9,	*Neuf,*	9th,	*Neuvième,*
10,	*Dix,*	10th,	*Dixième,*
11,	*Onze,*	11th,	*Onzième,*
12,	*Douze,*	12th,	*Douzième,*
13,	*Treize,*	13th,	*Treizième,*
14,	*Quatorze,*	14th,	*Quatorzième,*
15,	*Quinze,*	15th,	*Quinzième,*
16,	*Seize,*	16th,	*Seizième,*
17,	*Dix-sept,*	17th,	*Dix-septième,*
18,	*Dix-huit,*	18th,	*Dix-huitième,*
19,	*Dix-neuf,*	19th,	*Dix-neuvième,*
20,	*Vingt,*	20th,	*Vingtième,*
21,	*Vingt et un,*	21st,	*Vingt et unième,*
22,	*Vingt-deux,*	22d,	*Vingt-deuxième,*
23,	*Vingt-trois,*	23d,	*Vingt-troisième,*
30,	*Trente,*	30th,	*Trentième,*
31,	*Trente et un,*	31st,	*Trente et unième,*
32,	*Trente-deux,*	32d,	*Trente-deuxième,*
40,	*Quarante,*	40th,	*Quarantième,*
50,	*Cinquante,*	50th,	*Cinquantième,*
60,	*Soixante,*	60th,	*Soixantième,*
70,	*Soixante-dix,*	70th,	*Soixante-dixième,*
71,	*Soixante et onze,*	71st,	*Soixante et onzième,*
80,	*Quatre-vingts,*	80th,	*Quatre-vingtième,*
81,	*Quatre-vingt-un,**	81st,	*Quatre-vingt-unième,*
90,	*Quatre-vingt-dix,*	90th,	*Quatre-vingt-dixième,*
91,	*Quatre-vingt-onze,*	81st,	*Quatre-vingt-onzième,*
100,	*Cent,*	100th,	*Centième,*
101,	*Cent-un,*	101st,	*Cent-unième,*
200,	*Deux cents,*	200th,	*Deux centième,*
210,	*Deux cent-dix,**	210th,	*Deux cent-dixième,*
1,000,	*Mille,†*	1,000th,	*Millième,*
1,001,	*Mille-un,*	1,001st,	*Mille-unième,*
2,500,	*Deux mille-cinq cents,*	2,500th,	*Deux mille-cinq centième.*
1 000,000,	*Un million,*	1,000,000th,	*Millionième.*

* *Quatre-vingts* and *cent* omit the *s* when followed by a number. *Cent* does the same in dates. The French say *deux cents hommes, cinq cents chevaux*, but for the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty, *l' an mil-huit cent-cinquante.*

† *Mille* in the computation of years becomes *mil.*

26, VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

PRONOUN Y.

TO MAKE, TO DO,			FAIRE, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je fais,	*tu fais,*	*il fait,*	*nous faisons,*	*vous faites,*	*ils font,*
I do,	thou doest,	he does,	we do,	you do	they do.

To wash,	*Laver,* (infinitive,)
TO DRY,	SÉCHER, (INFINITIVE.)

Verbs having an acute accent on *e* in the penult of the infinitive, as *sécher*, change the acute to the grave accent, when followed by a consonant having *e* mute after it, thus:

Je sèche,	*tu sèches,*	*il sèche,*	*nous séchons,*	*vous séchez,*	*ils sèchent,*
I dry,	thou driest,	he dries,	we dry,	you dry,	they dry,

Wet, the wet linen,	*Mouillé*, le linge mouillé,
The *wind*, in the wind,	Le *vent*, au vent,
The *sun*, in the sun,	Le *soleil*, au soleil,
The *fire*, in the fire,	Le *feu*, au feu.

TO PUT,			METTRE, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je mets,	*tu mets,*	*il met,*	*nous mettons,*	*vous mettez,*	*ils mettent,*
I put,	thou puttest,	he puts,	we put,	you put,	they put.

The *east*. The *west*,	L' *est*. L' *ouest*,
The *north*. The *south*,	Le *nord*. Le *sud*,
Before, before the fire,	*Devant*, devant le feu,
This, this thing. *That*, that thing,	*Ceci*. *Cela*,
This is gold, that is silver,	Ceci est de l' or, cela est de l' argent,
This is yellow, that is green,	Ceci est jaune, cela est vert,
That man is rich; do you doubt that?	Cet homme est riche; doutez-vous de cela?
I do not doubt of it,	Je n' en doute pas,
Do you do what you wish?	Faites-vous ce que vous voulez?
I do it,	Je le fais,
Where does the servant wash his linen?	Le domestique où lave-t-il son linge?
He washes it at the brook,	Il le lave au ruisseau,
Does he dry it in the sun?	Le sèche-t-il au soleil?
He dries it before the fire,	Il le sèche devant le feu,
Which way (where) is the wind?	Où est le vent?
It is in the east,	Il est à l' est, (il vient de l' est,)
It is not in the west,	Il n' est pas à l' ouest, (il ne vient pas de l' ouest,)
It is in the south,	Il est au sud, (il vient du sud,)

It is not in the north,	Il n' est pas au nord, (il ne vient pas du nord,)
To it, at it, in it, there, thither, / *To them, at them, in them, here,*	*Y*, (before the verb,)
Are you going to the village?	Allez-vous au village?
I am going there,	J' y vais,
What do you put in your pocket-book?	Qu' est-ce que vous mettez dans votre porte-feuille?
I put some bank-bills in it,	J' y mets des billets de banque,
What do the merchants put in those casks?	Les marchands que mettent-ils dans ces tonneaux?
They put wine in them,	Ils y mettent du vin,
What do you put in that barrel?	Que mettez-vous dans ce baril?
We put vinegar in it,	Nous y mettons du vinaigre,
What does the workman put in the chest?	L' ouvrier que met-il dans le coffre?
He puts the linen in it,	Il y met le linge.

We have seen the place of the other objective pronouns in *Less.* 19, that *en* is placed last of all in *Less.* 24. *Y* is placed after the other objective pronouns and before *en.*

Me there, us there, thee there,	*M' y, nous y, t' y,*
You there, him or it there, them there,	*Vous y, l' y, les y,*
Some there,	*Y en,*
Do you conduct me to your house?	Est-ce que vous me conduisez chez vous?
I conduct you there,	Je vous y conduis,
Do you conduct him there?	L' y conduisez-vous?
I conduct him there,	Je l' y conduis,
I conduct thee there,	Je t' y conduis,
They conduct us there,	Ils nous y conduisent,
They conduct me there,	Ils m' y conduisent,
We conduct them there,	Nous les y conduisons,
Do you take some sugar to the store?	Portez-vous du sucre au magasin?
I take some there,	J' y en porte,
I take some there to you,	Je vous y en porte,
We take some there to them,	Nous leur y en portons,
Once, twice, three times,	*Une fois, deux fois, trois fois,*
How many do four times nine make?	Combien font quatre fois neuf?
Four times nine make thirty-six,	Quatre fois neuf font trente-six,
Forty-five and twelve make fifty-seven,	Quarante-cinq et douze font cinquante-sept,
Twenty *less* nine make eleven,	Vingt *moins* neuf font onze.

Where does the servant wash the linen? He washes it at the brook. Does he dry it in the wind? No, sir; he dries it before the fire.

Do the soldiers wash their linen? They wash it and dry it. Do they dry it in the sun? They dry it in the sun and in the wind. Do you dry your wet gloves before the fire? No, sir; I dry them in the sun. What are you drying? We are drying our wet shoes. Is the wind in the east or in the west? It is neither in the east nor in the west. Is it in the north? It is not in the north; it is in the south. Is this gold? Yes, sir; this is gold and that is silver. Is this gray? Yes, sir; that is gray and this is black. Do you put your wet linen in the sun? I put it there. How many do five times five make? Five times five make twenty-five. How many do six times seven make? Six times seven make forty-two.

Are you going to the village? I am going there. Is the workman going there? He is not going there. What does he put in that barrel? He puts vinegar in it. Do the merchants put their wine in those casks? They put it there. Do you put the papers in the (*au*) fire? I put them there. We put our books on the bench; do you put yours there? I do not put them there. Do you conduct that one-eyed man to the village? I conduct him there. Do you conduct the strangers there? I conduct them there. Does the German conduct you to his house? He conducts me there. Does he conduct us there? He conducts you there. Does the workman carry sugar to the store? He carries some there. Does the clerk take some there? He does not take any there. Do you give me some fruit? I give you some. Do you put some in the chest? I do not put any there.

Is the cat looking for the rat? He is looking for him. Does the cat find the rat? He does not find him. Does the countryman give you some sweet fruit or some sour? He gives me some sour. What do you buy superb? I buy a superb coat and a superb cloak. What has the countryman superb? He has a superb horse. Where is the cat? He is under the sofa. Is not the cat a wicked animal? Cats and rats are wicked animals. How many do seven times eight make? Seven times eight make fifty-six, and eight times nine make seventy-two. How many do eighteen less four make? Eighteen less four make fourteen.

N. B. The learner is now prepared to commence with advantage *The Progressive French Reader*, which will hereafter be more improving to him than the continuance of such read-

ing lessons as have thus far been given. These latter will therefore now be discontinued. And the learner is earnestly recommended to read here, at the end of this twenty-sixth lesson, the first portion of that Reader, numbered 26; and at the end of the next grammar lesson, the portion numbered 27, and so on. Those portions form a series of lessons from the best French classics, carefully adapted throughout to the grammatical progress of the learner.

27. VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, PRONOUNS, ETC.

To dwell, to live. To forget,	*Demeurer. Oublier,*
To think, to think of,	*Penser*, penser à,
To lead, drive, take,	*Mener,*
To mend,	*Raccommoder,*
The *traveler*. The *musician*,	Le *voyageur*. Le *musicien*,
The *hatter*. The *lieutenant*,	Le *chapelier*. Le *lieutenant*,
Easily,	*Facilement*,
The *market*, to the market,	Le *marché*, au marché,
The *place*,	L' *endroit*,
The *world*, in this world,	Le *monde*, dans ce monde,
All the world, every body,	*Tout le monde*,
The *name. Somewhere*,	Le *nom. Quelque part*,
No where,	*Nulle part*, (*ne* before the verb,)
Every where,	*Partout*,
Do you dwell in Boston?	Est-ce que vous demeurez à Boston?
I dwell there,	J' y demeure.

REMARK 1. *Y* supplies the place of a pronoun of the third person preceded by *d*, as *en* does of one preceded by *de*. It commonly refers to things. When, therefore, a noun of this kind and the object of *d* is replaced by a pronoun, *y* is used. In some cases it refers to persons, and is sometimes an adverb.

Do you put your umbrella in that place?	Mettez-vous votre parapluie dans cet endroit-là?
I put it there,	Je l' y mets,
Are the musicians coming here?	Est-ce que les musiciens viennent ici?
They are coming here,	Ils y viennent,
Does the hatter put his hats there?	Le chapelier met-il ses chapeaux là?
He puts them there,	Il les y met,
Does he think of what he is doing?	Pense-t-il à ce qu' il fait?
He thinks of it,	Il y pense,
Do you often think of me?	Pensez-vous souvent à moi?

I think of you often,	J' y pense souvent,
Do you forget our names?	Est-ce que vous oubliez nos noms?
I do not forget them,	Je ne les oublie pas.
No one, none,	Without a verb *aucun;* with a verb and standing as subject, *aucun ne* before the verb; standing as object, *ne* before the verb, *aucun* after.
Do you take the travelers to the village?	Est-ce que vous menez les voyageurs au village?
I take them there,	Je les y mène. (*See Less.* 20, *Rem.* 1,)

Mener is applied to what moves of itself, *porter* to that which is carried.

They take the child home,	Ils mènent l' enfant chez lui,
They take the linen to the brook,	Ils portent le linge au ruisseau,
Are you acquainted with the lieutenant?	Est-ce que vous connaissez le lieutenant?
I am acquainted with him,	Je le connais,
Every body knows him,	Tout le monde le connaît,
Is he going any where?	Est-ce qu' il va quelque part?
He is going no where,	Il ne va nulle part,
Where is the traveler going?	Le voyageur où va-t-il?
He is going every where,	Il va partout,
To which one, to which ones,	*Auquel, auxquels,*
To which store do you take the traveler?	À quel magasin menez-vous le voyageur?
I take him to none,	Je ne le mène à aucun,
To which one does he go?	Auquel va-t-il?
He goes to my brother's,	Il va à celui de mon frère,
To which ones do your friends go?	Auxquels vos amis vont-ils?
They go to the new ones,	Ils vont aux neufs,
How many horses have you?	Combien de chevaux avez-vous?
I have one,	J' en ai un,
Have you not two?	N' en avez-vous pas deux?
I have three,	J' en ai trois,
How many brothers has the lieutenant?	Combien de frères a le lieutenant?
Has he not four?	N' en a-t-il pas quatre?
He has none,	Il n' en a aucun,
Does the tailor mend your coat?	Le tailleur raccommode-t-il votre habit?
He mends it,	Il le raccommode,
Does no child go to school?	Aucun enfant ne va-t-il à l' école?
None goes there to-day,	Aucun n' y va aujourd' hui,
Have you no friend here?	N' avez-vous aucun ami ici?
None,	Aucun,
Is no one of my friends there?	Aucun de mes amis n' est-il là?
No one of them is there.	Aucun n' y est.

Do you dwell in the village? I dwell there. Does the traveler dwell in (*dans*) this country? He dwells here. Do these musicians dwell in Boston? They do not dwell there; they dwell in New York, (*à New-York.*) Do you sometimes forget the lieutenant's name? I forget it often. Does he ever forget your name? He never forgets it. We sometimes forget our books; do the children ever forge theirs? They never forget them. Do you think of what you study I think of it much. Do those hatters think of what they are doing? They think of it. Do they think of what the musician is doing? They never think of it. Do you think of me? I often think of you. Does the hatter take the lieutenant to the store? He takes him there. Does he take the travelers to the village? He takes them there. Do you take the one-eyed man to your house? I take him there.

Does the servant mend the matress? He mends it. Does he mend it easily? He mends it very easily. Do the shoemakers mend your shoes? They mend them. Does the blind man wish to go to the market? He wishes to go there. Does he take (some) fruit to the market? He takes some there. Does the musician always put his books in their place? He always puts them there. Does one do what he wishes in this world? No, sir; no one does what he wishes in this world. Is every body acquainted with the lieutenant? Every body is acquainted with him. Does the hatter take you to the market? He takes me there. Do you always put your papers in their place? I always put them there. Do you go any where to-day? I go no where to-day. Is the traveler going any where? He is going every where.

To what store are you going? I am going to no one. To which one is the musician going? He is going to no one. Does the workman go every where? No, sir; he goes no where. Has the boy care of our horses? He has care of them. Is the wind in the north or in the south? It is in the south. Do you like air in the morning? I like air in the morning and in the evening. How many children has the hatter? He has five (of them.) How many has the lieutenant? He has six. How many brothers has he? He has none.

28. VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

INFINITIVES WITH À.

I like to listen to the traveler,	J' aime à écouter le voyageur.

REMARK 1. The verb *aimer* always requires *à* before a dependent infinitive, as seen in the above phrase. The same is the case with many other verbs and phrases. *Avoir, chercher, donner, mettre, montrer, porter,* and *trouver,* already given, take *à* before the dependent infinitive. Such verbs will be marked as they are given hereafter with the abbreviation, (*à* bef. inf.)

I have something to do,	J' ai quelque chose à faire,
He seeks to do that,	Il cherche à faire cela,
We show you how to do that,	Nous vous montrons à faire cela,
The scholar finds much to study,	L' écolier trouve beaucoup à étudier,
He likes to speak French,	Il aime à parler le français.

Other verbs, we have seen, govern the infinitive without *à*.

I am going to look for my dictionary,	Je vais chercher mon dictionnaire,
He wishes to go home,	Il veut aller chez lui,
We wish to be tall,	Nous voulons être grands,
I send to buy some green cloth,	J' envoie acheter du drap vert,
To leave,	*Laisser,*
To stay, to remain,	*Rester,* (*à* before the infinitive,)
To intrust, confide. To admire,	*Confier. Admirer,*
To count, reckon, also *to intend,*	*Compter,*
To take away, to *take off,*	*Ôter,*
Secret. A secret,	*Secret.* Un *secret,*
Alone. Fine,	*Seul. Fin,*
The *thread,*	Le *fil,*
The *care, attention. To have care,*	Le *soin. Avoir soin,*
That *officer,*	Cet *officier,*
To depart, set out,	*Partir,* (varied as *sortir* Less. 21.)
To-morrow,	*Demain,*
But, only,	*Ne* before the verb, *que* after it,
Have you only the fine thread?	N' avez-vous que le fil fin?
I have only the fine,	Je n' ai que le fin,
Have you only the live fish?	N' avez-vous que le poisson vivant?
I have only this one; and he has only that one,	Je n' ai que celui-ci; et il n' a que celui-là,
Of whom, of which, whose,	*Dont.*

REMARK 2. *De qui* is used only of persons and personified objects. It must always be used when *of whom* is interrogative. *Dont* applies to both persons and things and is generally preferred to *de qui* when followed by a pronoun.

Of whom do you speak?	De qui parlez-vous?
I speak of the man of whom you speak,	Je parle de l' homme dont vous parlez,
Do you buy the thread of which I speak?	Achetez-vous le fil dont je parle?
That (the one) of which, him of whom,	*Celui dont,*
Those (the ones) of which, those of whom,	*Ceux dont,*
That of which,	*Ce dont,*
I admire the one (him) of whom you speak,	J' admire celui dont vous parlez,
I admire those of whom you speak,	J' admire ceux dont vous parlez,
He takes away that of which I am afraid,	Il ôte ce dont j' ai peur,
Why do you take off your hat?	Pourquoi ôtez-vous votre chapeau?
I take it off to that man,	Je l' ôte à cet homme,
Do you leave your money here?	Laissez-vous votre argent ici?
I leave it here,	Je l' y laisse,
Those children remain here,	Ces enfants restent ici,
Do they remain here alone?	Est-ce qu' ils restent ici seuls?
They remain here alone,	Ils y restent seuls,
Do we trust our money to his care?	Est-ce que nous confions notre argent à son soin?
We trust it to it,	Nous l' y confions,
Dost thou admire the officer of whom I speak?	Est-ce que tu admires l' officier dont je parle?
I admire him,	Je l' admire,
Does he not count the soldiers?	Est-ce qu' il ne compte pas les soldats?
He counts them,	Il les compte,
Does he intend to depart to-morrow?	Est-ce qu' il compte partir demain?
No, sir; he sets out to-day,	Non, M.; il part aujourd' hui,
Do you set out to-day?	Est-ce que vous partez aujourd' hui?
I intend to depart to-day,	Je compte partir aujourd' hui.

Where does the musician leave his portfolio? He leaves it in that place (*cet endroit-là.*) Do you leave yours in the same place? I do not leave it there. Do you stay here to-day? No, sir; I depart to-day. Does the officer remain here? He remains here. Dost thou remain here alone? I remain here alone. Do you intrust your secret to me? I intrust it to you. To whom does the lieutenant intrust his secret? He intrusts it to the officers. Does he intrust it to them? He intrusts it to them. Do they intrust it to us? They intrust it to you. Do you admire the officer of whom we speak? Yes, sir; and we admire the traveler of whom you speak. Does the

tailor admire this fine cloth? He admires that fine cloth and that fine thread. Do the soldiers admire the officer's judgment? They admire his judgment and his wit.

Are you counting your money? I am counting it. Do the countrymen count their chickens? They do not count them yet (*encore.*) Do you intend to depart to-day? No, sir; I intend to depart to-morrow. Dost thou intend to be at home to-morrow? I intend to be there to-morrow. Why do you take off your coat? I take it off because I am warm. Why does the hatter take off his hat? He takes it off to lieutenant Peter. Do the workmen take off their shoes? They take them off. Do you take away all those papers? No, sir; I leave them here. Do you take away your books? We take them away. Are you willing (*voulez-vous*) to show your secret note? I am not willing to show it. Does the hatter wish to buy some green thread? He wishes to buy some green thread and some green cloth. Do the Italians depart to-day? They depart to-day, and we intend to depart to-morrow.

Of whose wit do you doubt? I doubt of the hatter's. Are you acquainted with him of whom we speak? I am acquainted with him of whom you speak. Do you love to listen to the musicians of whom we speak? I love to listen to the musicians of whom you speak? Do you take away that of which the child is afraid? I take it away. Do you admire the garden of which we speak? I admire the one of which you speak, and I admire those of which they speak. Does the rich man intrust his money to our care? He does not intrust it to our care. Do you admire the children of whom I speak? I admire those of whom you speak. Do you wish to buy an Italian dictionary? I wish to buy an Italian dictionary and a German dictionary.

29. VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

PARTITIVE NOUNS, WITH PAS OR POINT INTERROGATIVE.

To feel, smell, perceive,	*Sentir,* (varied like *sortir,* Less. 21,)
The *blow.* The *thunder,*	Le *coup.* Le *tonnerre,*

The clap of thunder,	Le coup de tonnerre,
All, *quite*, (adverb,)	*Tout*,
All alone, quite alone. The *nest*,	Tout seul. Le *nid*,
The *hole*. *Salted*, *salt*,	Le *trou*. *Salé*,
Square. *Round*,	*Carré*. *Rond*,
Fat. *Lean*,	*Gras*. *Maigre*,
Too, *too much*. *Also*,	*Trop*, (*de* before the noun.) *Aussi*,
Instantly, *forthwith*. *When*,	*Tout de suite*. *Quand*,
Does it rain? *It rains*,	*Pleut-il?* *Il pleut*,
The *inkstand*,	L' *encrier*,
Do you feel the clap of thunder?	Est-ce que vous sentez le coup de tonnerre?
I feel it,	Je le sens,
Do they feel the cold?	Est-ce qu' ils sentent le froid?
They feel it, and he feels it also,	Ils le sentent, et il le sent aussi,
Do you leave that child all alone?	Est-ce que vous laissez cet enfant tout seul?
I leave him all alone,	Je le laisse tout seul,
The bird is in his nest,	L' oiseau est dans son nid,
The rats make holes in the floor,	Les rats font des trous au plancher,
Does he wish for salt beef?	Est-ce qu' il veut du bœuf salé?
He wishes for some,	Il en veut,
Dost thou wish for some fat beef or some lean?	Est-ce que tu veux du bœuf gras ou du maigre?
I wish for some lean,	J' en veux du maigre,
I like to feel the wind when it rains,	J' aime à sentir le vent quand il pleut,
Do I not intrust too much money to that man?	Est-ce que je ne confie pas trop d' argent à cet homme?
You trust too much to him,	Vous lui en confiez trop,
When do you intend to depart?	Quand est-ce que vous pensez partir?
I intend to depart forthwith,	Je pense partir tout de suite,
Have you the square inkstand and the round one?	Avez-vous l' encrier carré et le rond?
No, sir; I have only the round one,	Non, M; je n' ai que le rond.

REMARK 1. We have seen *Less.* 22, that affirmative partitives take *de* with the article; negative partitives, *de* without the article. Let the learner particularly note further, that the form of expression, especially in interrogations, is often negative when the meaning is affirmative, and that in such cases the partitive takes *de* with the article.

Why is that rich man sad? has he not friends and money?	Pourquoi cet homme riche est-il triste? n' a-t-il pas des amis et de l' argent?
Why is that poor boy hungry and cold? has he no friends?	Pourquoi ce pauvre garçon a-t-il faim et froid? n' a-t-il point d' amis?

In the former of these sentences *des* is used because the speaker means to imply no doubt f the rich man's having friends ; in the latter *d'* is used because the speaker does doubt, and inquires simply if the boy has no friends.

Remark 2. In sentences like the former (where no doubt is implied) *pas* must always be used and never *point ;* in such as the latter, usage authorizes both, though *point* would seem preferable as excluding all ambiguity. Observing this distinction, in such phrases *pas* would always be used with *de* and the article, *point* with *de* alone.

You are rich ; have you not money ?	Vous êtes riches ; n' avez-vous pas de l' argent ?
That poor man has need of bread ; has he no money ?	Ce pauvre homme a besoin de pain ; n' a-t-il point d' argent ?

Do you feel the cold of this climate ? We feel it much. Dost thou feel the cold of this climate ? I feel it a little. Why are you afraid ? I am afraid because I feel the clap of thunder. Do you like to feel the fresh air when it rains ? I like to feel it when it rains. Do you go out when it rains ? No, sir ; I never go out when it rains. Does it not rain ? It does not rain. Does the Spaniard feel the cold of this climate ? He feels it much. Where do those birds make their nest ? They make their nest in a hole. Is the bird in his hole ? He is there. Do you wish for some salt fish or some fresh ? I wish for some salt. Is that garden square or round ? It is square. Do you wish for some fat beef and some lean ? No, sir ; I wish only some fat. Does the musician wish only for the lean ? He wishes only for the lean, and that officer wishes only for the fat.

Do you depart to-day ? We depart forthwith, and the Frenchman departs also. Dost thou depart instantly ? No, sir ; I intend to depart to-morrow. Does the Englishman speak Italian ? He speaks it easily. Does the Italian speak English easily ? No, sir ; he seeks to speak it, but he does not speak it easily. Do I not intrust too much money to that stranger ? You intrust too much to him. Do I intrust too much to those workmen also ? You intrust too much to them also. Have you only the glass inkstand ? I have only the glass one. Have you not the square inkstand ? No, sir ; I have only the round one. Does the traveler intrust his money to our care ? He does not intrust it to our care ; he intrusts it to the care of the merchant. Do the masters leave the scholars all alone ? They do not leave them all alone. Are you going any where this morning ? I am going to the

market forthwith. Do you forget the name of that blind man? I forget his name. Does he go any where to-day? He goes no where.

Where does the sailor go? He goes every where. To which market do you go? I go to the new market. To which one does the general go? He goes to no one. To which ones do the workmen go? They go to none. Is not every body acquainted with captain Charles? Every body is acquainted with him. Is that child afraid of the dogs of which we speak? He is not afraid of those of which we speak; he is afraid of the one of which his brother is afraid. Do you take away that of which he is afraid? I take it away.

30. TRENTIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, PRONOUNS, ETC.

TO SEE,			VOIR, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je vois,	*tu vois,*	*il voit,*	*nous voyons,*	*vous voyez,*	*ils voient,*
I see,	thou seest,	he sees,	we see,	you see,	they see.

Bitter. Narrow, tight,	*Amer. Étroit,*
Wide, broad. High,	*Large. Haut,*
Long. The *road,*	*Long.* Le *chemin,*
The *drawer.* A *piece, bit,*	Le *tiroir.* Un *morceau,*
Good fortune, good luck,	Le *bonheur,*
Bad fortune, bad luck. The *storm,*	Le *malheur.* L' *orage,*
Thick. The thick storm,	*Épais.* L' orage épais,
The *forehead.* The *eye, eyes,*	Le *front.* L' *œil, yeux,* (plural,)
The *arm.* The *foot,*	Le *bras.* Le *pied,*
The *hair,* (a single one,)	Le *cheveu* (singular,) les *cheveux* (plu.,)
Bald,	*Chauve,*
Does he who speaks much speak well?	Celui qui parle beaucoup parle-t-il bien?
He who speaks much does not always speak well,	Celui qui parle beaucoup ne parle pas toujours bien,
Is he who is poor always honest?	Celui qui est pauvre est-il toujours honnête?
He who is poor is often honest,	Celui qui est pauvre est souvent honnête,
His arm is long,	Il a le bras long.

REMARK 1. The article *le* is to be preferred to the possessive adjectives *mon, son, votre,* etc. when the possessor is otherwise sufficiently denoted. Note also the use of the verb *to have,* instead of *to be,* in such French phrases,

Is not that man's forehead high?	Cet homme n' a-t-il pas le front haut?
It is high and broad,	Il l' a haut et large,
Are not his feet small?	N' a-t-il pas les pieds petits?
They are very small,	Il les a très-petits,
Is not his hair black?	N' a-t-il pas les cheveux noirs?
His hair is black and his eyes blue,	Il a les cheveux noirs et les yeux bleus,
His nose is small,	Il a le nez petit,
He is bald, he has not a hair,	Il est chauve, il n' a pas un cheveu,
This wine is bitter,	Ce vin est amer,
This road is broad, and that one is narrow,	Ce chemin-ci est large, et celui-là est étroit,
Do you put something in that drawer?	Mettez-vous quelque chose dans ce tiroir?
I put nothing there,	Je n' y mets rien,
Do you put some pieces of cloth in it?	Y mettez-vous des morceaux de drap?
I put some there,	J' y en mets,
Do you see that thick storm?	Voyez-vous cet orage épais?
I see it,	Je le vois,
That man has much good fortune and little bad fortune,	Cet homme a beaucoup de bonheur et peu de malheur.

Why is that child afraid? He is afraid because he sees the dogs. Does he see those of which he is afraid? He sees them. Do you wish to see the man of whom we speak? I wish to see him (the one) of whom you speak. Do you see the handsome birds of which we speak? We see them. Whom dost thou see? I see the man whom you take to the market (*See Less.* 21, *Rem.* 3.) Do you see the one whose hair is white? I see him. What do those dogs see? They see the birds. Do they see those which we see? No, sir; they see only those which see them. Do you wish for this wine? No, sir; it is bitter. Is this fruit bitter? It is very bitter. Is not that coat tight? It is very tight, but these pantaloons are wide. Are you acquainted with that man whose nose is long and whose forehead is high? I am acquainted with him. Are not his eyes blue and his hair black? His eyes are blue, but he has no hair; he is bald.

Is not that servant's arm long? His arm is long and his foot large. Is not that road too narrow? Yes, sir; this one is too narrow but that one is very broad. Do you fill your drawer with linen? I fill it with it. Do you not put some pieces of cake in your drawer? I put some in it. Is not that old man bald? He is bald and blind of one eye. Are not his feet large? His feet are large and his forehead

is high. Why are those birds afraid? They are afraid because they see that thick storm. Do you see that thick storm? We see it. Do you speak of the bad fortune of the general? No, sir; we speak of his good fortune. Has he not much bad fortune? No, sir; he has much good fortune. Do you perceive the clap of thunder? I perceive it. Does the bird make his nest in that hole? He makes it there.

Does the servant put salt beef in that barrel? He puts some there. Have you need of that inkstand? I have need of it. Are you not warm? I am very warm. What is the matter with that workman? He is sleepy. Is the scholar right or wrong? He is right; he is not wrong. Do you doubt of my judgment or of his? I doubt of his. Does he doubt of mine or of yours? He doubts of ours. Do the officers doubt of my wit or of yours? They doubt of yours and of ours. Whose horses have you? I have mine. Whose has your cousin? He has his. Whose have the soldiers? They have theirs. Whose has the hatter? He has ours. Do you show me your secret notes? I do not show them to you. Do you show them to your friend? I show them to him. Is he who thinks much right? He who thinks much is right, and he who speaks much is wrong. Is he who studies much a good scholar? He who studies much is a good scholar.

---

31. TRENTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

FEMININE GENDER.

The,	*La*, (feminine of *le*,) *l'* before vowel or a silent *h*, plural *les*,
The *woman, wife*. The *women, wives*,	La *femme*. Les *femmes*,
The *water*,	L' *eau*.

Articles and adjectives agree in gender with their nouns.

A, one. A *lady*,	*Une* (feminine of *un*.) Une *dame*,
A *young lady*,	Une *demoiselle*,
Madam, mistress, Mrs.,	*Madame*, (plural,) *mesdames*,

Miss,	*Mademoiselle*, (plural,) *mesdemoiselles*,
She, *it*,	*Elle*, (feminine of *il*.)

As the French have no neuter gender, *elle* applies to all nouns not masculine.

They,	*Elles*, (feminine of *ils*,)
Her, *it*,	*La*, (fem. of *le*) *l'* bef. vowel or silent *h*,
My,	*Ma*, (feminine of *mon*,) plural *mes*,
Thy,	*Ta*, (feminine of *ton*,) plural *tes*,
His, *her*, *its*,	*Sa*, (feminine of *son*,) plural *ses*,
This, *that*,	*Cette*, (feminine of *ce*,) plural *ces*,
This *letter*, my letter,	Cette *lettre*, ma lettre,
This *table*, thy table,	Cette *table*, ta table,
That *chair*, his chair,	Cette *chaise*, sa chaise,
That *pen*, her pen,	Cette *plume*, sa plume,
Mine, (feminine,)	*La mienne*, (plural,) les *miennes*,
Thine, (feminine,)	*La tienne*, (plural,) *les tiennes*,
His, *hers*, (feminine,)	*La sienne*, (plural,) *les siennes*,
Ours, (feminine,)	*La nôtre*, (plural,) *les nôtres*,
Yours, (feminine,)	*La vôtre*, (plural,) *les vôtres*,
Theirs, (feminine,)	*La leur*, (plural,) *les leurs*,
Are you acquainted with that woman?	Connaissez-vous cette femme?
I am acquainted with her,	Je la connais,
Has she her pen?	A-t-elle sa plume?
She has it not,	Elle ne l' a pas,
Has she thine or mine?	A-t-elle la tienne ou la mienne?
She has yours,	Elle a la vôtre,
Does that lady wish for my chair?	Cette dame veut-elle ma chaise?
She wishes for it,	Elle la veut,
Is this letter hers?	Cette lettre est-elle la sienne?
It is not hers,	Elle n' est pas la sienne,
Are these chairs theirs?	Ces chaises sont-elles les leurs?
They are theirs,	Elles sont les leurs,
Does the young lady wish to see thy letter?	La demoiselle veut-elle voir ta lettre?
She wishes to see it,	Elle veut la voir,
Do those ladies put their books on the table?	Ces dames mettent-elles leurs livres sur la table?
They put them there,	Elles les y mettent,
Are you acquainted with Miss A.?	Connaissez-vous mademoiselle A.?
I am acquainted with her,	Je la connais,
Madam, do you wish for this chair?	Madame, voulez-vous cette chaise-ci?
No, sir; I do not wish for yours, I wish for his,	Non, M.; je ne veux pas la vôtre, je veux la sienne,

Whose pens have those young ladies?	Les plumes de qui ces demoiselles ont-elles ?
Have they thine or mine?	Ont-elles les tiennes ou les miennes ?
They have neither mine nor thine; they have only theirs,	Elles n' ont ni les miennes ni les tiennes, elles n' ont que les leurs.

What does that woman buy? She buys a chair and a table. Is this chair hers? No, madam; it is ours. Is that table hers? It is hers. What do you give to those ladies? I give them some letters. Do you give them yours? No, miss; I give them theirs. Do you carry the letter to that young lady? No, madam; I carry it to that woman. Has that young lady thy pen or mine? She has neither thine nor mine; she has hers. Have you not my pen? I have it. Does that woman wish for a chair? She wishes for a chair and a table. Hast thou not my letter? I have thy letter and thy pen. Has that lady her pen or ours? She has ours. Have the young ladies their pens? They have theirs. What does that lady wish for? She wishes for some water. Do you wish for some water also? I do not wish for any (of it.)

Is not that man's nose red? (*Rem. Less.* 30.) His nose is red, and his hair is red also. Is not his forehead high? His forehead is high and broad. That man is handsome, but is not his nose too small? His nose is too small and his feet too large. Is not his arm very long? His arm is very long. Do you wish for a piece of roast beef? No, sir; I thank you. What does that young lady wish for? She wishes for a piece of that cake. Do you put your inkstand in the drawer? I put my inkstand in the drawer, and I put my letters and my notes there also. Is not this road too narrow? This road is too narrow, but that one is very wide. Has not this poor woman much bad fortune? She has much bad fortune, but madam B. has much good fortune.

Do you give the Italians some books? I give them some. Do you like to feel the fresh air? I like to feel it. Do you like the air in the evening? I like it in the morning and in the evening. Do you like cold weather? (*See Less.* 20, *Rem.* 4.) I do not like cold weather. Do you like warm weather? I like neither cold weather nor warm weather. Does the Englishman dwell in this country? He dwells here. Does he like the climate of this country? He likes this coun-

try and climate. Are the children already hungry? They are not yet hungry. Are they already thirsty? They are not yet thirsty. Are those fish still alive? No, sir; they are dead.

32. TRENTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

FEMININE GENDER.

TO DRINK,			BOIRE, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je bois,	*tu bois,*	*il boit,*	*nous buvons,*	*vous buvez,*	*ils boivent,*
I drink,	thou drinkest,	he drinks,	we drink,	you drink,	they drink.

My *mother.* Thy *sister.*	Ma *mère.* Ta *sœur,*
Her *maid-servant.* The *widow,*	Sa *servante.* La *veuve,*
A *candle,*	Une *chandelle,*
She, the one, her, (before *de* or a relative,)	*Celle,* (feminine of *celui,*) plural, *celles,*
Whose pen do you look for?	La plume de qui cherchez-vous?
I look for the young lady's,	Je cherche celle de la demoiselle,
Whose do you look for?	Celle de qui cherchez-vous?
I look for mine,	Je cherche la mienne,
Whose? the one of whom? (without a noun,)	*Celle de qui?* (plural,) *celles de qui?*
This, this one, the latter. These, etc.,	*Celle-ci,* (feminine of *celui-ci,*) *celles ci* (plural,)
That, that one, the former. Those, etc.,	*Celle-là,* (feminine of *celui-là,*) *celles-là,* (plural,)
The one which or *who,*	*Celle qui,* (plural,) *celles qui,*
The one which or *whom,*	*Celle que,* (plural,) *celles que.*

We have seen (*Less.* 21, *Rem.* 3,) that *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb.

I know the lady who knows you,	Je connais la dame qui vous connaît,
I know the one (her) whom you know,	Je connais celle que vous connaissez,
I know those who know you,	Je connais celles qui vous connaissent,
I know those whom you know,	Je connais celles que vous connaissez,
She drinks the water which is here,	Elle boit l' eau qui est ici,
She drinks the water which you give her,	Elle boit l' eau que vous lui donnez,
Does she drink this or that?	Boit-elle celle-ci ou celle-là?
She drinks the former,	Elle boit celle-là,
To her,	*Lui, à elle.*

Her the object of a preposition is *elle; to her* the indirect object of a verb is *lui.*

He goes to her house,	Il va chez elle,
He speaks to her,	Il lui parle,
What or *which*, (with a noun,)	*Quelle*, (feminine of *quel*,) plural, *quelles*,
Which or *which one*,	*Laquelle*, (fem. of *lequel*,) plu. *lesquelles*,
Of which,	*De laquelle*, (plural,) *desquelles*,
To which,	*À laquelle*, (plural,) *auxquelles*,
To light, *kindle*,	*Allumer*,
What candle do you light?	Quelle chandelle allumez-vous?
I light the lady's,	J' allume celle de la dame,
Which one does the maid-servant light?	Laquelle la servante allume-t-elle?
She lights my mother's,	Elle allume celle de ma mère,
Of which one have you need?	De laquelle avez-vous besoin?
I have need of this one,	J' ai besoin de celle-ci,
I speak to this young lady; to which one do you speak?	Je parle à cette demoiselle; à laquelle parlez-vous?
I speak to her of whom you speak,	Je parle à celle dont vous parlez.

Rule. Masculine adjectives ending in *e* mute are the same in the feminine. Those which do not end in *e* mute annex one to form the feminine. Those in *el*, *eil*, *ièn*, *on*, and *et* double their final consonant before the *e* mute. Those also in *f* have their feminine in *ve*; and those in *x* in *se*, as

The poor man, the poor woman,	Le pauvre homme, la *pauvre* femme,
My little brother, my little sister,	Mon petit frère, ma *petite* sœur.

The plural of feminines is formed by annexing an *s*; there is no exception to this.

The large beds, the large tables,	Les grands lits, les *grandes* tables,
The good *sons*, the good *daughters*, *girls*,	Les bons *fils*, les *bonnes filles*,
A new carpet, some new chairs,	Un tapis neuf, des chaises *neuves*,
He is *happy*, she is *happy*,	Il est *heureux*, elle est *heureuse*,
Unhappy,	*Malheureux*, (m.) *malheureuse*, (f.)

Adjectives differing from the above rules will be noted as they are given in the following lessons.

Who lights the candle? The maid lights it. Whose candle does she light? She lights my mother's. Whose do you light? I light my sister's. Does your mother drink water or tea? She often drinks water. Do you drink coffee in the morning? I drink coffee in the morning and tea in the evening. Do your sisters drink tea? No,

madam; they drink only water. What does that widow wish to buy? She wishes to buy some tables. Does she wish to buy these tables or those? She wishes to buy these and those. Is the widow acquainted with thy mother? She is acquainted with my mother and sister. (*See Less.* 20, *Rem.* 2.) Are your mother and sister going to her house? They are going there. Is that child the daughter of the rich widow? No, miss; she is the daughter of the poor woman. What is the maid-servant looking for? She is looking for a pen. How many maid-servants has that widow? She has three.

Does that little girl wish to light her candle? She wishes to light it. What candle does she light? She lights hers. Do you light this one or that one? I light both. Which ones do the servants light? They light the large ones. Are not the daughters of Mrs. C. very good daughters? They are very good. Has not that woman some new tables? She has some new tables and some new chairs. Is not that young lady happy? She is very happy because she is very good. Do you carry the letter to that young lady? I carry it to her. Do you carry it to the one whom I am acquainted with? No, miss; I carry it to her (the one) who is acquainted with my sister. How many sons has thy uncle? He has two sons and one daughter.

Why is that man's nose red? His nose is red because he drinks too much wine. Do you choose the live fish or the dead ones? I choose the live. Do you drink chocolate or water? We drink water. Do you like chocolate? I like it sometimes. Do you like fruit raw or cooked? I like it raw. What do you pick up? I pick up these bank-bills, and I put them in my pocket-book. Is not this beef raw? No, sir; it is not raw, but it is rare. Do you wish to buy some matresses? I wish to buy some matresses and some candles. Why is the Englishman sad? He is sad because he has no money. Does he speak German badly? He speaks it very badly. Does he speak Spanish badly? No, sir; he speaks it well.

33. TRENTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

FEMININE NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

REMARK 1. Many substantives in French form the feminine in the same manner as adjectives, thus:

	MASCULINE,	FEMININE,
A friend,	Un ami,	*une amie*,
A cousin,	Un cousin,	*une cousine*,
A cook,	Un cuisinier,	*une cuisinière.*

REMARK 2. When the masculine ends in *er* the feminine takes the grave accent on the penultimate *e*.

A scholar,	Un écolier,	*une écolière*,
A stranger,	Un étranger,	*une étrangère*,
A merchant,	Un marchand,	*une marchande*,
A musician,	Un musicien,	*une musicienne*,
A relation,	Un parent,	*une parente*,
A countryman, a *country-woman*,	Un paysan,	*une paysanne*,
A neighbor,	Un voisin,	*une voisine.*

TO READ,			LIRE, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je lis,	*tu lis*,	*il lit*,	*nous lisons*,	*vous lisez*,	*ils lisent*,
I read,	thou readest,	he reads,	we read,	you read,	they read.

TO WRITE,			ÉCRIRE, (IRREGULAR,)		
J' écris,	*tu écris*,	*il écrit*,	*nous écrivons*,	*vous écrivez*,	*ils écrivent*,
I write,	thou writest,	he writes,	we write,	you write,	they write.

The *hand*. The *mouth*, La *main*. La *bouche*.

The following adjectives form the feminine irregularly.

Old,	Vieux, (feminine,) *vieille*,
Handsome,	Beau, (feminine,) *belle*,
White,	Blanc, (feminine) *blanche*,
Fresh, cool,	Frais, (feminine) *fraîche*,
To wait for, expect. To lose,	*Attendre. Perdre*,
To hear, to understand. To translate,	*Entendre. Traduire.*

Verbs in *uire*, let it be borne in mind, are varied like *conduire*, *Less.* 25.

The *noise*,	Le *bruit*,
The return,	Le retour,
The *honor*,	L' *honneur*,
Do you like to read and to write?	Aimez-vous à lire et à écrire?

REMARK 3. *À* is to be repeated before every infinitive depending on the same verb or phrase

I like to read, write and study,	J' aime à lire à écrire, et à étudier,
Do you read the letter which I write?	Lisez-vous la lettre que j' écris?
I read the letter which you write,	Je lis la lettre que vous écrivez,
That country-woman is waiting the return of her relation,	Cette paysanne attend le retour de sa parente,
Is that handsome lady the friend of your sister?	Cette belle dame est-elle l' amie de votre sœur?
No, miss; she is her cousin,	Non, Mademoiselle; elle est sa cousine,
Her hand is white, and her mouth pretty,	Elle a la main blanche et la bouche belle,
What does that old widow wish for?	Que veut cette vieille veuve?
She wishes for some fresh water,	Elle veut de l' eau fraîche,
Do you not lose your money?	Ne perdez-vous pas votre argent?
I do not lose it,	Je ne le perds pas,
What noise do you hear?	Quel bruit entendez-vous?
I hear the noise of the thunder,	J' entends le bruit du tonnerre,
Those scholars translate French books,	Ces écolières traduisent des livres français.

Does the cook write a letter to her neighbor? She writes one (of them) to her. Does the stranger lose much money? She loses much (of it.) Does the musician translate Spanish? She translates it very easily. Does the merchant buy the countrywoman's fruit? She buys it. Does your friend translate German easily? She translates it easily. Do you read all that which (*tout ce que*) that scholar writes? I read all that she writes. Does that old lady read all that her daughters write? She reads all that they write. Is not that young widow very tall (*grande?*) She is very tall and very handsome. Is not her hand very white? Her hand is very white and her mouth pretty. Are you waiting for the return of your cousin? No, sir; she is waiting for my return. Whom are your sisters waiting for? They are waiting for my mother. Are you waiting for your sisters? I am waiting for them.

Is the cook waiting for some one? She is waiting for the maid. How many daughters has that old lady? She has only one. Is she handsome? She is handsome, but her mouth is too large, and her hands are too large. What does that stranger wish? She wishes for a pen and a candle. What does that wicked man lose? He loses his money and his friends. Do the wicked always lose their friends?

They always lose them. I often lose my umbrella; do you often lose yours? We often lose them. Why is your relation afraid? She is afraid because she hears the noise of the storm. Do you hear it? I hear it. Do you hear the claps of thunder? I hear them. Why are your pretty neighbors afraid? They are afraid because they hear the noise of the storm. How many maid-servants has that merchant-woman? She has three. Do you hear that noise which we hear? We hear that which you hear.

Do you doubt of the honor of him of whom I speak? I doubt of it. Do you doubt of his honor or of his wit? I doubt of his honor. What do those musicians gather up? They gather up all their papers. Do you not break your glass inkstands? I do not break them. Is that glass empty or full? It is empty. With what do you fill that empty glass? I fill it with cool water. Does the maid fill the glass with vinegar? No, sir; she fills it with cool wine. Of whom do you speak? I speak of the stranger. Of which one do you speak? I speak of the musician whose hand is small and whose mouth is handsome. Of which one does your handsome neighbor speak? She speaks of the old one. Of what does that scholar speak? She speaks of the return of her mother.

34. TRENTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

TERMINATIONS OF THE FUTURE TENSE, ETC

The *future tense* of *avoir* and *être* has the following forms.

J' aurai,	*tu auras,*	*il aura,*	*nous aurons,*	*vous aurez,*	*ils auront,*
I shall have,	thou wilt have,	he will have,	we shall have,	you will have,	they will have.
Je serai,	*tu seras,*	*il sera,*	*nous serons,*	*vous serez,*	*ils seront,*
I shall be,	thou wilt be,	he will be,	we shall be,	you will be,	they will be.

The future always has the terminations as above, viz:

RAI, RAS, RA, RONS, REZ, RONT.

Remark 1. *Ma, ta, sa* become *mon, ton, son,* before a vowel or a silent *h.*

My friend, thy friend, her friend,	Mon amie, ton amie, son amie,
The *day after to-morrow,*	*Après-demain,*

This week. *Next,*	Cette semaine. *Prochain,*
Next *week,*	La *semaine* prochaine,
Next *month,*	Le *mois* prochain,
The *city, town,* in town. The *country,*	La *ville,* en ville. La *campagne,*
In the country, to the country,	*À la campagne.*

TO SAY, TELL,			DIRE, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je dis,	*tu dis,*	*il dit,*	*nous disons,*	*vous dites,*	*ils disent,*
I say,	thou sayest,	he says,	we say,	you say,	they say.

TO KNOW, TO KNOW HOW,			SAVOIR, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je sais,	*tu sais,*	*il sait,*	*nous savons,*	*vous savez,*	*ils savent,*
I know,	thou knowest,	he knows,	we know,	you know,	they know.

Perfectly. Intimately,	*Parfaitement. Intimement,*
That (conjunction,) *On it, thereon,*	*Que. Dessus,*
Under it, thereunder,	*Dessous,*
When will you have your money?	Quand aurez-vous votre argent?
I shall have it to-morrow,	Je l' aurai demain,
When will you have your new penknives?	Quand aurez-vous vos canifs neufs?
We shall have them the day after to-morrow,	Nous les aurons après-demain,
When will your pretty neighbor be at home?	Quand votre jolie voisine sera-t-elle chez elle?
She will be there next week,	Elle y sera la semaine prochaine,
Where will the general be next month?	Le général où sera-t-il le mois prochain?
He will be in town,	Il sera en ville,
Where will his sons be?	Ses fils où seront-ils?
They will be there also,	Ils y seront aussi,
Where wilt thou be?	Où est-ce que tu seras?
I shall be in the country,	Je serai à la campagne,
Do you know the French?	Est-ce que vous savez le français?
I know it perfectly,	Je le sais parfaitement,
What does the merchant's son say?	Le fils du marchand que dit-il?
He says that it rains,	Il dit qu' il pleut,
What do you say?	Qu' est-ce que vous dites?
I say that I am intimately acquainted with the captain's son,	Je dis que je connais intimement le fils du capitaine,
What does he like to do?	Qu' est-ce qu' il aime à faire?
He likes to do nothing,	Il aime à ne rien faire.
I wish not to go to the store,	Je veux ne pas aller au magasin,

REMARK 2. When the negative belongs particularly to the infinitive, the *ne* and other part (*pas, rien. jamais.* etc..) are both placed before it as in these two last phrases

Do you look for your pen on the table or under it?	Cherchez-vous votre plume sur la table ou dessous?
I look for it on it and under it,	Je la cherche dessus et dessous.

Will not the cook be happy when she shall have those large fish? She will be very happy. Will not the daughter be happy when she shall be at (*chez*) her mother's? Yes, madam; and my cousin will be happy when she shall be at her relation's. What does that scholar like to study? She likes to study nothing. What does she like to do? She likes to do nothing. When will you be at home? I shall be at home the day after to-morrow. Where will you be next month? I shall be at Boston (*à Boston.*) Will you have your money when we shall have ours? I do not know when you will have your money, but we shall have ours the day after to-morrow. When will the musicians have theirs? They will have theirs next week. Will you be in the city next month? We shall be in the city, but our relations will be in the country.

Do you know what that old lady says? She says that her son is a good scholar, and that he knows the French perfectly. Are you intimately acquainted with her son? I am intimately acquainted with him. Do you say the same that she says of her son? I say that he knows the French perfectly, and that he knows the Spanish perfectly also. When wilt thou be in the country? I shall be in the country next week. Do you put your umbrella on the table or under it? I put it on it. Do you put your hat on it or under it? I put it on it. Do you thank that lady for the honor which she does you? I thank her for it. Does the stranger thank you for your service? She thanks me for it. Are you pleased with (*content de*) the service of your servant? I am well (*bien*) pleased with it. (*See Less.* 24, *Rem.* 2.) Of whose courage do you doubt? I doubt of the musician's courage.

Are that child's hands clean? No, sir; his mouth is clean, but his hands are dirty. Are not his little sister's hands clean? They are clean and very white. Is this handkerchief dirty? It is dirty. Are not that little girl's hands dirty? No, madam; they are clean and very white. Does that man give you some cool water? He gives us some. Does he give you some? He gives me some. Who has care

of the store? The clerk has care of it. Does he give the tailors some fine thread? He gives them some. Do they not give him some fine cloth? They give him some. Do they give him the gray cloth or the green? They give him the gray.

35. TRENTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

To beat,	*Battre,* (varied like *mettre. Less.* 26.)
TO TAKE,	PRENDRE, (INFINITIVE,)
Je prends, tu prends, il prend,	*nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent,*
I take, thou takest, he takes,	we take, you take, they take,
To learn,	*Apprendre,* (*à* before the infinitive,) (varied as *prendre,*)
The *tongue, language,*	La *langue,*
To recognize,	*Reconnaître,* (varied as *connaître,*)
English. French,	*Anglais. Français,*
Spanish. Italian,	*Espagnol. Italien,*
German. The *latin, latin,*	*Allemand.* Le *latin, latin,*
The *greek, greek,*	Le *grec, grec,* (feminine,) *grecque,*
The *tool. To sell,*	L' *outil,* (masculine.) *Vendre,*
The *credit.* The *profit,*	Le *crédit.* Le *profit,*
A *slate.* A *lamp,*	Une *ardoise.* Une *lampe.*

The future of *aller*, to go, has the following form.

J' irai,	*tu iras,*	*il ira,*	*nous irons,*	*vous irez,*	*ils iront,*
I shall go,	thou wilt go,	he will go,	we shall go,	you will go,	they will go

Will you go to the city to-morrow? Irez-vous à la ville demain?

No, madam; I shall go there the day after to-morrow, Non, Madame; j' irai après-demain.

REMARK 1. *Y* is always omitted before the future of *aller* for euphony.

Will you go to New York next month? Irez-vous à New-York le mois prochain?

I shall not go there, but my brother will go, Je n' irai pas, mais mon frère ira.

The use and omission of *à* before the infinitive is seen in the following examples

Do you learn to read the French language? Apprenez-vous à lire la langue française?

I learn to read it,	J' apprends à la lire,
Do you wish to read the Spanish language?	Voulez-vous lire la langue espagnole?
I stay to read the English book,	Je reste à lire le livre anglais,
I know how to read the Italian book,	Je sais lire le livre italien,
He seeks to read the German book,	Il cherche à lire le livre allemand,
He intends to read the Latin book,	Il compte lire le livre latin,
We learn to read the Greek book,	Nous apprenons à lire le livre grec,
We are going to read the Greek language,	Nous allons lire la langue grecque,
Do you beat that dog?	Est-ce que vous battez ce chien?
I beat him,	Je le bats,
Who beats the boy?	Qui est-ce qui bat le garçon?
The workman beats him because he takes his tools,	L' ouvrier le bat parce qu' il prend ses outils,
Do you recognize your old friend?	Est-ce que vous reconnaissez votre vieil ami?
I recognize him,	Je le reconnais,
Does the grocer sell sugar?	Est-ce que l' épicier vend du sucre?
He sells some,	Il en vend,
What do you sell?	Qu' est-ce que vous vendez?
I sell my slate and my lamp,	Je vends mon ardoise et ma lampe,
Has that grocer credit?	Est-ce que cet épicier a du crédit?
He has neither credit nor profit,	Il n' a ni crédit ni profit.

REMARK 2. Nouns in an absolute sense after *neither*, *nor*, takes neither preposition nor article in French.

He has neither money nor friends,	Il n' a ni argent ni amis,
Do you light the candle or the lamp?	Est-ce que vous allumez la chandelle ou la lampe?
I light neither,	Je n' allume ni l' une ni l' autre,
We light both,	Nous allumons l' une et l' autre.

Do you beat that dog? I beat him. Does the countryman beat his horse? He does not beat him. What do those boys beat? They beat the ugly dog. Do you take what I give you? I take it. What do those scholars take? They take their slates and their books. Why do you take your hats? We take them because we are going home. What does that child learn? He learns to read and write. (*See Less.* 33, *Rem.* 3.) What do the sons of the countryman learn? They learn to make butter and cheese. What do you learn? I learn to read, write, and speak the French language. What does the son

of the tailor learn? He learns to make coats and to sell them. What do I learn? You learn the Latin and the Greek. What do those workmen sell? They sell their tools. Do you sell your Spanish books? No, sir; I sell the English ones. Do you sell the Italian and the German ones? We sell neither.

Do you recognize that gentleman? I recognize him. Does he recognize you? He does not recognize me. Do dogs (*See Less.* 20, *Rem.* 4,) recognize their masters? They recognize them. Do you recognize that horse? We recognize him. Does the workman recognize his tools? He recognizes them. Does that merchant sell much? He does not sell much. Has he some profit? He has neither profit nor credit. Has the grocer credit? He has. Have you my (*See Less.* 34, *Rem.* 1.) slate? I have it not. Have you my brother's? I have not your brother's. Whose have you? I have no one's (*celle de personne.*) Do you wish for a lamp? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for this one or that one? I wish for neither. Whose do you wish for? I wish for that which (*See Less.* 21, *Rem.* 3,) is on the table. Do you wish for the one which I have? I do not wish for that which you have; I wish for the one which is here. Whose does your mother wish for? She wishes for the maid's. Whose does your sister wish for? She wishes for hers.

Whose horse have you? I have nobody's. Has not your brother somebody's? No, sir; he has nobody's. Whose tools has that workman? He has no tools. Has he somebody's? He has nobody's. Where do the servants wash the linen? They wash it at the brook, and dry it in the sun. Is not that linen wet? It is wet; but the maid dries it before the fire. Is not the wind in the east? It is not in the east. Is it in the north or in the south? It is neither in the north nor in the south; it is in the west. Do you come from the east or from the west? I come from the west. What is that? This is linen and that is cotton. Why do you put it before the fire? I put it before the fire because it is wet. Has the musician judgment? He has neither wit nor judgment. Has he neither money nor credit? He has neither.

36. TRENTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

PRESENT PERFECT, OR PAST INDEFINITE.

To comprehend,	*Comprendre,* (va. like *prendre. Less.* 35.)
TO BELIEVE,	CROIRE, (INFINITIVE,)
Je crois, tu crois, il croit,	*nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient,*
I believe, thou believest, he believes,	we believe, you believe, they believe,
To have the appearance (of) to look,	*Avoir l' air (de,)*
You look in good humor,	Vous avez l' air de *bonne humeur*,
Several, many,	*Plusieurs,*
Will it rain? It will rain,	*Pleuvra-t-il?* Il pleuvra,
Your *aunt,*	Votre *tante,*
Your aunt looks in ill-humor,	Votre tante a l' air de *mauvaise humeur*,
That *history, story.* A *kingdom,*	Cette *histoire.* Un *royaume,*
The *taste,*	Le *goût,* (*de* before a noun,)
How does this cake taste?	Quel goût ce gâteau a-t-il?
It tastes good. It tastes bad,	Il a bon goût. Il a mauvais goût,
It tastes of pepper. The *minister,*	Il a goût de poivre. Le *ministre,*
The king's minister has taste,	Le ministre du roi a du goût,
The *power,*	Le *pouvoir,*
Lively, quick,	*Vif,* (masculine,) *vive,* (feminine,)
Had,	*Eu,* past participle of *avoir,*
Been,	*Été,* past participle of *être.*

REMARK 1. In French, as in English, the past participle joined to the present tense of the verb *avoir* forms a past tense, called the PRESENT PERFECT, or PAST INDEFINITE. This tense often supplies the place of the imperfect in English; that is, it is often employed when *have* is not used in the corresponding English.

INFINITIVE.	INDICATIVE, PAST INDEFINITE.	
AVOIR, *to have,*	*J' ai eu,*	*Nous avons eu,*
	I have had, or I had,	We have had, or we had,
	Tu as eu,	*Vous avez eu,*
	Thou hast had, or thou hadst,	You have had, or you had,
	Il a eu,	*Ils ont eu,*
	He has had, or he had,	They have had, or they had.
ÊTRE, *to be,*	*J' ai été,*	*Nous avons été,*
	I have been, or I was,	We have been, or we were,
	Tu as été,	*Vous avez été,*
	Thou hast been, or thou wast,	You have been, or you were,
	Il a été,	*Ils ont été,*
	He has been, or he was,	They have been, or they were,

Have you had my inkstand?	Avez-vous eu mon encrier?
I have had it.	Je l' ai eu.

Remark 2. In the order of arrangement, the objective pronouns come before the auxiliary in compound tenses; the negation *pas* or *point*, and subjective pronouns occupy the same place as in English.

We have not had your horse,	Nous n' avons pas eu votre cheval,
Did they not have him?	Ne l' ont-ils pas eu?
They did not have him,	Ils ne l' ont pas eu,
Have you not been sick?	N' avez-vous pas été malade?
I have not been sick,	Je n' ai pas été malade,
Your aunt has been sick; have not her daughters been sick also?	Votre tante a été malade; ses filles n' ont-elles pas été malades aussi?
They have been sick,	Elles ont été malades,
Do you comprehend all that history?	Comprenez-vous toute cette histoire?
I comprehend it, but I do not believe it,	Je la comprends, mais je ne la crois pas,
Europe comprehends several kingdoms,	L' Europe comprend plusieurs royaumes,
Has the minister power?	Le ministre a-t-il du pouvoir?
He has much,	Il en a beaucoup,
Do you believe that it will rain?	Croyez-vous qu' il pleuvra?
I believe that it will rain,	Je crois qu' il pleuvra.

Do you comprehend all that you read? I comprehend it. Do the children comprehend all that you say to them? They comprehend it and they believe it. Do you comprehend what you study? We comprehend it perfectly. Does the child comprehend it? He does not comprehend it. Does the minister believe all that you tell him? He believes it all. Why does that boy look in ill-humor? He looks in ill-humor because he does not comprehend what he studies. Does not your aunt look in good humor? She looks in good humor. Does your aunt believe all that history? She believes it. Do you believe it? We believe it. How many kingdoms does Europe comprehend? It comprehends many kingdoms. Does not that lively child look in good humor? He looks in good humor. Is that horse lively? He is lively and gentle (*doux.*)

Have you had my lamp? No, sir; we have not had your lamp; we have had your candle. Did those children have my slate? They had your slate and your inkstand. Has that merchant had much profit? He has had neither (*il n' a eu ni,*) profit nor credit. Hast thou had my Latin book? I have not had it. Have you been sick? I have been sick; and my aunt has been sick also. Have your brothers been at home this morning? They have been there, and

my sister has been there also. Do you like to read history? I like to read the history of many kingdoms. Do the kings of Europe have much power? They have much power. How many do ten times eleven make? Ten times eleven make a hundred and ten. How many do twelve less four make? Twelve less four make eight. How many do eighteen less five make? Eighteen less five mak thirteen. How many do twenty less six make? Twenty less si make fourteen.

What do you mend? I mend my chair. What do those shoe-makers mend? They mend my shoes. Does every body know the name of the general? Every body knows his name. Do you always put your umbrella in that place? I often put it there. Will you go any where to-morrow? I shall not go any where, (*nulle part;*) I shall be at home. Will that old lady go any where? She will not go any where. Where will those travelers go? They will go every where. Where will you go next month? We shall go no where. Will those sailors go every where? They will go every where. Is not this world beautiful? It is very beautiful. Do you stay in the city to-day? We stay here. Does your friend remain here also? No, sir; he will go to the country to-day.

37. TRENTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

AGREEMENT OF PAST PARTICIPLES, ETC.

My *grandfather*. My *grandmother*,	Mon *grand-père*. Ma *grand' mère*,
His *father-in-law*, *step-father*,	Son *beau-père*,
His *mother-in-law*, *step-mother*,	Sa *belle-mère*,
Her *brother-in-law*,	Son *beau-frère*,
Her *sister-in-law*,	Sa *belle-sœur*,
Your *son-in-law*,	Votre *gendre*, or *beau-fils*,
Your *step-son*. His *daughter-in-law*,	Votre *beau-fils*. Sa *belle-fille*,
Her *grandson*. Her *granddaughter*,	Son *petit-fils*. Sa *petite-fille*,
Seen,	*Vu*, (past participle of *voir*,)
Heard, *understood*,	*Entendu*, (past participle of *entendre*,)
A *cravat*,	Une *cravate*,
The *news*,	La *nouvelle*, les *nouvelles*,

An *apple*. A *peach*,	Une *pomme*. Une *pêche*,
Wise, *discreet*. *Proud*,	*Sage*. *Fier*,
Did you hear that noise?	Avez-vous entendu ce bruit?
I did not hear it,	Je ne l'ai pas entendu.

RULE. The past participle, forming part of an active verb, agrees with the direct object of the verb, when that object precedes it, but when the object comes after the participle, it remains unchanged.

The feminine and the plural of participles are formed like those of adjectives.

Have you seen my mother-in-law?	Avez-vous vu ma belle-mère?
I have seen her,	Je l'ai vue.

In the former of these phrases *vu* does not agree, because the object *belle-mère* comes after it, in the latter it agrees because its object *la* precedes it. So in the following:

Has your father-in-law seen his grandsons?	Votre beau-père a-t-il *vu* ses petits-fils? (object follows,)
He has not seen them,	Il ne les a pas *vus*, (object precedes,)
Has he seen his granddaughters?	A-t-il *vu* ses petites-filles? (obj fol.)
He has seen them,	Il les a *vues*, (object precedes,)
Has your grandmother seen your brothers-in-law?	Votre grand'mère a-t-elle *vu* vos beaux-frères? (object follows,)
She has seen them,	Elle les a *vus*, (object precedes,)
Has your grandfather heard the news?	Votre grand-père a-t-il *entendu* la nouvelle?
He has heard it,	Il l'a *entendue*,
Have you heard the news?	Avez-vous *entendu* les nouvelles?
I have heard it,	Je les ai *entendues*,
Has your aunt seen her son-in-law?	Votre tante a-t-elle *vu* son gendre?
She has seen him,	Elle l'a vu,
Does your sister-in-law like peaches?	Votre belle-sœur aime-t-elle les pêches?
She likes peaches and apples,	Elle aime les pêches et les pommes.

REMARK. Changes in condition and feelings expressed by *make* in English, are expressed by *rendre* in French.

This bad weather makes me sad,	Ce mauvais temps me rend triste,
These sour apples make me sick,	Ces pommes aigres me rendent malade,
Misfortune makes us wise,	Le malheur nous rend sages,
Good fortune makes us proud,	Le bonheur nous rend fiers.

Have you seen my cravat? I have seen it. Has your uncle seen his step-sons? He has seen them. Has he seen his daughters-in-

law? He has not seen them. Who has had my lamp? Your father-in-law has had it. Have the children had my slate? No, sir; your mother-in-law had it. Has any one had my book? Yes, sir; your grandmother has had it. Has not his grandson had the workman's tools? He has had them. Has not the master's granddaughter had our pens? She has not had them; your brother-in-law had them. Has your grandfather heard the news? He has heard all the news. Have you seen my sister-in-law? I have seen her. Has the minister a son-in-law? He has a son-in-law and a daughter-in-law. How many grandsons has your grandfather? He has four grandsons and six granddaughters. Where is your aunt? She is at her step-son's.

How many cravats do you wish to buy? I wish to buy six cravats and a little fine thread. Do you confide your secret to me? I confide it to thee. Does the general confide his secret to his son-in-law? He confides it to him. What does the gardener give you? He gives me some apples and some peaches. Have you no apples? I have apples, but I have no peaches. Do you not like peaches? Yes, sir; I like peaches and apples, but they frequently make me sick. Does not misfortune make men wise? Misfortune sometimes makes men wise, and good fortune sometimes makes them proud. Of what do you speak? I speak of the good fortune of that proud man. Do you admire the sister-in-law of that officer? I admire her much, and I admire his daughter-in-law also. Do you know of what (*ce dont*) we are speaking? I know that of which you are speaking and that of which your brother-in-law is speaking also.

Who has care (*a soin*) of those children? That old lady has care of them. Does your grandfather leave his granddaughter at Paris (*à Paris?*) He leaves her there. Do you stay here to-day? No, sir; I depart forthwith. Does your brother stay here? No, sir; he departs also. Why do you take off your hat? I take it off to that lady. Do you admire her? I admire her because she is beautiful; her mouth is pretty, and her hands very white. Why is your aunt afraid? She is afraid because she hears the claps of thunder. Have you seen the nests of those birds? Yes, sir; their nests are in the hole of that tree. Where is your grandmother? She is at her son-in-law's. Do you leave those children all alone? I leave them all alone.

38. TRENTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, &C.

To undertake,	*Entreprendre*, (varied as *prendre* Lesson 35.)
TO FOLLOW,	SUIVRE, (INFINITIVE.)
Je suis, tu suis, il suit,	*nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent,*
I follow, thou followest, he follows,	we follow, you follow, they follow.
To live,	*Vivre*, (varied as *suivre*,)
Wherewith to live. That *work,*	De quoi vivre. Cet *ouvrage,*
A *journey. Without,*	Un *voyage. Sans,*
The *expense, expenses, cost,*	La *dépense*, les *dépenses*, sometimes *dépens*, in the plural,
Another, others. Good,	*Autrui.* Le *bien,*
Evil. Health,	Le *mal.* La *santé,*
To have a pain. The *neck,*	*Avoir mal.* Le *cou,*
The *face. Swollen, swelled,*	Le *visage. Enflé,*
Precious, valuable,	*Précieux*, (m.) *précieuse*, (f.)
A long time,	*Longtemps,*
The *street, from street to street,*	La *rue*, *de rue en rue,*
To desire,	*Désirer.*
What do you undertake?	Qu' est-ce que vous entreprenez?
I undertake a great work,	J' entreprends un grand ouvrage,
The traveler undertakes a long journey,	Le voyageur entreprend un long voyage,
That man follows me from street to street,	Cet homme me suit de rue en rue,
These birds live a long time,	Ces oiseaux vivent longtemps,
He lives at the expense of others,	Il vit aux dépens d' autrui,
He lives only on bread,	Il ne vit que de pain.

REMARK 1. *Autrui* is never used without a preposition.

That man wishes to do good to others,	Cet homme veut faire du bien à autrui,
He has not wherewith to live,	Il n' a pas de quoi vivre,
Do you go out without an umbrella?	Sortez-vous sans parapluie?

REMARK 2. *Sans* is hardly ever followed by the indefinite article.

Without a hat, without a coat,	Sans chapeau, sans habit,
Without any money,	Sans argent,
Does that man do you good?	Cet homme vous fait-il du bien?
No, sir; he does me harm (evil,)	Non, M.; il me fait du mal,
What is the matter with you?	Qu' avez-vous?

I have a pain in the neck,	J' ai mal au cou,
Have you a pain in the foot?	Avez-vous mal au pied?
No, sir; I have a pain in the arm,	Non, M.; j' ai mal au bras,
Your eye is swollen, have you not a pain in it?	Vous avez l' œil enflé, n' y avez-vous pas mal?
I have a pain in it,	J' y ai mal,
That child's face is dirty,	Cet enfant a le visage sale,
Health is a very precious good,	La santé est un bien très-précieux,
I desire to do good to others,	Je désire faire du bien à autrui, (or) aux autres.

Do you undertake something great? Yes, sir; I undertake a great work. Do you undertake it alone? I do not undertake it alone. Does your father-in-law undertake the same work? He undertakes it. Do you undertake that work without money? We do not undertake it without money. What do those travelers undertake? They undertake a long journey. Do you desire to follow them in that journey? I do not desire to follow them. Why do you follow that man? I follow him because I desire to speak to him. Does not that traveler follow you everywhere? Yes, sir; he follows me from city to city. Do you not follow us from street to street? We do not follow you. Whom do those servants follow? They follow their master. Do birds always live in the air? Many birds live sometimes in the air, and sometimes in the water. Do you live with your friends? I live with them. Do you live at the expense of others? I do not live at the expense of others. Does that poor man live only on bread and water? He lives only on bread and (*de*) water. Does any one wish to do evil? No one wishes to do evil. Do you always take care (have care) of your health? I always take care of it.

Is not your neck swollen? It is swollen, and I have a pain in it. Is not that man's face red? His face is red because he drinks too much wine. Are you in good health? I am in good health. Do you take much care (*bien soin*) of your health? I take much care of it, because it is a good very precious. Do those animals live a long time? They live a long time. Do you desire to live a long time? I desire to live a long time, and to do much good. What do you give to that blind man? I give him wherewith to live. Do you choose the square inkstands or the round ones? I choose the square ones.

Is the one which you have square or round? It is round. Do you like salt beef or fresh? I like the salt. Is that salt beef fat or lean? It is fat. Do you like the fat or the lean? I like both. Do you see the hole in your coat? I see it.

Is not that apple bitter? No, sir; the apple is not bitter; but this peach is very bitter. Is not this road wide? It is very wide and handsome. Where does that road lead (*mène?*) That road leads to the city, and this one to the country. Has not your brother-in-law a high forehead (*le front haut?*) He has a high forehead and black eyes. Is not his hair thick? It is very thick. What have you in your drawer? I have nothing there but some pieces of paper. What has your cousin in her drawer? She has some pieces of cake and some pieces of fruit in it. Has your father-in-law a wide forehead? Yes, sir; and he has blue eyes. What is the matter with him? He has a pain in his arm and in his foot. Is he bald? He is bald. Do you see that thick storm? I see it.

39. TRENTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

PAST PARTICIPLE OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION, ETC.

One, they, people,	*On.*

REMARK 1. *On* is used when no particular antecedent is referred to.

What do they say in your village?	Que dit-on dans votre village?
They say that the president is coming here,	On dit que le président vient ici,
One's self, itself,	*Soi,*
Each one, every one,	*Chacun,*
For, in order to. For one's self,	*Pour.* Pour soi,
The *head.* The *body,*	La *tête.* Le *corps,*
The *lake.* The *river,*	Le *lac.* La *rivière,*
A *boat,*	Un *bateau,*
A *steamboat,*	Un *bateau à vapeur,*
New, novel,	*Nouveau, nouvel* before a vowel or silent *h.*

Neuf means *newly made,* or *not used; nouveau* means *new in origin, not before appearing; nouvelle,* (f.)

A *new book*, a *new work*,	Un *nouveau livre*, un *nouvel ouvrage*,
Dry,	*Sec*, (m.) *sèche*, (f.)
Low,	*Bas*, (m.) *basse*, (f.)
His *duty*. *Fast*,	Son *dévoir*. *Vite*.

RULE. All verbs of the FIRST CONJUGATION, (infinitive in *er*,) form the *past participle* by dropping the final *r* of the infinitive and making the *e* acute. Thus:

INFINITIVE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.	INFINITIVE.	PAST PARTICIPLE
Casser,	*cassé*,	Toucher,	*touché*,
To break,	*broken*,	To touch,	*touched*,
Chercher	*cherché*,	Donner,	*donné*,
To seek,	*sought*,	To give,	*given*,
Acheter	*acheté*,	Parler,	*parlé*,
To buy,	*bought*,	To speak,	*spoken*.

(It will not be deemed necessary to give hereafter the past participles of this conjugation.)

Who has broken my slate?	Qui est-ce qui a cassé mon ardoise?
The countryman's grandson broke it,	Le petit-fils du paysan l' a cassée,
Have you looked for your pens?	Avez-vous cherché vos plumes?
I have looked for them,	Je les ai cherchées,
Has your mother-in-law bought those lamps?	Votre belle-mère a-t-elle acheté ces lampes?
She has bought them,	Elle les a achetées,
Did her grand-children touch those papers?	Ses petits-fils ont-ils touché ces papiers?
They did touch them,	Il les ont touchés.

REMARK 2. Pronouns referring to masculine and feminine nouns collectively must be plural and masculine.

Did your brother and sister give you some apples?	Votre frère et votre sœur vous ont-ils donné des pommes?
They gave me some,	Ils m' en ont donné.

REMARK 3. Past participles are not varied to agree with *en*, it being an indirect object.

Did they give you no peaches?	Ne vous ont-ils point donné de pêches?
They did not give me any,	Ils ne m' en ont point donné,
Have you spoken to your mother-in-law?	Avez-vous parlé à votre belle-mère?
I have spoken to her,	Je lui ai parlé,
What do they make in your village?	Que fait-on dans votre village?
They make hats there,	On y fait des chapeaux,
He believes all that one tells him.	Il croit tout ce qu'on lui dit.

REMARK 4. *L' on* is often used for euphony in preference to *on*, after *et*, *ou*, *où*, *que*, *qui*, *quoi*, *si*, and some others, except when it is immediately followed by *le*, *la*, *les*, *un*, or other word beginning with *l*, and when in an interrogation it is preceded by *-t-*.

I know the country where they find gold,	Je sais le pays où l' on trouve de l' or,
Does each one live for himself?	Est-ce que chacun vit pour soi?
No one lives for himself,	Personne ne vit pour soi,
Do you go in a boat?	Est-ce que vous allez en bateau?
I go in a steamboat,	Je vais en bateau à vapeur,
He lives on dry bread,	Il vit de pain sec,
His mouth is dry,	Il a la bouche sèche,
I write very fast,	J' écris bien vite.

What do they do at your house? They read and study much at our house. Does one live only for himself? No, sir; one lives for himself, and also for all the world. What is the matter with you? I have a pain in the head. Do you often have a pain in the head? I have not a pain there often. Is not that child's body small? His body is small and his head large. When will you go on the lake? I shall go there the day after to-morrow. Will you not go on the river? No, sir; I shall go on the lake. Will you go in a boat on the lake? I shall go in a steamboat. When will your father-in-law go on the river? He will go on the river to-day and on the lake to-morrow. Will he go in a boat on the river? He will go in a steamboat. Have you seen the doctor's new work? I have not seen it. Have you a new book? Yes, sir; I have two. What has your father-in-law new? He has some new fruit.

Is not that tree all dry? It is dry and dead. Are the streets dry? They are very dry. Is the river high or low? It is very low. Is not the bench low? The bench is low and this chair is low also. Do you always do your duty? I do it commonly (*ordinairement.*) Have you ever forgotten your duties? I have forgotten them sometimes. Does each one sometimes forget his duties? Each one sometimes forgets them. Is not that horse's body too big? His body is too big and his head too small. Do you write fast? I write fast sometimes. Do you write well when you write fast? No, sir; I write badly when I write fast. Is your brother-in-law's hair black? No, sir; he has none; he is bald. How many sons-in-law has your grandfather? He has five sons-in-law. How many grandsons has he? He

has six grandsons and eight granddaughters. Have you some cool water? I have some cool water and some cool wine.

Your mouth looks swollen, have you not a pain in it? I have a pain in it. What languages do you learn? I learn the Latin and the Greek languages. Have you my sister's books? I have had them, but I have given them to her. Have you given them all to her? I have given them all to her. Is not that man happy? No, miss; he is very unhappy (*malheureux.*) Why is he unhappy? He is wicked, and the wicked are always unhappy. Is his wife unhappy? She is unhappy also. Does captain John wait the return of his son-in-law? He waits his return. Do you wait his return? No, madam; we wait the return of the clerks. What noise do you hear? I hear the noise of the wind, and the noise of the dogs.

40. QUARANTIÈME LEÇON.

INFINITIVE WITH DE, ETC.

REMARK 1. We have seen (Less. 28,) that some French verbs require *à* before a following infinitive, and that others require no preposition. There are some verbs and phrases also which require *de*. *Dire*, *entreprendre*, and *oublier*, already given, require *de* before a following infinitive. Such verbs will be marked when introduced in the subsequent lessons with the abbreviation (*de* bef. inf.)

He tells me to do that,	Il me dit *de* faire cela,
He learns to do that,	Il apprend *à* faire cela,
He undertakes to do that work,	Il entreprend *de* faire cet ouvrage,
He knows how to do that work,	Il sait faire cet ouvrage,
He forgets to do that. He likes to do that,	Il oublie *de* faire cela. Il aime *à* faire cela.

REMARK 2. *That*, limiting a noun or preceding a relative, is *ce*, equivalent to *the one* is *celui* or *celle*, referring to a present object or proposition just stated, is *cela.*

He does *that* which you tell him,	Il fait *ce* que vous lui dites,
He has broken *that bottle*,	Il a cassé *cette bouteille*,
He has broken *that* (the one) which you gave him,	Il a cassé *celle* que vous lui avez donnée,
He is poor; do you doubt of that?	Il est pauvre; doutez-vous de cela?
The *bottle*. That *drunkard*,	La *bouteille*. Cet *ivrogne*,
Intoxicated, *tipsy*, *drunk*,	*Ivre*,
A *benefit*, *benefaction*,	Un *bienfait*,
A *recompense*, *reward*,	Une *récompense*,
A *pleasure*, *favor*. *To work*, *to labor*,	Un *plaisir*. *Travailler*,

An *accident*. The *juice, gravy*,	Un *accident*. Le *jus*,
The *ink*. *Gay*,	L' *encre*. (fem.) *Gai*,
False, counterfeit. *Soon*,	*Faux*, (m.) *fausse*, (f.) *Bientôt*,
With, with his friend,	*Avec*, avec son ami,
Better, better than,	*Mieux*, mieux que,
To prefer, to like better,	*Aimer mieux*,
Sufficient, (adv.) *More*, more than,	*Assez, suffisamment*. *Plus*, plus que,
So much, so much that,	*Tant*, tant que,
As much, as much as,	*Autant*, autant que.

Remark 3. Adverbs of quantity are followed by *de* without the article before the following noun, except *bien*, which is followed by *de* with the article.

Much money, many friends,	{ Beaucoup d' argent, beaucoup d' amis, { Bien de l' argent, bien des amis,
Many *people*,	Bien du *monde*, beaucoup de *monde*.
As much wine as water,	Autant de vin que d' eau,
As much as we,	Autant que nous,
He drinks more wine than water,	Il boit plus de vin que d' eau,
More than I, more than he,	Plus que moi, plus que lui,
More than they, more than she,	Plus qu' eux, (or elles,) plus qu'elle,
Less money than credit,	Moins d' argent que de crédit,
He has so much money that one does not wish to count it,	Il a tant d' argent qu' on ne le veut pas compter.

Remark 4. When the personal pronoun is the object of an infinitive depending on a preceding verb, it may be placed either before the infinitive or before the other verb. It is more common, however, to put it immediately before the infinitive.

I wish to do it,	Je le veux faire; or, je veux le faire,
I do not wish to look for it,	Je ne le veux pas chercher; or, je ne veux pas le chercher,
We have sufficient ink,	Nous avons assez d' encre,
That drunkard's face is red,	Cet ivrogne a le visage rouge,
He looks tipsy,	Il a l' air ivre,
People love to speak of themselves,	On aime à parler de soi.

Soi used of persons must refer only to a vague antecedent, as, *on*, *chacun*, etc., except when perspicuity requires.

A benefaction carries with it its reward,	Un bienfait porte sa récompense avec soi,
When that young man does a favor to his father, he works for himself,	Quand ce jeune homme fait un plaisir à son père, il travaille pour soi.

In these two instances the antecedents of *soi* are definite. But in the former the reference is not to a person; and in the latter, the use of *soi* instead of *lui* avoids an ambiguity.

That accident is very unhappy,	Cet accident est très-malheureux,
That peach is full of juice,	Cette pêche est pleine de jus,

That young lady looks gay,	Cette demoiselle a l' air gai,
That bank-bill looks counterfeit,	Ce billet de banque a l' air faux,
He sets out soon,	Il part bientôt,
Do you like tea better than coffee?	Aimez-vous mieux le thé que le café?
I like coffee better than tea,	J' aime mieux le café que le thé.

Meilleur is an adjective and qualifies some noun; *mieux* is an adverb and generally qualifies some verb.

This man is better than that one,	Cet homme-ci est meilleur que celui-là,
This man does better than that one,	Cet homme-ci fait mieux que celui-là,
Does this one do less than that?	Celui-ci fait-il moins que celui-là?
This one does quite as much as that,	Celui-ci fait tout autant que celui-là,
Have you as much gravy as beef?	Avez-vous autant de jus que de bœuf?
I have more of the latter than of the former,	J' ai plus de celui-ci que de celui-là.

With what do you fill that bottle? I fill it with ink. With what does that drunkard fill his bottle? He fills it with wine. That drunkard looks tipsy; is he not tipsy? He is tipsy. Do you like to confer (*répandre*) benefits? I like to confer benefits and I like to receive them also. Do you confer benefits without a recompense? No, sir; a benefit always carries its recompense with it. Does not the minister's son-in-law love pleasure? Yes, sir; he loves pleasure too much. Do those who love pleasure labor much? They do not labor much. Do you work much? I work much. Does not that workman work fast? He works very fast. Do not those who do great things, (*choses*) labor much? They labor much; all great men have labored much. Do you wish for more gravy on your roast meat? Yes, sir; if you please.

Have you some ink? Yes, sir; I have a bottle full. Is not the minister a gay man? He is not gay. Why does he look gay? Because he has heard good news. Does he know the sad accident? He knows it. Is that history false? It is false. Will you go home soon? I shall go home next week. Do you like the Greek language better than the Latin? No, sir; I like the Latin language quite (*tout*) as much as the Greek. Do you wish for more gravy? No, madam; I have sufficient. Have you found much evil in the world? I have found much evil and much good in the world. Have you found more evil than good in it? I have found in it less evil than good. Will

you be at my house soon? I will be there soon with my friend. Have you seen many people (*monde*) this morning? I have seen so many that I did not count them.

Has that minister sufficient power? He has sufficient. Do you know what makes so much noise? Some drunkards in the street make it. Do you hear the noise of the thunder? I hear the noise of the thunder and of the wind. Has the merchant more wit than honor? No, sir; he has as much honor as wit. Will you be at my house the day after to-morrow? No, sir; I shall not be there the day after to-morrow, but I will be there next week, on (*à*) my return from the city. Wilt thou have thy money next week? No, sir; I shall have it next month. Has the workman found his tools? He has found them (*See Less.* 37, *Rule.*) Have you bought that blue ink? I have bought it. Did the maid-servant break those bottles? She did not break them, that child broke them by (*par*) accident. Did you find your pencils on the table or under it? We found them on it.

41. QUARANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, PRONOUNS, ETC.

TO BE ABLE, CAN,			POUVOIR, (IRREGULAR.)		
Je peux or *puis*,*	*tu peux*,	*il peut*,	*nous pouvons*,	*vous pouvez*,	*ils peuvent*,
I can,	thou canst,	he can,	we can,	you can,	they can,

A *thing*, all things,	Une *chose*, toutes choses,
The *back*. The *heart*,	Le *dos*. Le *cœur*,
The *knee*. The *finger*,	Le *genou*, pl. *genoux*. Le *doigt*.
The *character*, *disposition*. *God*,	Le *caractère*. *Dieu*,
An *old man*. The *bottom*,	Un *vieillard*. Le *fond*,
So, *so much*,	*Si*,
Discontented, *displeased*,	*Mécontent*,
Lame, a lame man. *Healthy*,	*Boiteux*, un boiteux. *Sain*,
Lazy, so lazy. *Useful*,	*Paresseux*, si paresseux. *Utile*,
Right, *straight*. *Left*,	*Droit*. *Gauche*,
Curved, *bent*,	*Courbé*.

* *Puis* is more used than *peux*, The Freneh never say *peux-je?* but *puis-je?*

REMARK 1. In designating sovereigns, where the English employ the *ordinal numbers*, the French employ the *cardinal*, with the exception of the first and sometimes the second, as;

John the First,	*Jean premier,*
William the Second,	*Guillaume deux*, or *second,*
Lewis the Third,	*Louis trois,*
George the Fourth,	*George quatre,*
Philip the Fifth. Peter the Sixth,	*Philippe cinq. Pierre six,*
Charles the Twelfth,	*Charles douze,*
Can I be useful to you?	Puis-je vous être utile?
God can do all things,	Dieu peut faire toutes choses,
Can you sleep well when you are cold?	Pouvez-vous bien dormir quand vous avez froid?
We can not sleep well when we are cold,	Nous ne pouvons pas bien dormir quand nous avons froid,
Those old men can not do that work,	Ces vieillards ne peuvent pas faire cet ouvrage,
That old man's back is bent,	Ce vieillard a le dos courbé,
God knows the hearts,	Dieu connaît les cœurs,
Why is that boy lame?	Pourquoi ce garçon est-il boiteux?
He is lame because his knee is sore,	Il est boiteux parce qu' il a mal au genou
His finger is sore,	Il a mal au doigt,
Is not your right hand sore?	N' avez-vous pas mal à la main droite?
No, sir; my left hand is sore,	Non, M.; j' ai mal à la main gauche,
They have not found the bottom of that lake,	On n' a pas trouvé le fond de ce lac.

REMARK 2. Some verbs, especially those of motion and mental direction, instead of taking the indirect object before the verb, as seen in *Less.* 18. take the pronoun with a preposition after the verb.

Is that child going to his father?	Cet enfant va-t-il à son père?
He is going to him,	Il va *à lui* (not *il lui va,*)
Do you often think of me?	Pensez-vous souvent *à moi?*
I often think of you,	J' y pense souvent,
Is he coming to me?	Vient-il *à moi?* (not *me vient-il?*)
He is not coming to you, he is going to them,	Il ne vient pas *à vous*, il va *à eux.*

REMARK 3. This construction is employed when more than one indirect objective pronoun (*y* and *en* excepted) belong to a verb, as also when the pronoun is emphatic.

Do you speak to him or to me?	Parlez-vous *à lui ou à moi?*
I speak neither to him nor to you; I speak to them,	Je ne parle ni *à lui* ni *à vous;* je parle *à eux.*

Can you study when you are very warm? I can not study well when I am very warm nor when I am very cold. Can those carpenters do their work to-day? They can not do it to-day. Do you admire the character of that old man? I admire his character much. What is the matter with that lame man? His right knee is sore. Is not his finger sore? No, sir; his left hand is sore. Is not your friend discontented? No, sir; he is rich and healthy and his heart is (*il a le cœur*) contented. Is the boat going to the bottom of the lake? It is going to the bottom. Does not God know all hearts? God knows all hearts and he can do all things. Is not that man's back very much bent? His back is bent and he is lame, because he is very old. Are you acquainted with that old man who is holding a child on his knees? Yes, sir; he is my grandfather. Do you not admire the disposition of that servant? No, sir; he is healthy and contented, but he is very lazy. Is he not useful to you? He is very useful to me. Why is your neighbor so discontented? She is so discontented because she is sick.

Is not this street very straight? This one is very straight, but that one is curved. What is the matter with you? I have a finger of the left hand sore. Is the maid-servant healthy? She is healthy but very lazy. Is nothing the matter with her? (*See Less.* 8.) She has a sore neck (*cou.*) Do you desire many friends? I desire many (of them,) for a good friend is a very precious thing. Do you translate German books? We translate German books and French books. What does your brother translate? He translates that Latin book. Do you translate more French than German? No, sir; I translate more German than French. Will you be in Boston this month? No, sir; I shall be there next month.

What do you say? I say that I am intimately acquainted with your brother. Does he know how to speak the French perfectly? He knows how to speak it perfectly. Are you acquainted with doctor Lewis? I am intimately acquainted with him. Do you put your hat on the table or under it? I put it neither on it nor under it; I put it on the bench. Has the merchant more profit than credit? He has neither profit nor credit. Do you like to study history? No, sir; I like to read history, but I do not like to study it.

How many kingdoms does Europe comprehend? It comprehends several large kingdoms and several small ones.

42. QUARANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, PRONOUNS, ETC.

To cause. To sing,	*Causer. Chanter,*
A *song.* The *handle,*	Une *chanson.* Le *manche,*
A *cent,*	Un *sou,*
A *dollar,*	Un *dollar*, une *piastre*, une *gourde,*
A *picture.* That *American,*	Un *tableau.* Cet *Américain,*
Labor. Extraordinary,	Le *travail. Extraordinaire,*
Strange. On credit,	*Étrange. À crédit,*
For cash,	*Comptant, au comptant, argent comptant,*
Against,	*Contre,*
Good will, liking, taste,	*Gré,* (masculine, used only in adverbial expressions like the following:)
Unwillingly, against one's liking,	Contre son gré,
To my taste, liking,	À mon gré,
To that American's taste,	Au gré de cet Américain,
All the world, every body,	*Tout le monde,*
To every body's liking,	Au gré de tout le monde,
The *day.* The *night,*	Le *jour.* La *nuit,*
The *past* night. The *past* month,	La nuit *passée.* Le mois *passe,*
Who causes that,	Qui est-ce qui cause cela? or, qui cause cela?
What causes that?	Qu' est-ce qui cause cela?
The English woman, the French woman,	L' Anglaise, la Française,
The Italian woman, the German woman,	L' Italienne, l' Allemande,
She sung the songs,	Elle a chanté les chansons,
Did you buy those pictures for cash?	Avez-vous acheté ces tableaux comptant?
No, sir; I bought them on credit,	Non, M.; je les ai achetés à crédit,
How many cents make a dollar?	Combien de sous font une piastre?
A hundred cents make a dollar,	Cent sous font une piastre,
That scholar loves labor,	Cet écolier aime le travail,
She is an extraordinary woman,	C' est une femme extraordinaire.

REMARK 1. *Ce* is usually to be employed instead of *il, elle, ils, elles* for the subject of a proposition of which the predicate is not an adjective merely with the verb.

He is a very strange man,	C' est un homme bien étrange,
He is unhappy,	Il est malheureux,
He is a good physician,	C' est un bon médecin,
How many dollars have you?	Combien de dollars avez-vous ?
I have many,	J' en ai beaucoup,
Do you neither give nor lend them?	Ne les donnez-vous ni ne les prêtez-vous
I neither give nor lend them,	Je ne les donne ni ne les prête.

REMARK 2. In such sentences the *ne* is repeated before every verb.

He neither reads, nor writes, nor studies,	Il ne lit ni n' écrit, ni n' étudie,
He speaks the French,	Il parle le français,* or français,
He knows how to speak the French,	Il sait parler le français, or français,
He is speaking in French,	Il parle français.

REMARK 3. *Mieux* followed by two infinitives takes no preposition before the former, but requires *de* before the latter, as:

He likes better to read than to think, and he likes better to think than to write,	Il aime mieux lire que de penser, et il aime mieux penser que d' écrire.

What caused so much noise at your house last night? The wind caused it. Do you often sing? I sing sometimes but not often. Do those French women sing some good songs? They sing some good ones. Does the English woman sing as many songs as the Italian woman? No, madam; the Italian woman sings more songs than the English woman and more than the German woman. Who has broken the handle of my penknife? Those children broke the handle of your penknife, and the handle of this hammer. Did you give some cents to that poor blind man? I gave him two dollars and twenty-five cents. Has the American bought those pictures? No, sir; the American has not bought them; that old man has bought them. How many pictures has he bought? He has bought four. Is not that servant lazy? No, madam; she loves labor, and she has much labor to do (*à faire.*)

That rich man likes better to labor than do nothing; is not that extraordinary? That is not extraordinary. Have they shown you something strange? They have shown me something very strange. Do you buy on credit or for cash? I sometimes buy on credit and

* *Parler le français* means to speak the French language: *parler français* means *to speak in French*, and also *to speak the French*

sometimes for cash. Does that French woman sing to your taste? She sings to my taste. Do those German women sing unwillingly (against their liking?) How many days make a week? Seven days make a week. Where did you go last night? I went to the American's. Are not the days longer than the nights? The days are longer than the nights this month. Do you not sing as well as the Frenchman? No, madam; he sings better than I.

How does that fruit taste? (*See Less.* 36.) It *tastes sour.* Has Lewis the Eighteenth power? He has not power. Has Philip the Fourth power? He has not. Is your horse lively? He is very lively. Are you acquainted with that lively child? Yes, sir; he is my little brother. Do you believe that it will rain this evening? No, sir; it will not rain this evening; but I believe that it will rain to-morrow. Is not doctor Lewis wise? Yes, sir; he has had much misfortune and he is wise, and Philip the Fourth has had much good fortune and he is proud. Does good fortune make us proud? Good fortune often makes us proud, and misfortune often makes us wise. Will it rain soon? It will rain soon. Have you bought some white cravats? I have bought some white ones. Do those scholars like to study? No, sir; they like to do nothing better than to study.

43. QUARANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

TO OPEN,			OUVRIR, (IRREGULAR, VARIED LIKE THE FIRST CONJUGATION.)		
J' ouvre,	*tu ouvres,*	*il ouvre,*	*nous ouvrons,*	*vous ouvrez,*	*ils ouvrent*
I open,	thou openest,	he opens,	we open,	you open,	they open.

Every body knows him. *To shut,*

Tout le monde le connaît. *Fermer,*

To extinguish,

Éteindre, (irregular varied like *plaindre. Less.* 25.)

The *light.* The *moon,*

La *lumière.* La *lune,*

A *star.* *Fixed,*

Une *étoile.* *Fixe,*

To borrow. The *door,*

Emprunter. La *porte,*

The *window.* A *room, chamber,*

La *fenêtre,* la *croisée.* Une *chambre,*

A *husband,*

Un *mari,*

A *spouse*,	Un *époux*, (mas.,) une *épouse*, (fem.,)
A *niece*. A *cup*,	Une *nièce*. Une *tasse*,
A *saucer*. A *fork*,	Une *soucoupe*. Une *fourchette*,
A *spoon*. The *meat*, *viand*,	Une *cuiller*. La *viande*,
A *desire for*, *fancy for*,	Une *envie* (*de* before noun and before infinitive,)
Have you a fancy for my pen?	Avez-vous envie de ma plume?
I have a fancy for it,	J' en ai envie,
Have you a desire to go to New York?	Avez-vous envie d' aller à New-York?
I have a desire to go there,	J' ai envie d' y aller,
Why do you open the doors and windows of your room?	Pourquoi ouvrez-vous les portes et les fenêtres de votre chambre?
I open them because I am warm,	Je les ouvre parce que j' ai chaud,
Do you shut the doors and windows of your room when you go out?	Fermez-vous les portes et les fenêtres de votre chambre quand vous sortez?
I always shut them when I go out,	Je les ferme toujours quand je sors,
Why do you extinguish the fire?	Pourquoi éteignez-vous le feu?
I extinguish it because I have no need of it,	Je l' éteins parce que je n' en ai pas besoin,
Do the moon and the fixed stars borrow their light from the sun?	La lune et les étoiles fixes empruntent-elles leur lumière du soleil?
The fixed stars do not borrow their light,	Les étoiles fixes n' empruntent pas leur lumière,
Who is that man?	Qui est cet homme?
He is the husband of the general's niece,	C' est le mari de la nièce du général,
They are going each to his home,	Ils vont chacun chez soi,
Every one thinks much of himself,	Chacun pense beaucoup à soi,
Do you like mutton?	Aimez-vous le mouton?
I like it; it is a viand of good flavor,	Je l'aime; c' est une viande de bon goût.

What have you bought? I have bought some cups and saucers, (*See Less.* 20, *Rem.* 2.) Have you not bought some silver spoons? I have bought some spoons and some forks of silver. What is the American buying? He is buying some knives and forks for his spouse. Has he not bought some cups and saucers? He has bought some. Is your friend acquainted with that lady? Yes, sir; she is a sister of his spouse. Do you open the windows and the doors? I open them. Do you open the door of your room when you are warm? I open it when I am warm and I shut it when I am cold. Do you open the letters of your friend? We open them. Why do you shut the door? I shut it because I am cold. Do the servants shut the windows?

They shut them. Who extinguishes the lights? The children extinguish the lights and the servant extinguishes the fires.

Does the moon borrow her light from the sun? She borrows it from him. Do you sometimes borrow money? No, sir; I neither borrow nor lend money, (*See Less.* 42, *Rem.* 2.) Do you light or extinguish the candles? I neither light nor extinguish them. Does the husband of the general's niece borrow money? He borrows it often. Who is that young lady? She is a niece of the doctor's spouse. What has the husband of that French woman bought? He has bought some cups and saucers and some meat. Do the fixed stars borrow their light? They do not borrow it. Have you bought those white cravats? I have bought them. Have you heard the news? I have heard it; they say that the president is dead. Have you seen the spouse of that lady? I have seen him. Is he not proud? He is more proud than wise. What cravat did you buy? I bought the black cravat.

Do people (*on*) undertake any thing without money? They undertake nothing without money. Does the traveler undertake a long journey? He undertakes a long journey without money. Does that lazy man live at the expense of others (*autrui?*) He lives at the expense of his friends. Is not that man's neck swollen? His neck is swollen and his face red. Do the lazy live at the expense of others? They often live at the expense of others. Do you often go to Boston? Yes, sir; it is a beautiful journey and I undertake it often. Have you a sore neck? I have the neck and the face sore. Has that man wherewith to live? He has wherewith to live. Do those who are in good health live a long time? They live a long time. Is not health a precious thing? It is a very precious thing.

44. QUARANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, PARTICIPLES, ETC.

To promise,	*Promettre,* (irr. var. as *mettre, Less.* 26,)
To offer,	*Offrir,* (irr. varied as *ouvrir, Less.* 43,)

Promettre and *offrir* take *de* before the following infinitive:

A *partner*, *associate*. *Skillful*, *able*,	Un *associé*. *Habile*,
Studious,	*Studieux*, (masculine,) *studieuse*, (fem.)
To recite. A *gown*, *dress*,	*Réciter*. Une *robe*,
Some *silk*,	De la *soie*,
A *fault*, *error*, *mistake*,	Une *faute*, une *erreur*, une *méprise*,
Agreeable,	*Agréable*,
Yesterday. *Wet*, *damp*, *moist*,	*Hier*. *Mouillé*, *humide*,
Dark. *Moonlight*,	*Obscur*, *sombre*. *Clair de lune*,
The *rain*. *To walk*,	La *pluie*. *Marcher*,
Slippery,	*Glissant*,
Made, *done*,	*Fait*, (past participle of *faire*,)
Put,	*Mis*, (past participle of *mettre*.)

Remark 1. To express the condition of the atmosphere and weather, where the English employ the verb *to be*, the French use the verb *to make*, impersonally.

What weather is it? or, how is the weather?	*Quel temps fait-il?*
It is fine weather,	Il fait beau temps,
It is bad weather. It is warm,	Il fait mauvais temps. Il fait chaud,
It is cool. It is cold,	Il fait frais. Il fait froid,
Is it not dry?	Ne fait-il pas sec?
No, sir; it is wet. Is it dark?	Non, M.; il fait humide. Fait-il obscur?
No, sir; it is moonlight,	Non, M.; il fait clair de lune,
Is it good walking?	Fait-il bon marcher?
It is not good walking; it is slippery,	Il ne fait pas bon marcher; il fait glissant.
Is it day?	Fait-il jour?
It is not day, it is night,	Il ne fait pas jour; il fait nuit,
Is it windy?	Fait-il du vent?
It is windy and rainy,	Il fait du vent et de la pluie,
Has it been stormy?	A-t-il fait de l' orage?
It was stormy yesterday, but it is agreeable weather to-day,	Il a fait de l' orage hier, mais il fait un temps agréable aujourd' hui,
He promises his father to be studious,	Il promet à son père d' être studieux,
Do you promise it to me?	Me le promettez-vous?
I promise it to you,	Je vous le promets,
She offers to buy that silk gown,	Elle offre d' acheter cette robe de soie,
Do you offer some meat to that poor man?	Offrez-vous de la viande à ce pauvre homme?
I offer him some,	Je lui en offre,
He is a skillful man,	C' est un habile homme,
Where did your partner put the silver spoons?	Votre associé où a-t-il mis les cuillers d' argent?

He put them in the drawer.	Il les a mises (*Less.* 37, *Rule*,) dans le tiroir.

REMARK 2. The present participle used as a noun in English, is rendered in French by another expression, as follows:

Is studying much agreeable to you?	Vous est-il agréable d' étudier beaucoup?
Speaking too much is dangerous,	Il est dangereux de trop parler; or, trop parler est dangereux.

The former of these expressions is far preferable to the latter.

REMARK 3. *En* is the only preposition which may precede the present participle. The infinitive is generally used after the other prepositions.

Do you gain much by doing that?	Gagnez-vous beaucoup à faire cela?
Do you hope to become learned without studying?	Espérez-vous devenir savant sans étudier?
I have a fancy for learning French,	J' ai envie d' apprendre le français,
He recites his lesson without making one mistake,	Il récite sa leçon sans faire une faute.

Do you promise to come to see me? We promise to come to see you to-morrow. Do your associates promise to lend you some money? They promise to lend me a thousand dollars. Does your partner's niece promise to be studious? She promises to be very studious. Does she promise a silk gown to the maid-servant? She promises one to her. Does your partner offer to sell you his horse? He offers to sell him to me. What do your partners offer you? They offer me their money. What do you offer to sell? We offer to sell some cups and saucers, and some silver forks. Are you acquainted with the American? I am acquainted with him; he is a skillful man. Have you seen my partner? I have seen him; he is an able man and very agreeable. What does he promise to his studious niece? He promises her a new silk dress.

How is the weather? It is fine weather. Is it not cold? No, sir; it is neither cold nor warm. Is it not damp? No, sir; it was damp yesterday, but it is dry to-day. Was it not dark last night? It was not dark last night; it was moonlight. Is it day? It is day. Is it not windy? It is windy and rainy. What was the weather yesterday? It was rainy yesterday, but it was moonlight last night. Is it good walking? It is not good walking, for it is a little slippery. Does that child walk? He does not walk yet. Do you like to walk

when it is slippery? I do not like to walk when it is slippery. Where did the Italian woman put the cups and saucers? She put them in the other room on the table. Do you say your lesson well? I say it without making one mistake. Have you heard the news? I have heard it. What do your desire? I desire to make a journey in Europe.

Will you be long (*longtemps*) in this country? I shall be here long. What is the matter with that old man? His face is swollen. Is not your time precious to you? It is very precious to me. Has the master bought the ink for you or for me? He has bought it for himself, (*pour lui-même.*) Is not that child's head handsome? His head is handsome but too large for his body. Are you going on the river or on the lake? I am going in a steamboat on the lake. Is not that horse very large? His body is large, but his head is small. Do you desire to do your duty? Yes, sir; every one desires to do his duty. Do you always do your duty? I do not always do my duty, but I do it commonly. Is not the river low? It is very low.

45. QUARANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, PARTITIVE NOUNS, ETC.

To sleep,	*Dormir,* (irregular, varied like *sortir,*)
To refuse,	*Refuser,* (*de* before infinitive,)
To answer,	*Répondre,* (*à* before the noun,)
I will do, make,	*Je ferai,* (future of *faire,*)
A *tooth.* A *mile,*	Une *dent.* Un *mille,*
To go a mile. I shall go ten miles,	*Faire un mille.* Je ferai dix milles,
Nausea, sickness of the stomach,	*Mal de cœur,*
I have sickness of the stomach,	J' ai mal de cœur,
I am sick at the stomach,	J' ai mal au cœur.

Remark 1. *De* after *mal* is used, rather to express the name of an ailment, and *à* to denote the part affected.

He has the headache,	Il a mal de tête,
He has a pain in the head,	Il a mal à la tête,
I have the teethache,	J' ai mal de dents,

I have a pain in my teeeth,	J' ai mal aux dents,
The *thumb*. *To pain*,	Le *pouce*. *Faire mal*,
My thumb pains me,	Le pouce me fait mal,
My teeth pain me,	Les dents me font mal,
Sorrow, *grief*,	*Le chagrin*,
This *summer*. In summer,	Cet *été*. En été,
This *autumn*. In autumn,	Cet *automne*. En automne,
This *winter*. In winter,	Cet *hiver*. En hiver,
This *spring*. In the spring,	Ce *printemps*. Dans le printemps, au printemps,
The *appetite*. *On horseback*. *On foot*,	L' *appétit*. *À cheval*. *À pied*,
Do you sleep less in winter than in spring?	Dormez-vous moins en hiver que dans le printemps?
Yes, sir; and I sleep more in summer than in autumn,	Oui, M.; et je dors plus en été qu' en automne,
Do you answer that man?	Répondez-vous à cet homme?
I answer him,	Je lui réponds,
Do you answer his letter?	Répondez-vous à sa lettre?
I answer it,	J' y réponds, (*See Less.* 27, *Rem.* 1,)
Do you refuse to go to his house?	Refusez-vous d' aller chez lui?
I have refused to go there,	J' ai refusé d' y aller,
He has a good appetite,	Il a un bon appétit,
Will you go to the country on foot?	Irez-vous à la campagne à pied?
I shall go there on horseback,	J' irai à cheval, (*See Less.* 35, *Rem.* 1,)
He has recited his lesson without a mistake,	Il a récité sa leçon sans faute. (*See Less.* 38, *Rem.* 2.)

What do you refuse to sell? I refuse to sell my new book. Do you refuse to recite your lessons? We do not refuse to recite them. Do those studious scholars recite their lessons? They refuse to recite them, and I refuse to recite mine also. Does that drunkard refuse to go home? He refuses to go there. Will you go to the city on foot or on horseback? I shall go there in a steamboat. Will you go in a steamboat on the lake? I will go in a steamboat. Do your friends answer your letters? They answer them. (*See Less.* 27, *Rem.* 1.) Does your father answer you when you write to him? He always answers me. What will you do to-morrow? We shall do nothing to-morrow. What will you do next month? We shall go to the country next month. Do you go a mile in the morning? I go a mile in the morning and in the evening. Will you go a mile this evening? I shall go two.

Does your thumb pain you? My thumb does not pain me, but I have the headache and sickness of the stomach. Have you much appetite in autumn? I have much appetite in autumn and in winter. Do you sleep much in summer? I do not sleep well when it is very (*bien*) warm. What will the workmen do to-morrow? They will do all their work. Do you like better to go on horseback than to go on foot. I like better sometimes to go on foot than to go on horseback. Who is that stranger? He is a poor man who has had much sorrow. Have not all men sorrow? All men have sorrow and all have pleasure. What has that drunkard in his bottle? He has nothing in it. Does he not look tipsy? He looks tipsy. Does not each one think often of himself, (*à soi?*) Each one thinks often of himself. Does any one do a benefit without recompense? No, sir; a benefit always carries its recompense with itself.

Has not that drunkard broken his bottle? He has broken it. Have the honest always their recompense? Yes, sir; God promises to them a recompense. Has that apple much juice? Yes, sir; it is full of juice. That man looks gay; does he not love pleasure? He loves pleasure too much. Do you wish for some gravy with your meat? No, sir; I thank you. Does not that dollar look counterfeit? It looks counterfeit, and this bank-bill looks counterfeit also. What is the matter with that sick man? He has a pain in his head and in his back. Have you a sore finger? No, sir; but I have a pain in the left hand. Does the German woman speak English well? Yes, sir; she speaks it without making mistakes, but the French woman can not speak without making many mistakes.

46. QUARANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, PARTICIPLES, ETC.

TO RUN,			COURIR, (IRREGULAR,)		
Je cours,	*tu cours,*	*il court,*	*nous courons,*	*vous courez,*	*ils courent,*
I run,	thou runnest,	he runs,	we run,	you run,	they run.

Shall you see? I shall see,	*Verrez-vous? Je verrai,*
To perceive. To bring,	*Apercevoir. Apporter,*

To please,	*Faire plaisir*, *plaire*,
He pleases his father,	Il fait plaisir à son père,
It is a pleasure to see you in good health,	C' est un plaisir de vous voir en bonne santé, (*plaisir* takes *de* before the infin.)
Long,	*Longue*, (feminine of *long*,)
The *string*. The *cord*, *rope*,	Le *cordon*. La *corde*,
A long string, a long cord,	Un long cordon, une longue corde,
The *soup*. *Fat*,	La *soupe*. *Grasse*, (feminine of *gras*,)
Some fat meat, some fat soup,	De la viande grasse, de la soupe grasse,
The *washerwoman*,	La *blanchisseuse*,
The *mode*, *fashion*,	La *mode*,
The new fashion,	La nouvelle mode.

REMARK. Participles used as adjectives always agree with their nouns.

He wears only clothes made in the new fashion,	Il ne porte que des habits faits à la nouvelle mode,
A gown made in the old fashion,	Une robe faite à la vieille mode,
A *key*,	Une *clef*, (sometimes written *clé*,)
A false key,	Une clef fausse,
The *middle*, in the middle,	Le *milieu*, au milieu,
The *least*, the least service,	Le *moindre*, le moindre service,
Interest,	*L' intérêt*, (masculine,)
Interestedly, from interest,	Par intérêt,
Disinterestedly,	Sans intérêt,
Cheap, *cheaply*,	*À bon marché*,
Dear, *dearly*,	*Cher*,
He sells cheap,	Il vend à bon marché,
My dear sir,	Mon cher monsieur,
He sells too dear,	Il vend trop cher,
Do you run faster than I?	Courez-vous plus vite que moi?
I run faster than you,	Je cours plus vite que vous,
Do they sell cheaper than he?	Vendent-ils à meilleur marché que lui?
He sells cheaper than they,	Il vend à meilleur marché qu' eux,
Does the master love that scholar better than me?	Le maître aime-t-il mieux cet écolier que moi?
He loves you better than him,	Il vous aime mieux que lui,
He loves us more than them,	Il nous aime mieux qu' eux,
He loves our cousins more than them,	Il aime mieux nos cousines qu' elles,
Do you perceive that thick storm?	Apercevez-vous cet orage épais?
I perceive it,	Je l' aperçois,
Do you bring me my money?	M' apportez-vous mon argent?
I bring it to you,	Je vous l' apporte,
Will you see the washerwoman to-day?	Verrez-vous la blanchisseuse aujourd' hui?

We shall not see her; but my brother will see her,

Nous ne la verrons pas; mais mon frère la verra.

When will my partners see you? They will see me the day after to-morrow. Will you see the washerwoman soon? I shall see her to-day. Will you see the master's niece? I shall not see her. Why do those children run? They run because they are afraid of the rain. Does that horse run fast? He runs fast and he is very gentle, (*doux.*) Do you perceive him whom you are looking for? I perceive him and he perceives me. We perceive some travelers; do they not perceive us? They perceive us. Do you bring me the new books? I do not bring them to you. Do the servants bring them to me? They bring them to you. What does the washerwoman bring? She brings the clean linen. Of what have you need? I have need of a long cord and of a long string. Is that soup good? The soup is good, but this meat is too fat.

Does that stranger please your friend from interest? Yes, sir; he does not the least service disinterestedly. Have you the key of my chamber? No, sir; I have the key of mine. Has not that man a false key? He has a false one. Where does the servant put the barrel? He puts it in the middle of the road. Where has he put the chair? He has put it in the middle of the room. Is not butter dear? Yes, sir; every thing (*tout*) is dear in this city. Does not that merchant sell dear? No, sir; he sells too cheap. Do you study your lesson without speaking? I study it without speaking, and I recite it without making mistakes. Do you wish for gravy with your meat? No, sir; I thank you. Have you some red ink? I have some.

Will you go with my brother or with me? I will go with him. Have you much fruit? I have not much, but I have enough. Has that man much money? He has so many dollars that he does not like to count them. Has that boy a pain in his knee? He has a pain in his knee and in his right hand. Has he not a pain in his finger? He has a pain in it, (*y.*) Do you admire the character of that old man? No, sir; his body is healthy, but he is discontented. Why are you so discontented? I am discontented because my finger is sore and my teeth pain me. Do you believe in God? I believe in

him. Do you work much? We work much. Do those who work much have the body healthy? They have it healthy. Is working much useful? Working much is very useful, and studying much is very useful also.

47. QUARANTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

To appear,	*Paraître*, (varied like *connaître*, *Les.* 25,)
To return, come back,	*Revenir*, (varied as *venir*,* *Less.* 21,)
Will you send? I will send,	*Enverrez-vous? J' enverrai*, (future of *envoyer*,)
An *advocate, lawyer.* Some *linen*,	Un *avocat.* De la *toile*,

Toile is linen cloth; *linge* is linen made into garments.

This *motion, movement.* A *motive*,	Ce *mouvement.* Un *motif*,
A *fault, defect.* A *fact, deed*,	Un *défaut.* Un *fait*,
Amiable. Early,	*Aimable. De bonne heure*,
Not at all,	*Pas du tout*,
Sunday, on Sunday,	Le *dimanche*, dimanche,
Monday, on Monday,	Le *lundi*, lundi,
Tuesday, on Tuesday,	Le *mardi*, mardi,
Wednesday, on Wednesday,	Le *mercredi*, mercredi,
Thursday, on Thursday,	Le *jeudi*, jeudi,
Friday, on Friday,	Le *vendredi*, vendredi,
Saturday, on Saturday,	Le *samedi*, samedi,
The stars appear,	Les étoiles paraissent,
Does studying much seem agreeable to you?	Vous paraît-il agréable d' étudier beau coup?
It seems agreeable and useful to me,	Cela me paraît agréable et utile,
Are you returning from the lawyer's?	Revenez-vous de chez l' avocat?
I am returning from his house, and my friends are returning from there also,	Je reviens de chez lui, et mes amis en reviennent aussi,
Will you send some linen to the lawyer?	Enverrez-vous de la toile à l' avocat?
We will not send him any at all,	Nous ne lui en enverrons pas du tout,
His movements are beautiful,	Il a les mouvements beaux,
Those facts are very extraordinary,	Ces faits sont bien extraordinaires,

* Compounds generally are varied like their simple verbs.

He goes to the market early,	Il va au marché de bonne heure,
I will go to the lawyer's on Monday,	J' irai chez l' avocat lundi.

REMARK. The article is sometimes used with the days of the week to denote something habitual.

He will go home Sundays,	Il ira chez lui le dimanche,
I shall be here on Sunday,	Je serai ici dimanche,
The washerwoman comes here Saturdays,	La blanchisseuse vient ici le samedi,
They wish to depart on Saturday,	Ils veulent partir samedi,
My dear friend, you oblige me,	Mon cher ami, vous me rendez service,
He obliges every body,	Il rend service à tout le monde,
Was it not cold on Tuesday?	N' a-t-il pas fait froid mardi?
It was cold on Tuesday and Wednesday, but it was warm on Thursday,	Il a fait froid mardi et mercredi, mais il a fait chaud jeudi,
It will be rainy to-morrow,	Il fera de la pluie demain.

Is it day? It is not day. Is it night? It is night and the moon and the stars appear. Will it not be (*fera*) day soon? It is day already and the sun appears. Does that lady appear to you amiable? She appears to me very amiable. Does that man appear to you lame? He appears to me lame. What is the matter with him? He has a pain in his left foot. Do not those children appear to you amiable? They appear to me amiable and studious. Are you returning from the lawyer's? I am returning from his house. Is your partner returning from your house? He is returning from my house. Will you send your linen to the tailor? I will send it to him. Will your friend send him as much linen as you? He will send him as much as I. Is the motion of this boat agreeable to you? No, sir; it gives me sickness (*le mal*) of the stomach.

That man obliges every body; what (*quel*) is his motive? Interest is his only (*seul*) motive. Is not his motive good? No, sir; he does every thing (*tout*) from interest. Does the lawyer do nothing disinterestedly? He does nothing disinterestedly. Do you know any one without fault? I know no one without fault. Do you admire the character of Miss C.? I admire her; she appears to me without fault. Is not that new history very extraordinary? Yes, sir; it is full of strange facts. Each one answers for (*de*) his deeds; do you believe that? I believe that. Do you go out early in the morning? I go

out very early (*de très-bonne heure.*) Does not God appear everywhere in his works? He appears in all his works. Does not money appear to you a very useful thing? It appears to me very useful. Have you much of it? I have none at all.

Is that road straight or curved? It is curved. Have you a pain in the right foot or in the left? I have a pain in the left. Will you do your work on Monday and Tuesday? No, sir; I shall do it on Wednesday and Thursday. Where will you be on Friday? I shall be at home on Friday. Is not Sunday (*le dimanche*) the first day of the week? Sunday is the first day of the week and Saturday is the last. What causes so much noise? The wind causes it. Do you sing French songs? No, sir; I sing English songs. Has that maid-servant broken the handle of the broom? She has broken the handle of the broom, and the handle of this knife. How many cents has that boy? He has none at all. Did you buy that picture on credit or for cash? I bought it for cash; I buy nothing on credit. Does that man love labor? He loves labor.

48. QUARANTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, COMPARATIVES, ETC.

To bring,	*Amener*, (varied as *acheter*, *Less.* 20.)

Apporter is to bring by carrying; *amener* to bring without carrying.

To guard, keep,	*Garder*,
To gain,	*Gagner*, (*à* before infinitive,)
The *side*. On this side,	Le *côté*. De ce côté-ci,
On that side. The *chin*,	De ce côté-là. Le *menton*,
The *liquor*. *Sweet*,	La *liqueur*. *Douce*, (feminine of *doux*,)
The sweet liquor. The *spectacle, play*,	La liqueur douce. Le *spectacle*,
To the play. The *kitchen*,	Au spectacle. La *cuisine*,
To the kitchen. The *swine, pig*,	À la cuisine. Le *cochon*,
His *turn*. In his turn,	Son *tour*. À son tour,
Something else,	*Quelqu' autre chose*,
Nothing else,	*Rien autre chose*, (*Ne* accompanying the verb with *rien*,)

Short. Charming,	*Court. Charmant,*
Malicious,	*Malin,* (masculine,) *maligne,* (feminine,)
Said, told,	*Dit,* (past participle of *Dire,*)
The *word,*	Le *mot.*

REMARK 1. Comparatives generally, where the following verb may have a participle, adjective or verb understood after it, require such following verb to be preceded by *le.* Thus:

He is not so sick as he believes,	Il n' est pas *aussi* malade qu' il *le* croit,
That is not so difficult as they think,	Cela n' est pas *si* difficile qu' on *le* pense,
Is she not more modest than she appears*?	N' est-elle pas *plus* modeste qu' elle *le* paraît?

REMARK 2. Comparatives of superiority or inferiority (that is, those formed by *plus, moins, mieux, meilleur, pis* or *pire,*) require *ne* before the following verb, unless the comparison be negative.

They are less rich than we are,	Ils sont *moins* riches que nous *ne le* sommes,
I have more money than you have,	J' ai *plus* d' argent que vous n' *en* avez,
He is more skillful than you believe,	Il est *plus* habile que vous *ne le* croyez,
We are better than they say,	Nous sommes *meilleurs* qu' on *ne le* dit,
He is as unhappy as he appears,	Il est *aussi* malheureux qu' il *le* paraît,
I have no less courage than he has,	Je n' ai pas moins de courage qu' il en a†,
Do they gain more money than we gain?	Gagnent-ils plus d' argent que nous n' en gagnons?
He conducts his brother to my house,	Il amène (ou conduit) son frère chez moi, (*See Rem.* 1, *Less.* 20.)
They bring the horses,	Ils amènent les chevaux,
He keeps all my letters,	Il garde toutes mes lettres,
His side pains him,	Le côté lui fait mal,
Are they coming on this side?	Viennent-ils de ce côté-ci?
They are coming on that side,	Ils viennent de ce côté-là,
His chin is short,	Il a le menton court,
This book is charming,	Ce livre est charmant,
That maid-servant looks malicious; is she not malicious?	Cette servante a l' air malin; n' est-elle pas maligne?

* In the first of the above three sentences, the verb *to be* is understood; *he is not so sick as he believes (himself* TO BE,) or *believes (that he* IS.) So in the second; *that is not so difficult as they think (it* TO BE,) or *think (that it* IS.) The first sentence below means, *they are less rich than we are* (RICH.) Thus in the first three of these sentences the verb *to be* is understood, and in the fourth an *adjective*, and the place of these is supplied in French by *le.* In the fifth sentence; *I have more money than you have* (OF IT,) neither a verb nor an adjective but *of it* is understood, which of course is rendered in French by *en*, and *le* is not used.

† *Ne* is omitted in this last phrase, because the comparison is negative, and in the preceding because it is not one of superiority nor inferiority.

Have you said your lesson?	Avez-vous dit votre leçon?
I have said it,	Je l' ai dite, (*See Less.* 37, *Rule,*)
Have you said all the words?	Avez-vous dit tous les mots?
I have said them all,	Je les ai tous dits,
Have you said all your lessons?	Avez-vous dit toutes vos leçons?
I have said them all,	Je les ai toutes dites,
He has friends; has he any thing else?	Il a des amis; a-t-il quelqu' autre chose?
He has nothing else,	Il n' a rien autre chose,
He walks as fast as I,	Il marche aussi vite que moi,
What day is it to-day?	Quel jour est-ce aujourd' hui?
It is Thursday. To-morrow will be Friday,	C' est jeudi. Demain sera vendredi.

Do you conduct your friends hither (*ici?*) We conduct them hither. Do you bring your cousin here? I bring him here. Does the servant bring your new horse to your house? He brings him to my house. What does the musician gain? He gains good friends. Does he gain nothing else? He gains something else. What do your friends gain? They gain much money. Do you not gain more than they? We gain more than they gain. Do you keep your money? We do not keep it. Do your friends keep theirs? They keep it. Do you keep my letters? I keep them all. Do you like this liquor? I like it, it is sweet and agreeable. Where does the cook take the pig? He takes it to the kitchen. Is the pig fat or lean? It is very fat. What is the matter with you? My chin is sore. Do you drink the sweet liquor? I drink it. Do you drink any thing else? I drink nothing else. I drink more than you believe.

Where is that charming lady going? She is going to the play. Does she often go to the play? She goes there as often as I. Is that river straight? No, sir; it makes several turns. Do you not speak in your turn? Yes, sir; each one speaks in his turn. Is not that man's chin short? It is very short. Where is the roast pig (*cochon rôti?*) The cook has carried it to the kitchen. Have you said all the words of your lesson? I have said them all. Did you say your lesson without making mistakes? I did not say it without making some mistakes, (*Less.* 44, *Rem.* 3.) Is not that lady charming? Yes, miss; she is beautiful and very amiable. Are the soldiers coming on this side or on that side? They are coming on that side. Have you

many pictures? Yes, sir; I have more pictures than you have. Does not that fact appear to you strange? It appears to me very strange. Do I sing to your liking? Yes, sir; you sing better than I sing; you sing better than they say.

Does your partner love labor? No, sir; he works against his will (*liking.*) Does that lazy scholar study (against his liking) unwillingly? He studies unwillingly. Has it not been cold the past night? It has been very cold. Do you always shut the door of your chamber when you go out? I always shut the door and the windows. Why do you extinguish the lights? I extinguish them because it is day, and we have no need of lights. Has the husband of that old man's niece much money? He has more money than his father-in-law has. Have you more forks than you have spoons? I have more spoons than I have forks. Is it night? It is night and the moon and stars appear. It is damper than it appears.

---

49. QUARANTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

PROPER NAMES OF COUNTRIES, CITIES, ETC.

REMARK 1. The names of countries are generally feminine.

France. England,	La *France.* L' *Angleterre,*
Switzerland. Spain,	La *Suisse.* L' *Espagne,*
Russia. Prussia,	La *Russie.* La *Prusse,*
Scotland. Ireland,	L' *Écosse.* L' *Irlande,*
Sweden. Italy,	La *Suède.* L' *Italie,*
Turkey. Greece,	La *Turquie.* La *Grèce.*

A few are masculine.

Denmark. Portugal,	Le *Danemarc.* Le *Portugal,*
Canada. Peru,	Le *Canada.* Le *Pérou.*

REMARK 2. The names of countries generally take the article, the names of cities omit it

Europe touches *Asia,*	L' *Europe* touche à l' *Asie,*
Africa does not touch *America,*	L' *Afrique* ne touche pas à l' *Amérique,*
France is the most beautiful country of Europe,	La France est le plus beau pays de l' Europe,
London is larger than *Paris,*	*Londres* est plus grand que *Paris.*

REMARK 3. *At*, *in*, or *to* before the name of a city is rendered by *à*, before a feminine name of a country by *en*; before a masculine name by *à*, *from* before either is rendered by *de*, and with these prepositions the article is omitted before the names of countries.

He is going to *Germany*; to *Peru*,	Il va en *Allemagne*; *au Pérou*,
We come from England,	Nous venons d' Angleterre,
I will send to Russia,	J' enverrai en Russie,
They are returning from Spain,	Ils reviennent d' Espagne,
I am going to New York,	Je vais à New-York,
He dwells in Boston,	Il demeure à Boston,
They come from London,	Ils viennent de Londres.

REMARK 4. A few names of countries and cities always take the article.

I come from Canada,	Je viens du Canada,
They dwell at *Havre*,	Ils demeurent au *Hâvre*,
She is going to *New Orleans*,	Elle va à la *Nouvelle-Orléans*,
Is there? are there?	*Y a-t-il?*
There is, there are,	*Il y a*,
Has there been? was there?	Y a-t-il eu?
There has been, there was,	Il y a eu,
Will there be? There will be,	Y aura-t-il? Il y aura,
Coffee with milk. Coffee without milk,	*Café au lait. Café noir*,
A *church*. To church,	Une *église*. À l' église,
A *school*. To school,	Une *école*. À l' école,
The *breakfast*. The *dinner*,	Le *déjeuner*. Le *dîner*,
At breakfast, at dinner,	À déjeuner, à dîner,
To breakfast. To dine,	*Déjeuner. Dîner*,
Do you breakfast early?	Déjeunez-vous de bonne heure?
I breakfast early and dine early,	Je déjeune de bonne heure, et je dîne de bonne heure,
Is there much fruit in the garden?	Y a-t-il beaucoup de fruit dans le jardin?
There is much,	Il y en a beaucoup,
Is there some wine in that barrel?	Y a-t-il du vin dans ce baril?
There is a little,	Il y en a un peu,
There are some people at your house,	Il y a du monde chez vous,
Are there no apples on the table?	N' y a-t-il point de pommes sur la table?
There are none,	Il n' y en a point,
How many scholars are there in that school?	Combien d' écoliers y a-t-il dans cette école?
There are thirty-five,	Il y en a trente-cinq,
There are only ten,	Il n' y en a que dix,
Will there be some roast beef at dinner?	Y aura-t-il du bœuf rôti à dîner?
There will be some,	Il y en aura,

Was there some coffee with milk at breakfast?	Y a-t-il eu du café au lait à déjeuner?
There was some coffee with milk at breakfast, and there will be some coffee without milk at dinner,	Il y a eu du café au lait à déjeuner, et il y aura du café noir à dîner,
Have there been some people here?	Y a-t-il eu du monde ici?
There have been some,	Il y en a eu.

Is there a church in this village? Yes, sir, there are two. How many windows are there in your room? There are four. How many schools are there in your village? There are only three. Is there some wine at the bottom (*au fond*) of that barrel? There is a little. Is there not some vinegar at the bottom of that cask? There is none. Have there been some people at your house this morning? There have been some. Have you already dined? I have dined. Do you not dine early? We dine early and we breakfast early also. Does your neighbor breakfast early? He breakfasts early and he dines early also. Where will you go on Sunday? I shall go to church on Sunday; and I shall go to school on Monday. Does your neighbor always go to church Sundays? He does not go there at all. Do you like coffee without milk? I like coffee without milk at dinner, and I like coffee with milk at breakfast.

Is Spain larger than Switzerland? Yes, sir; Spain is larger than Switzerland, and Russia is larger than Spain. Does Scotland touch Ireland? No, sir; Scotland touches England, but it does not touch Ireland. Is Denmark a large country? No, sir; it is not so large as Portugal. Is New York larger than Boston? Yes, sir; New York is the largest city (*la plus grande ville*) in this country. Are you going to Prussia? I am going to Prussia and to Sweden. Will you go to Italy? I shall go to Italy, to Turkey, and to Greece. Do you dwell in Paris? No, sir; I dwell at Havre. When will you go to New Orleans? I shall go there on Wednesday. Is your friend from Baltimore? No, sir; he is from New Orleans. Is there not a light in your room? There is none. Do the fixed stars borrow their light? No, sir; the moon borrows her light, but the fixed stars do not borrow theirs.

What has that child broken? He has broken my window. What has the husband of that lady a fancy to buy? He has a fancy to buy

some cups and saucers. Does he wish to buy these cups and saucers? Yes, sir; and he wishes to buy those forks and spoons. Can you tell me who that man is? He is the husband of that amiable lady. Does his spouse wish to go to New York? No, madam; she wishes to go to New Orleans. Is there something at the bottom of that cask? There is a little water. Why do you look so sad? The bad weather makes me sad (*Less.* 37, *Rem.*) What is the weather? It is rainy. Is it not dark? It is very dark. Was it cold yesterday? It was cold and slippery. Why are you so studious? I am studious because I wish to learn much.

50. CINQUANTIÈME LEÇON.

DEGREES OF COMPARISONS, DATES, ETC.

January. February,	*Janvier. Février,*
March. April,	*Mars. Avril,*
May. June,	*Mai. Juin.*
July. August,	*Juillet. Août,*
September. October,	*Septembre. Octobre,*
November. December,	*Novembre. Décembre.*

The names of the months and of the days of the week, are masculine.

What day of the month is it?	Quel jour du mois est-ce? Quel *quantième* (du mois) avons-nous? Quel jour du mois avons-nous?
It is the first,	C' est le premier, Nous avons le premier, Nous sommes au premier,
It is the second,	C' est le deux, Nous avons le deux, Nous sommes au deux.

In speaking of the days of the month, the French use the cardinal numbers, except for the first.

It is the third. It is the fourth,	C' est le trois. Nous avons le quatre.
It is the eleventh of July,	C' est le onze* Juillet,

* *De*, *que*, and *le* do not omit the *e* before *onze* and *onzième*.

New York, December fifteenth, eighteen hundred and fifty,	New-York, le quinze, (de) Décembre dix-huit cent-cinquante. (*See cardinal numbers, Less.* 25, *note*,)
This morning I received your letter of the tenth of last month,	Ce matin j' ai reçu votre lettre du dix du mois dernier,
Received,	*Reçu*, (past participle of *recevoir*,)
Philadelphia, January fifth, eighteen hundred and fifty-one,	*Philadelphie*, cinq Janvier, dix-huit cent-cinquante et un,
In store. In the store,	*En magasin. Dans le magasin.*

The former of these phrases has much the character of an adverb or adjective. When we speak of a thing as *stored*, we may use *en magasin ;* while *dans le magasin* corresponds to *in the store*, in English.

He is in *prison*, (imprisoned,)	Il est en *prison*,
He goes into the prison,	Il va dans la prison,
Have you some *cider* in barrel, (barreled?)	Avez-vous du *cidre* en baril ?
I have some in this barrel,	J' en ai dans ce baril.

Remark 1. From these examples we perceive that *dans* has a sense precise and determined, while that of *en* is vague and indefinite.

To fall,	*Tomber*,
To produce,	*Produire*, (varied like *conduire*,)
To freeze. To prefer,	*Geler. Préférer*,
Sweden produces iron,	La Suède produit du fer,
I fall often when it is slippery,	Je tombe souvent quand il fait glissant,
It freezes much in Russia,	Il gèle beaucoup en Russie.
Wheat. Buckwheat,	Le *blé*. Le *sarrasin*, le *blé noir*,
A *pancake*. A buckwheat cake,	Une crêpe. Une crêpe de sarrasin,
He wishes for buckwheat cakes with butter and syrup,	Il veut des crêpes de blé noir au beurre et au sirop,
I prefer the honest to the useful,	Je préfère l' honnête à l' utile.

Rule. The Comparative Degrees of superiority or inferiority, is formed in French by prefixing to the positive the adverbs *plus* or *moins*, and the Superlative, by prefixing to the comparative the article *le*, or a possessive adjective.

Small, smaller, the smallest,	Petit, plus petit, le plus petit,
Agreeable, less agreeable, the least agreeable,	Agréable, moins agréable, le moins agréable.

Meilleur and *le meilleur*, are used for the comparative and superlative of *bon ; moindre, le moindre*, may be used for those of *petit ; mieux*, and *le mieux*, are used for those of *bien ;* and *pire, le pire*, may be used for those of *mauvais ; pis* and *le pis*, for those of *mal*.

My foot is smaller than yours,	J' ai le pied plus petit que vous,
His foot is the smallest,	Il a le pied le plus petit,
This scholar is less studious than that one,	Cet écolier-ci est moins studieux que celui-là,
That one is the least studious,	Celui-là est le moins studieux,
It is my best horse,	C' est mon meilleur cheval,

Plus petit applies to what is measured; *moindre* to what is valued.

His room is smaller than yours,	Sa chambre est *plus petite* que la vôtre,
My brother is smaller than yours,	Mon frère est *plus petit* que le vôtre,
His *merit* is not the least,	Son *mérite* n' est pas *le moindre*,
His *talents* are less than yours,	Ses *talents* sont *moindres* que les vôtres.

What day is it to-day? It is Monday to-day and to-morrow will be Tuesday. Will you go home on Wednesday? No, sir; I shall go home on Thursday or Friday. When will you go to Philadelphia? I shall go there on Saturday, the first of January. What day of the month is it? It is the second of December. Is it not (*n' est-ce pas*) the third? No, sir; it will be the third to-morrow. Do you prefer February to April? I prefer April to February. Is not March a month of spring? Yes, sir; March, April, and May, are the months of spring, and June, July, and August, are the months of summer Do you like the months of autumn? I prefer September, October, and November, the months of autumn to the months of winter. Does it freeze much here in winter? It freezes much here in December, in January, and in February. What does France produce? France produces wine, and Spain and Portugal produce wine also.

Is not Paris a beautiful city? Yes, sir; Paris is the most beautiful city in Europe. Does it freeze more in Sweden than in Italy? Yes, sir; it does not freeze much in Italy. Is it slippery when it freezes? It is slippery when it freezes. Do you fall when it is slippery? I often fall when it is slippery. Have you much cider in the barrel? I have not much. Is there cider in that barrel? There is a little cider at the bottom of that barrel. Did you receive my letter? I received it at Philadelphia the fifth of May. Does that child fall often when he walks? He does not fall because he does not yet walk. Why do those boys fall so often? They fall because it has frozen much and (*que*) is slippery. Do you prefer Europe to America?

No, miss; I prefer America to Europe. What does your aunt offer to give her maid? She offers to give her a new silk gown.

Is not your partner an able man? He is very able. What weather is it? It is damp. Was it damp yesterday? It was not damp yesterday, it was fine (*beau*) weather. Is it dark to-night (*cette nuit?*) No, sir; it is moonlight. Was it moonlight last night? Yes, sir; it has been moonlight during (*pendant*) several nights. Has that lady bought the silk dress? She has bought the silk dress and the silk parasol. Do you recite your lesson without making mistakes? No, sir; I can not recite it without making a few mistakes. When will the workman do his work? He will do it to-day. Will you go a mile this morning? I shall go two. Does your thumb pain you? My thumb pains me and I have the teethache. Do you sleep more in summer than in winter? Yes, sir; and I have more appetite in winter than in summer. Is that cord (*corde*) sufficiently long? Yes, sir; it is longer than you believe.

51. CINQUANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

THE IMPERFECT TENSE in French, is formed by changing *ons* of the first person plural of the indicative present into the following terminations:

AIS,	AIS,	AIT,	IONS,	IEZ,	AIENT, Thus:
AIMONS, *forms,*	*J' aimais*		*Il aimait,*		*Vous aimiez,*
	I was loving,		He was loving,		You were loving,
	Tu aimais,		*Nous aimions,*		*Ils aimaient,*
	Thou wast loving,		We were loving,		They were loving,
CHOISISSONS, *forms,*	*Je choisissais,*		*Il choisissait,*		*Vous choisissiez,*
	I was choosing,		He was choosing,		You were choosing,
	Tu choisissais,		*Nous choisissions,*		*Ils choisissaient,*
	Thou wast choosing,		We were choosing,		They were choosing,
RECEVONS, *forms,*	*Je recevais,*		*Il recevait,*		*Vous receviez,*
	I was receiving,		He was receiving,		You were receiving,
	Tu recevais,		*Nous recevions,*		*Ils recevaient,*
	Thou wast receiving,		We were receiving,		They were receiving,
RENDONS, *forms,*	*Je rendais,*		*Il rendait,*		*Vous rendiez,*
	I was returning,		He was returning,		You were returning,
	Tu rendais,		*Nous rendions*		*Ils rendaient,*
	Thou wast returning,		We were returning,		They were returning.

Let the teacher exercise the learner with other verbs, if necessary, until the formation of this tense is sufficiently familiar.

ÊTRE, the only exception to this rule, makes its imperfect,

J' étais,	*tu étais,*	*il était,*	*nous étions,* etc.,
I was,	thou wast,	he was,	we were.

This past tense always expresses what is repeated or continuous. When, therefore, any thing is spoken of as once done and finished,* without reference to continuance, this tense is not to be used.

Cicero was a great *orator,*	Cicéron *était* un grand *orateur,*
Washington was a great man,	Washington *était* un grand homme,
We had much fruit when we lived in the country,	Nous *avions* beaucoup de fruit quand nous *demeurions* à la campagne,
I was looking for my penknife and I found my lead pencil,	Je *cherchais* mon canif et j'ai trouvé mon crayon.

In all these phrases we perceive that the imperfect tense denotes continuous (*i. e.* unfinished or imperfect) action. Cicero *continued* to be a great orator. Washington *continued* to be a great man; and we *continued* to have much fruit while we *continued* to dwell in the country. The looking for the penknife, too, was continuous and unfinished, while the finding of the pencil denotes no continuance, but is an action finished and perfect, and is, therefore, in the *perfect tense.* So in the following, it will be observed that continuous or imperfect action is expressed by the imperfect tense, that which is finished, or perfect, by the perfect tense.

You were reading (*continuous*) *while* I was breakfasting, (*continuous,*)	Vous *lisiez pendant que* je *déjeunais,*
They were (*continuous*) in the street when we saw them, (*not continuous,*)	Ils *étaient* dans la rue quand nous les avons vus,
Thou wast working (*continuous*) while I was sleeping, (*continuous,*)	Tu *travaillais* pendant que je *dormais,*
She was (*continuous*) at your house when I heard (*not con.*) her sing,	Elle *était* chez vous quand je l'ai entendue chanter,
They studied (*continuous*) while you talked, (*continuous,*)	Ils *étudiaient* pendant que vous *parliez,*
He had (*continuous*) the pictures when I bought (*not continuous*) them,	Il *avait* les tableaux quand je les ai achetés,
Thou wast (*continuous*) at Paris when I was (*continuous*) there,	Tu *étais* à Paris quand j'y *étais.*†

* That action which is in a state of continuance or repetition is of course unfinished or imperfect. Hence the propriety of the name *imperfect tense.*

† *Was* with *the present participle* and *used* with *the infinitive* in English, have been given as criteria of the use of the imperfect in French. These are correct when they can be applied, but they do not include all cases. In the last two of the above phrases, for instance, we should not say in English, *He was having*, or *he used to have*, etc., nor, *Thou wast being*, etc. The true characteristic of this tense is, that it represents the action as *unfinished* and *continuous* at the time mentioned. It is, therefore, properly called *imperfect.*

To owe, ought,	*Devoir,*
It is *good traveling,*	Il fait *bon voyager,*
It is *good living* in Europe,	Il fait *bon vivre* en Europe,
It is *dear living* in Paris,	Il fait *cher vivre* à Paris,
Is it as dear living in New York as in Paris?	Fait-il aussi cher vivre à New-York qu' à Paris?
It is as dear living there,	Il y fait aussi cher vivre,
Joyous. As joyous as they,	*Joyeux.* Aussi joyeux qu' eux,
As good bread,	*D' aussi bon* pain,
Have you as good bread as this?	Avez-vous d' aussi bon pain que celui-ci?
The *sight.* He is short-sighted,	La *vue.* Il a la vue courte,
Before,	*Avant,* (*de* before the infinitive,)
Before dinner, before dining,	Avant dîner, avant de dîner,
Before breakfast, before breakfasting,	Avant déjeuner, avant de déjeuner,
Have you apples still?	Avez-vous encore des pommes?
I have enough still,	J' en ai encore assez,
I have no more money,	Je n' ai plus d' argent,
I have no more,	Je n' en ai plus,
I have nothing more. The *season,*	Je n' ai plus rien. La *saison,*
The *fog.* It is foggy,	Le *brouillard.* Il fait du brouillard,
It is sunny. It will be sunny,	Il fait du soleil. Il fera du soleil,
The *fountain,*	La *fontaine,*
Crazy,	*Fou, fol* bef. vowel and silent *h; folle,* (f.)
Opened, also *open,*	*Ouvert,* (past participle of *ouvrir,*)
That girl looks crazy,	Cette fille a l' air fou,
Has she opened the door?	A-t-elle ouvert la porte?
She has opened it,	Elle l' a ouverte,
I leave the window shut,	Je laisse la fenêtre (or) croisée fermee,
Do you still owe money?	Devez-vous encore de l' argent?
I do not owe any more,	Je n' en dois plus.

Plus, (expressing an idea of time,) like *rien, jamais,* etc., takes no *pas* after *ne.*

Do those men still owe you money? They owe me much still. Do you still owe me some? We owe you no more. Dost thou owe much? No, sir; I owe nothing, but my partner owes much. Is it good traveling? It is good traveling. Is it always good traveling in summer? It is always better traveling (*meilleur voyager*) in summer than in winter. Is it good living in London? It is good living in London, but it is better living (*meilleur vivre*) in Paris. Why does that scholar look so joyous? He looks joyous because he has recited his lesson very well. Is that man short-sighted? He is not

short-sighted; he is blind of one eye. Will you go to the country before Monday? No, sir; I shall not go there before Tuesday or Wednesday. Will your brother go there Thursday or Friday? He will not go there at all. Will you go to the north before the beautiful season? Yes, sir; I shall go the fourth of March. Which season do you like the best? I like all the seasons, but I prefer the spring to all the others. Is it foggy? No, sir; it was very foggy this morning, but now (*à présent*) it is sunny, and it will be sunny to-morrow. That man looks crazy; is he not crazy? He is not crazy. Is he going to the fountain? He is going there. What does he bring? He brings some water from the fountain.

Where were you yesterday? I was at home yesterday. Where were your brothers last week? They were in the country. Had you many friends when you were in Paris? We had many. What were you doing this morning while we were breakfasting? I was sleeping while you were breakfasting. Were you dining while we were studying?* What was the master doing while you were studying? Was he not writing? Hadst thou thy book when the master spoke to thee? Wast thou in the street when he saw thee? Was that scholar studying when you called him? Was he not sleeping? Did you breakfast early when you lived in the city? Did those scholars know (how) to speak the French when they were studying the Spanish? Had you much money when you bought that horse?

In the month (*au mois*) of February it is very cold still; but the days are a little longer; the night does not come so quick; (*vite;*) and in the morning, it is day a little sooner (*plus tôt.*) The country is still very sad. Do you know that this month is the shortest of all? It has only twenty-eight days, while (*tandis que*) the others have thirty and some thirty-one. January is the first month and February is the second.

* It will now be profitable for the learner to form answers for himself. Many of them will, therefore, be omitted hereafter, for the learner to supply.

52. CINQUANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, PRONOUNS, ETC

To laugh, to laugh at. To weep,	*Rire, rire de. Pleurer,*
Out. Out of its *place*,	*Hors.* Hors de sa *place*,
Will you come?	*Viendrez-vous?*
I will come,	*Je viendrai*, (future of *venir*,)
To mount, ascend, go up,	*Monter*,
The *barber*,	Le *barbier*,
The *sky, firmament, heaven*	Le *ciel*,
A *cloud. A piece*,	Un *nuage.* Une *pièce*,
A *task.* Some *wool*,	Une *tâche.* De la *laine*,
That *affair, business. Each*,	Cette *affaire. Chaque.*

Chaque is an adjective, and is always used with a noun; *chacun* is a pronoun and always used without one.

Each scholar will come, and each one will have her lesson ready,	Chaque écolière viendra, et chacune aura sa leçon prête,
Ready,	*Prêt*, (*à* bef. inf., *pour* before the noun,)
Angry, also *sorry*,	*Fâché*, (*de* before the infin. and noun,)
Easy,	*Facile*, (*à* before the infin. and noun,)
Difficult,	*Difficile*, (*à* before the infin. and noun,)
The *flour*,	La *farine*,
Has the baker bread as good as this?	Le boulanger a-t-il du pain aussi bon que celui-ci?

Remark 1. All adjectives may be placed after their nouns, when like the above they are qualified by adverbs.

Is there salt as fine as this?	Est-ce qu'il y a du sel aussi fin que celui-ci?
I have flour as fine as that,	J'ai de la farine aussi fine que celle-là,
His eye is beautiful as hers,	Il a l'œil beau comme elle,
My hand is like hers,	J'ai la main comme elle,
Do you laugh at him or at me?	Riez-vous de lui ou de moi?
I laugh at you,	Je ris de vous,
Does he laugh at that?	Rit-il de cela?
He laughs at it,	Il en rit,
Do you not weep from *rage*?	Ne pleurez-vous pas de *rage*?
No, sir; I weep from sorrow,	Non, M.; je pleure de chagrin,
Will you come to my house to-morrow morning or to-morrow evening?	Viendrez-vous chez moi demain matin ou demain soir?
We will come there to-morrow evening,	Nous y viendrons demain soir,

He is going up to his room,	Il monte à sa chambre,
The barber will come to his *shop* soon,	Le barbier viendra bientôt à sa *boutique*,
There is a cloud in the sky,	Il y a un nuage dans le ciel,
He is ready to set out,	Il est prêt à partir,
Is your task easy or difficult?	Votre tâche est-elle facile ou difficile?
It is very easy,	Elle est très-facile,
Is this piece of cloth of wool or of cotton?	Cette pièce de drap est-elle de laine ou de coton?
It is of wool,	Elle est de laine,
I am sorry for your misfortune,	Je suis fâché de votre malheur,
I am sorry for it,	J' en suis fâché,
Does not the barber appear angry?	Est-ce que le barbier ne paraît pas fâché?
He appears *so*,	Il *le* paraît.

Remark 2. The pronoun *le* in French, like *so* in English, is often used in reference to a *quality* or *circumstance* previously mentioned. It may be taken as a rule that, when *so* of this kind is expressed or can be understood, *le* is to be used in French.

Does she seem angry still?	Paraît-elle encore fâchée?
She seems *so*,	Elle *le* paraît,
Beautiful things are less *so* out of their place,	Les belles choses *le* sont moins hors de leur place.

Remark 3. When *le* used in this way, represents an adjective, or a noun used adjectively, it is invariable; but when it represents a noun, or adjective taken as a noun, it agrees with it in gender and number.

Madam, are you sick? I am,	Madame, êtes-vous malade? Je *le* suis,
Are you the sick person? I am,	Êtes-vous la malade? Je *la* suis,
Gentlemen, are you ministers?	Messieurs, êtes-vous ministres?
We are,	Nous le sommes,
Are you the ministers of the king?	Êtes-vous les ministres du roi?
We are,	Nous les sommes.

In the first of these four answers *le* is unvaried, because it refers to an adjective; and in the third, because it refers to a noun used adjectively; in the second it agrees, because it refers to an adjective used as a noun; and in the fourth, because it refers to a noun.

Is your task well done? It is well done. I have done my task; will you do yours soon? No, sir; I shall not do it at all. Is not that lady laughing? She is laughing as a crazy person (*folle.*) Is she laughing at those children? She is laughing at them. Why do you weep? I weep because I have much sorrow. Do those children weep from rage? No, sir; they weep from sorrow. When will you come to my house? I will go there to-morrow morning.

Will your brothers come there to-morrow morning also? No, sir; they will not go there before to-morrow evening. Why does the cat go up on (*sur*) that tree? He goes up there because he is afraid of the dog. Are you going up to your room? No, sir; I am going up to my brother's. Does the barber owe you some money still? He does not owe me any more. Are there not clouds in the sky? Yes, sir; the sky is covered (*couvert*) with clouds. What has the barber bought? He has bought a piece of cloth. Is it (*Est-ce*) of wool? It is of wool. Of what (*à quoi*) is that man thinking? He thinks of his affairs. Has he business? He has much (*bien*) business. (*See Less.* 40, *Rem.* 3.) Has each scholar his task? Each one has it ready. Are you ready to recite your lesson? I am ready. Is your task difficult? It is not difficult; it is very easy. What have you fine? I have some very fine flour.

Are you sick? I am so. Are you my brother's friend? I am so. Are you soldiers? We are. Does not that lady seem angry? She seems so. Is she angry because her papers are out of their place? Have you the toothache? How many miles do you go in the morning? Do you like better to go on horseback than to go on foot? Do you like quite as much (*tout autant*) to go on foot as to go on horseback? Have you much appetite in the spring? Have you not a sore thumb? Will you see the washerwoman on Saturday? Does she wish for the long cord or the long string? Does she wish for the cord to dry (*pour sécher*) the wet linen? Is the cord longer than the string? Does the washerwoman bring the clean linen Saturdays? Do you like soup? Is not this soup too fat? Do you always wear clothes (*habits*) made in the new fashion? That sailor has not the least courage; has the soldier some?

Where was the key of your door when you were looking for it? Was it not on the table in the middle of the room? Was that child weeping from sorrow or from rage when we saw him? Were you not laughing at him? Were not the children going up to their room when we heard them? Do you always put your key on the middle of the table?

53. CINQUANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, PRONOUNS, ETC.

To eat. To travel,	*Manger. Voyager.*

REMARK 1. Verbs in *ger* insert a silent *e* after the *g* in all terminations before *a* and *o*.

Je mange, tu manges, il mange, nous mangeons, vous mangez, ils mangent,
Je voyageais, tu voyageais, il voyageait, nous voyagions, vous voyagiez, ils voyageaient.

Offered,	*Offert,* (past participle of *offrir.*)

Souffrir and *couvrir*, with their compounds, are varied like *offrir* and *ouvrir*. (*Less.* 43.)

To suffer, suffered,	*Souffrir*, past participle, *souffert,*
To cover, covered,	*Couvrir*, past participle, *couvert,*
To consent,	*Consentir*, (*à* or *de* before infinitive.)

Consentir with *à*, means to consent freely; with *de*, not to oppose.

Do you consent to sell me that piece of linen?	Est-ce que vous consentez à me vendre cette pièce de toile?
He consents to show me his exercise,	Il consent de me montrer son thème.

REMARK 2. *De* (the same as *à*, *Less.* 33, *Rem.* 3) is to be repeated before every infinitive depending on the same word or phrase.

He refuses to eat and drink,	Il refuse de manger et de boire,
They have forgotten to read and write,	Ils ont oublié de lire et d' écrire,
Laughed. The *cellar, cave,*	*Ri*, (past participle of *rire.*) La *cave,*
The *earth, ground, land.* A *potatoe,*	La *terre.* Une *pomme de terre,*
A *plate.* The *napkin,*	Une *assiette.* La *serviette,*
That *towel.* The *skin,*	Cet *essuie-main.* La *peau,*
The *cow. Life, living,*	La *vache.* La *vie,*
He thinks of going to France,	Il pense à aller en France, (*See Less.* 49, *Rem.* 3.)
He gains his living by making cheese,	Il gagne sa vie à faire du fromage,
I offered him some *champaign* wine,	Je lui ai offert du vin de *champagne,*
That poor man suffers from cold,	Ce pauvre homme souffre du froid,
He has suffered much,	Il a bien souffert,
They cover the potatoes because it is cold,	Ils couvrent les pommes de terre parce qu' il fait froid,
They have covered them with earth,	Ils les ont couvertes de terre,
He laughed at us,	Il a ri de nous,
Birds have their skin covered with feathers,	Les oiseaux ont la peau couverte de plumes,

He has put the potatoes in the cellar,	Il a mis les pommes de terre dans la cave,
He has covered the plate with the napkin,	Il a couvert l' assiette de la serviette.

REMARK 3. When a personal pronoun is used in the predicate with the verb *to be*, as in the preceding lesson, if *ce* be the subject, a distinction must be made between persons and things. *Lui*, *elle*, *eux*, *elles*, may be used for the former, but *le*, *la*, *les*, always for the latter.

Is that your brother? It is he (*so*,)	Est-ce votre frère? C' est lui,
Is this your book? It is (*so*,)	Est-ce votre livre? Ce l' est,
Are those your cows? They are (*so*,)	Sont-ce vos vaches? Ce les sont,
Are those your cousins? They are (*so*,)	Sont-ce vos cousines? Ce sont elles,
Are these the soldiers? They are (*so*,)	Sont-ce les soldats? Ce sont eux.

The verb *être* with *ce* for its subject, is plural only when joined immediately to the third person plural, as in these last phrases.

It is we. It is you,	C' est nous. C' est vous,
It is he and his brother,	C' est lui et son frère.

Did you eat much fruit when you dwelt in the country? I did not eat much because we had not much. Do not children eat as much as men? Children frequently eat more than men. Did you travel much when you were young? I traveled in several countries. Did you not travel last summer? Yes, sir; I traveled in Europe and in America. Does that rich man travel much? He travels frequently in the spring and in the autumn. Do you eat meat at breakfast? We commonly (*souvent*) eat meat at breakfast. Have you offered any thing to that poor man? I have offered him some bread and some money. Does he suffer much? He suffers from cold and from hunger (*la faim.*) Do the poor suffer in this country? They suffer here in winter. Have you ever suffered from cold? I have suffered from cold and from heat. With what do you cover your books? I cover them with paper. Do you cover your chairs? Yes, madam; I cover them with linen. Does the servant put the potatoes in the cellar? No, madam; he covers them with earth. Do you consent to lend me your horse? I consent to lend him to you. Does the scholar consent to sell you his books? He consents to sell them to me. Why did you laugh at that man? I laughed at him because he was without a hat.

Do you wish to buy some towels? I wish to buy some towels, some napkins, and some plates. That young lady has beautiful skin,

is she your sister? Is that your cow? Do you gain your living by writing? Does that man gain his living by making butter? What day is it? What day of the month is it? Is it not the sixth of May? Is this string longer than that cord? Does one buy cheap when one buys for cash? Do you always wear clothes made in the new fashion? Is the motion of a steamboat agreeable to you? What has been the motive of that lawyer? Has interest been his only motive? Does not this motion give you sickness of the stomach? I know no one without faults; do you know any one without faults? Does not each one answer for his deeds (*de ses faits?*) When that rich man was young did he keep (*gardait*) all the money which he gained? Did he keep all that they gave him? I am going to tell you the names of the months and to count them at the same time. January, one; February, two; March, three; April, four; May, five; June, six; July, seven; August, eight; September, nine; October, ten; November, eleven; December, twelve.

54. CINQUANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

RULE I. THE IMPERATIVE MOOD of all French verbs, (with a very few exceptions which will be given hereafter,) have *the first and second persons plural, the same as those of the indicative present;* and the *second person singular,* the same as *the first person singular* of the indicative present, omitting the subjects.

Come (thou) here. *Come* (you) here,	*Viens* ici. *Venez* ici,
Go to the neighbor's,	*Allez* chez le voisin,
Let us go to the neighbor's,	*Allons* chez le voisin,
Shut (thou) the door,	*Ferme* la porte,
Shut (you) the door,	*Fermez* la porte,
Let us shut the door,	*Fermons* la porte,
Shut it. *Let us shut* it,	*Ferme*-la, or *fermez*-la. *Fermons*-la.

RULE II. These persons of the imperative, when affirmative, take after the verb, and joined to it by a hyphen, all those pronouns which usually come before the verb, the direct preceding the indirect object.

Give him the bread,	Donnez-lui le pain,
Give it to him,	Donne-le-lui, or, donnez-le-lui,
Let us give him some bread,	Donnons-lui du pain,
Let us give him some,	Donnons-lui-en,
Give some to them,	Donnez-leur-en,
Let us give them the napkins,	Donnons-leur les serviettes,
Give them to us,	Donnez-les-nous.

With negative imperatives the pronouns are placed as usual before the verb.

Do not carry them to him,	Ne les lui portez (or porte) pas,
Let us not carry any to them,	Ne leur en portons pas,
Do not carry them there,	Ne les y portez (or porte) pas,
Let us not carry any there,	N' y en portons pas,
Send them to the village,	Envoyez-les au village,
Send them there,	Envoie-les-y, (*See Less.* 19, *Rem.* 2,)
Send some there,	{ Envoyez-y-en, or, Envoies-y-en.

REMARK 1. The second person singular imperative, if ending with a vowel, takes an *s* when followed by *y* or *en*, as in this last phrase; so also,

Send some to thy father,	Envoies-en à ton père.

RULE III. We have seen, (*Less.* 26,) that *y*, joined to the other objective pronouns, is placed before *en* and after all the others. With the affirmative imperative, however, *me* and *te*, become *moi* and *toi*, and both these, as also *le* and *la*, are placed after *y*.

Take me there,	Menez-y-moi,
Conduct thyself there well,	Conduis-y-toi bien,
Take him there. A *ball*,	Menez-y-le*. Un *bal*,
To go to the ball. *To turn*,	Aller au bal. *Tourner*,
To finish. His *due*,	*Finir*, (*de* before infinitive.) Son *dû*,
But little, scarcely any,	*Ne* before the verb, *guère* after it; *guère* without a verb,

* Instead, however, of *le* or *la* with *y* after the verb, it is better to change the construction, as, *Je vous prie de l' y mener.*

That man has scarcely any money,	Cet homme n' a guère d' argent,
He has hardly any,	Il n' en a guère,
Do you wish for much beef? No, sir; but little,	Voulez-vous beaucoup de bœuf? Non, M.; guère,
More, further, furthermore,	*Davantage.*

Remark 2. *Davantage* is never followed by a noun, but is always used absolutely.

That pleases me more,	Cela me plaît davantage,
He can do for you further,	Il peut faire davantage pour vous,
Have you received more money?	Avez-vous reçu encore de l' argent?
I have received no more,	Je n' en ai pas reçu davantage,
Written,	*Écrit,* (past participle of *écrire,*)
Taken,	*Pris,* (past participle of *prendre,*)
Followed,	*Suivi,* (past participle of *suivre,*)
I have written the letters,	J' ai écrit les lettres,
He has taken them,	Il les a prises,
He has followed us. *Late,*	Il nous a suivis. *Tard,*
Gone,	*Allé,* (past participle of *aller,*)
Come,	*Venu,* (past participle of *venir.*)

In forming the past indefinite tense, *allé, venu,* and several other participles, are joined to the present tense of *être* instead of *avoir;* and then, the participle always agrees with the subject of the verb; thus:

Je suis venu,	*tu es venu,*	*il est venu,*
I have come,	thou hast come,	he has come,
nous sommes venus,	*vous êtes venus,*	*ils sont venus,*
we have come,	you have come,	they have come.

Near to,	*Près,* (*de* before noun, pronoun or inf.,)
He has gone near the fountain,	Il *est allé* près de la fontaine,
He has been near the fountain,	Il a été près de la fontaine.

A été implies that the person has returned, *est allé* that he has not. This distinction, however, is only applied to the third person.

I have come near you,	Je suis *venu* près de vous,
Have they gone near him?	Sont-ils *allés* près de lui?
She has gone to the ball,	Elle est *allée* au bal,
We have come to your house,	Nous sommes *venus* chez vous,
You have come here,	Vous êtes *venus* (or *venu*) ici.

Why do you turn your head? I turn it because I hear a noise. Do you turn your head because one calls you? No, sir; I turn it because I wish to see him who is coming. Does that scholar study without turning his eyes? He studies without turning his eyes, but he always turns them when one speaks to him. Do you finish your

task early? I commonly finish it early. Do you finish your task earlier (*de meilleure heure*) than your brother? We finish them at the same time. When you went to school did you finish your lessons early? We always finished them early. Did that boy finish his early? He and his brother finished theirs late. Does the master always give you your due? He always gives each one his due. Has the grocer much flour? He has hardly any. Has he not received more? He has not received any more. Have you written your letters? I have written them. Who has taken the plates and the napkins? The servant has taken them. Has not that man followed us? He has followed us a long time. Where is your sister? She has gone to the ball. Have your brothers gone to the ball? They have been there. Have your relations come? Yes, miss; they came yesterday evening. When did your brother-in-law come? He came yesterday morning.

Did you come from the ball late? Have you been near my house (*près de chez moi?*) Give me thy book. Lend me your knife. Let us drink the sweet liquor. Tell me those words. Let us eat these apples. Bring me the towel. Bring it to me. Carry it to him. Carry it to them. Carry it to her. Bring me the napkins. Bring them to us. Let us give them to her. Let us give them to them. Take the potatoes to the cellar. Take them there. Let us cover them with earth. Take some wool to the store. Take some there. Let us go to the play. Let us go there. Do not give him the sweet liquor. Do not give it to him. Let us not give it to her. Let us not give it to them. Take me to the play. Take me there. Did those ladies come on this side or on that side? Carry the potatoes to the kitchen; has not the cook need of them? That lady is not so charming as you think; (*Less.* 48, *Rem.* 1;) has she not a malicious look?

London is the principal (*principale*) city, or the capital (*capitale*) of England. Edinburg (*Edinbourg*) is the capital of Scotland, and Dublin is the capital of Ireland. These three kingdoms belong (*sont*) to the same prince whom they call king of England. To the east of England, one finds Denmark, of which the capital is Copenhagen (*Copenhague.*) The capital of Sweden is Stockholm.

55. CINQUANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

To die, died,	*Mourir*, (irregular,) past participle, *mort*,

Je meurs,	*tu meurs,*	*il meurt,*	*nous mourons,*	*vous mourez,*	*ils meurent,*
I die,	thou diest,	he dies,	we die,	you die,	they die.

To be born, born,	*Naître*, (irregular,) past participle, *né*.

Je nais,	*tu nais,*	*il naît,*	*nous naissons,*	*vous naissez,*	*ils naissent,*
I am born,	thou art born,	he is born,	we are born,	you are born,	they are born.

To succeed, attain to,	*Parvenir*, (*à* before infinitive and noun,)
To change,	*Changer*, (*de* before the noun,)
You change your place,	Vous changez de place,
I change my clothes,	Je change d' habits,
He changes his hat,	Il change de chapeau.

Changer, meaning *to exchange*, requires *pour* or *contre* before the second noun; meaning *to convert*, it requires *en*.

We exchange our books for some pictures,	Nous changeons nos livres pour (or, contre) des tableaux,
He changes (converts) water into wine,	Il change de l' eau en vin,
We succeed in learning to do that,	Nous parvenons à apprendre à faire cela,
All that is born is *liable* to die,	Tout ce qui naît est *sujet* à mourir,
Trees die when it is too dry,	Les arbres meurent quand il fait trop sec,
He was born in Europe,	Il est né en Europe,
He died in America,	Il est mort en Amérique.

Mourir, *naître*, and also *tomber*, like *aller* and *venir*, form the perfect with *être* and not *avoir*; that is, they have *être* for their auxiliary.

The *day*, all the day through,	La *journée*, toute la journée.

Remark 1. We use *jour* when we speak of the day without regard to duration; *journée* when we refer to the whole duration of the day.

He came the first day of June,	Il est venu le premier jour de juin,
He traveled all day.	Il a voyagé toute la journée.

The same distinction is made in the following.

The *year*. The *year through*,	L' *an*. L' *année*,
The morning. The *morning through*,	Le matin. La *matinée*,
The evening. The *evening through*,	Le soir. La *soirée*,
He works all the year,	Il travaille toute l' année,

He was at my house all the morning,	Il a été chez moi toute la matinée,
She sings all the evening,	Elle chante toute la soirée,
I have a cold,	J' ai un rhume,
A *cold.* The *brain*,	Un *rhume.* Le *cerveau*,
A cold in the head,	Un rhume de cerveau,
A cold in the *breast*,	Un rhume de *poitrine*,
I have a pain in the breast,	J' ai mal à la (or de) poitrine,
His *spectacles.* *Pure*,	Ses *lunettes*, (feminine.) *Pur*,
Credulous. *Incredulous*,	*Crédule.* *Incrédule*,
With good will, *heartily*,	*De bon cœur*,
He can not read without spectacles,	Il ne peut pas lire sans lunettes,
He consents to that with good will,	Il consent à cela de bon cœur.

Remark 2. When a present object is pointed out, *there is*, *there are*, *here is*, *here are*, instead of being rendered into French by *il y a*, are rendered as follows.

There is, *there are*, *behold*,	*Voilà*,
Here is, *here are*, *behold*,	*Voici*,
There is your cloak. There it is,	Voilà votre manteau. Le voilà,
Here are your spectacles,	Voici vos lunettes,
Here they are,	Les voici,
There is some pure water,	Voilà de l' eau pure,
There is some,	En voilà,
Here I am. There he is,	Me voici. Le voilà,
Here we are. There they are,	Nous voici. Les voilà,
He is looking for the towel which is here,	Il cherche l' essuie-main que voici,
I seek him who is there,	Je cherche celui que voilà,
He calls her who is here,	Il appelle celle que voici,
Here she comes,	La voici qui vient,
Here is what I am looking for,	Voici ce que je cherche,
There is what he wishes for,	Voilà ce qu' il veut,
There is the table on which there are some plates,	Voilà la table sur laquelle il y a des assiettes,
Here is the chair under which there is a piece of linen,	Voici la chaise sous laquelle il y a une pièce de toile.

Remark 3. *Que* is sometimes used for *pendant que*, *parce que*, and other phrases ending in *que* repeated in a second clause. It is used in the same way also for *comme*, *quand*, and *si*.

While he was breakfasting and *while* he was talking, we read,	Pendant qu' il déjeunait et *qu'* il parlait, nous lisions,
As it was late and *as* you were not here, he went home,	Comme il était tard et *que* vous n' étiez pas ici, il est allé chez lui.

Do the poor often die of hunger (*de faim?*) They often die of hunger in Ireland and in other countries of Europe. Do some die of

cold? Some die of cold in winter. Does not he who has no courage suffer much? Yes, sir; he dies a thousand times. Where is the old soldier? He is dead. When did he die? He died the tenth of July. Where was he born? He was born in Germany, the twelfth of August, seventeen hundred eighty-four. Are not chickens produced (born) from eggs? Yes, sir; chickens and all birds are produced (born) from eggs. Does that scholar succeed in learning French? He succeeds in learning all that he undertakes. Do those merchants succeed in becoming (*à être*) rich? They do not succeed in it, (*Less.* 27, *Rem.* 1.) Why do the travelers change their clothes? They change them (*en*, *Less.* 24, *Rem.* 2) because they are wet. Do you change your French books for English ones? No, sir; I change them for pictures. Was that child born this year or last year? He was born last year. Does the barber work all the year? He works with good will all the year. Does that young lady sing much? She sings all the morning and all the evening. What is the matter with that man? He has a cold, and it has fallen (*est tombé*) upon his (*lui*) breast. Is not that child too credulous? He is too credulous; he believes all that they tell him. That man looks incredulous; is he not incredulous? He is very incredulous.

There is my exercise; is it not very short? Here is the best scholar; has he recited all the words of his lesson? There is a pure sky and without a cloud; is it not beautiful? There is the master; does he not give a lesson to each scholar in his turn? Does each scholar recite in his turn? There is the charming lady; does she wish for any thing else? Does she wish for nothing else? Here is the man whom you are looking for. Here he is. Here I am. Here we are. You are calling the servants; there they are. Here is the church to which we go on Sundays. There is the school to which my brother goes. Are you looking for the man who is here? Are you looking for him who is there? Do you call her who is here? Here is your short stick; do you need it? There is the man whose neck is short; is it not too short? Is he coming on this side or on that side That barber looks malicious; is he not malicious? That book is charming; do you wish for any thing else? Do you wish for nothing else?

To the east of Sweden one finds Russia, which is a very large country; its capital city is Moscow: but to-day Petersburg (*Pétersbourg*) is its (*en*) most beautiful city, and the residence (*résidence*) of the emperor and of the court (*la cour*) of Russia.

56. CINQUANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, RELATIVES, ETC.

To acquire, acquired,	*Acquérir*, (irreg.,) past participle, *acquis*.
J' acquiers, tu acquiers, il acquiert,	*nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils acquièrent,*
I acquire, thou acquirest, he acquires,	we acquire, you acquire. they acquire.
Run,	*Couru*, (past participle of *courir*,)
Lived,	*Vécu*, (past participle of *vivre*,)
That merchant acquires credit,	Ce marchand acquiert du crédit,
I have run all the morning,	J' ai couru toute la matinée,
He has lived a hundred years,	Il a vécu cent ans,
To clothe, clothed, clad,	*Vêtir*, past participle, *vêtu*,
He can not clothe his children,	Il ne peut pas vêtir ses enfants,
He is well clad,	Il est bien vêtu,
To sew, sewed,	*Coudre*, (irreg.,) past participle, *cousu*.
Je couds, tu couds, il coud,	*nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent,*
I sew, thou sewest, he sews,	we sew, you sew, they sew
That tailor sews well,	Ce tailleur coud bien,
He has sewed some buttons on my coat,	Il a cousu des boutons à mon habit,
A *question*. To ask questions,	Une *question*. Faire des questions,
Beauty. Nature,	La *beauté*. La *nature*,
The *beard. Thick,*	La *barbe*. *Épaisse*, (feminine of *épais*,)
His beard is thick,	Il a la barbe épaisse,
Is there a barber near here?	Y a-t-il un barbier près d' ici?
A dollar *more*. A dollar *less*	Un dollar *de plus*. Un dollar *de moins*,
A cent *too much*. A cent *too little*,	Un sou *de trop*. Un sou *de trop peu*,
Do not give him a cent more nor a cent less,	Ne lui donnez ni un sou de plus ni un sou de moins,
He has neither too much nor too little,	Il n' a ni de trop ni de trop peu.

REMARK 1. The repetition of *le* and of the adjectives *mon, son*, etc., has been noticed, *Less.* 20, *Rem.* 2. It is to be remarked further, that this expressing in French of what is left to be understood in English is quite extensive. It applies not only to the article and possessive

adjectives, but generally to adjectives coming before the noun, to personal pronouns when separated from the verb by any word except *et*, *ou*, *ni*, to the auxiliary verbs, and to the prepositions *à* and *de*.

I buy some good gloves and stockings,	J' achète *de bons* gants et *de bons* bas,
I have excellent apples and peaches,	J' ai *d' excellentes* pommes et *d' excellentes* pêches,
I have learned my lesson and recited it,	J' *ai appris* ma leçon et je l' *ai récitée*,
He has bought the fruit and eaten it,	Il *a* acheté le fruit et il l' *a* mangé,
He speaks to you and me,	Il parle *à* vous et *à* moi,
They speak of you and him,	Ils parlent *de* vous et *de* lui.

The auxiliary and pronoun may generally be omitted in French, as in English, if no other word except the conjunction come between verbs in the same construction.

I have eaten and drunk sufficient,	J' ai mangé et bu assez,
I have written and sent the letters,	J' ai écrit et envoyé les lettres,
I see and hear him well,	Je le vois et entends bien,
At least,	*Au moins*,
From time to time, occasionally,	*De temps en temps*,
To accept. At your service,	*Accepter. A votre service*,
There is what I have at your service, do you accept it?	Voilà ce que j' ai à votre service, l' acceptez-vous?
He owes me a hundred dollars at least,	Il me doit cent gourdes au moins,
He comes to see me from time to time,	Il vient me voir de temps en temps,
The nature of God is to be good,	La nature de Dieu est d' être bon,
I admire the beauty of the earth,	J' admire la beauté de la terre.

REMARK 2. *Qui*, *que*, *dont*, are generally to be preferred to *lequel*, *duquel*. The latter should be employed, however, when it prevents an ambiguity; as,

I have seen your friend's sister who is coming here,	J' ai vu la sœur de votre ami, *laquelle* vient ici,
I have read the lady's book, which I admire much,	J' ai lu le livre de la dame, *lequel* j' admire beaucoup,
I am acquainted with the doctor's daughter of whom you speak,	Je connais la fille du docteur, *de laquelle* vous parlez.

It will be readily seen that *qui* instead of *laquelle* in the first sentence, *que* instead of *lequel* in the second, and *dont* instead of *de laquelle* in the third, would render all the three equivocal.

REMARK 3. *Duquel* is to be used instead of *dont*, when the antecedent of the relative (the word to which it relates) is followed by a preposition.

There is the man with whose son you are acquainted,	Voilà l' homme *dont* vous connaissez le fils,
There is the man with whose son you traveled,	Voilà l' homme avec le fils *duquel* vous avez voyagé.

In this latter instance, *homme*, the antecedent, is followed by a preposition, therefore *duquel* is used; in the former, it is not, therefore *dont* is preferred.

Does that man acquire credit? He acquires credit and profit. Has he acquired money? He has acquired money and friends. Has not that poor boy run too much? He has run all the day. Have you lived long in this country? I have lived here eighteen years. Does your rich neighbor think often of the (*aux*, Less. 27) poor? Yes, sir; he wishes to clothe all the poor of his village. Has he clothed many (of them?) He has clothed them all. Do those maid-servants sew well? They sew well, but they do not sew so well as the tailor. Have they sewed any thing for you? They have sewed some buttons on my coat. Does not that child talk much? Yes, sir; he has asked (*fait*) me question upon (*sur*) question. Do you not admire the beauties of nature? I admire much the beauties of the sky and of the earth. What is that man looking for? He is looking for the barber, because his beard is long and thick. Is there a church near here? There is a church near here, and near the church there is a school. Does the master wish for more scholars? No, sir; he wishes for neither more nor less. Is there too much sugar in your tea? No, sir; there is neither too much nor too little. How many cows has your neighbor? He has five at least. Does your friend ever write to you? He writes to me occasionally.

You seek for fruit; there is some at your service, do you accept it? Do you accept what I offer you? Does the general accept your cousin for a son-in-law? Do you wish for coffee with milk or coffee without milk? Do you breakfast on fish or on (*de*) chicken? Have you dined on roast beef? Have you not coffee with milk at breakfast, and coffee without milk at dinner? Have you a cold in the head? Does this land produce potatoes? Do not those trees produce fine fruit? Does not that child fall often when he walks? Does it freeze here in September? Do you prefer Paris to London? Do you prefer France to England (*Less.* 49, *Rem.* 2?) Go up to your room; have you been there this morning? Is it good traveling? Is it good living in New Orleans? Is it dear living there? Is it dearer living in New Orleans than in London? That man wears spectacles; is he near-sighted? Do you always go a mile before breakfast? Why is your friend so joyful? Has the servant opened the windows?

I was pleased and you were displeased every time that we dined at the general's; why (was) that (*pourquoi cela?*) Because you loved the general and I (*et moi je*) did not love him. Will not the captain's daughter of whom you spoke to me come here this evening (*See Rem.* 2?) Are you acquainted with the sisters of the Frenchman of whom you received money the day before yesterday?

---

57. CINQUANTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

TO GRIND,		GROUND,	MOUDRE, (IRR.) PAST PART. MOULU,		
Je mouds,	*tu mouds,*	*il moud,*	*nous moulons,*	*vous moulez,*	*ils moulent,*
I grind,	thou grindest,	he grinds,	we grind,	you grind,	they grind.

The *mill.* The *grain,*	Le *moulin.* Le *grain*, les *grains*,
This mill grinds too coarse,	Ce moulin moud trop gros,
He has ground the grain,	Il a moulu les grains.

TO RESOLVE, TO SOLVE, RESOLVED,			RESOUDRE, (IRR.) P. P. RESOLU, also RESOUS*		
Je résous,	*tu résous,*	*il résout,*	*nous résolvons,*	*vous résolvez,*	*ils résolvent,*
I resolve,	thou resolvest.	he resolves,	we resolve,	you resolve,	they resolve.

Peace. War,	La *paix.* La *guerre*,
Have they resolved upon peace or war?	A-t-on résolu la paix ou la guerre?
He has solved the question,	Il a résolu la question.

TO MILK,		MILKED,	TRAIRE, (IRR.) PAST PART. TRAIT,		
Je trais,	*tu trais,*	*il trait,*	*nous trayons,*	*vous trayez,*	*ils traient,*
I milk.	thou milkest,	he milks,	we milk,	you milk,	they milk.

The *goat*, (female,)	La *chèvre*,
He is going to milk the cows,	Il va traire les vaches,
He has milked the goats,	Il a trait les chèvres.

RULE. Verbs of THE FIRST CONJUGATION, (infinitive in ER,) as we have seen, *Less.* 39, form THE PAST PARTICIPLE by changing the *er* into *é.*

---

* *Résous* is used only in the sense of changed; as: *The fog is changed to rain; Le brouillard est résous en pluie.* It is not used in the feminine.

Those of the SECOND CONJUGATION, (infinitive in IR,) form it by changing the *ir* into *i*, except those in *enir*, which change it into *u*. Thus:

INFINITIVE,			PAST PARTICIPLE,	
Chois-IR,	to choose,	makes	*choisi*,	*chosen*,
Sort-IR,	to go out,	"	*sorti*,	*gone out*,
Rempl-IR,	to fill,	"	*rempli*,	*filled*,
Part-IR,	to depart,	"	*parti*,	*departed*,
T-ENIR,	to hold,	"	*tenu*,	*held*,
Parv-ENIR,	to succeed,	"	*parvenu*,	*succeeded.*

Those of the THIRD CONJUGATION, (infinitive in OIR,) if the verb end in *voir* preceded by a vowel or diphthong, form it by changing all these letters into *u*; if it does not so end, by changing *oir* into *u*. Thus:

INFINITIVE,			PAST PARTICIPLE,	
Rec-EVOIR,	to receive,	makes	*regu*,	*received*,
D-EVOIR,	to owe,	"	*dû*,*	*owed*,
P-OUVOIR,	to be able,	"	*pu*,	*been able*,
S-AVOIR,	to know,	"	*su*,	*known*,
V-OIR,	to see,	"	*vu*,	*seen*,
Voul-OIR,	to wish for,	"	*voulu*,	*wished for.*

Those of the FOURTH CONJUGATION, (infinitive in *re*,) form it by changing the *re*, with the vowel or diphthong immedi ately preceding, if there be one, into *u*; except those in *uire*, which change *re* into *t*; those in *aindre*, *eindre*, and *oindre*, which change *dre* into *t*; and those in *aître* and *oître*, which change those terminations into *u*. Thus:

INFINITIVE,			PAST PARTICIPLE,	
Rend-RE,	to give back,	makes	*rendu*,	*given back*
Perd-RE,	to lose,	"	*perdu*,	*lost*,
Vend-RE,	to sell,	"	*vendu*,	*sold*,
L-IRE,	to read,	"	*lu*,	*read*,
B-OIRE,	to drink,	"	*bu*,	*drunk*,
Trad-UIRE,	to translate,	"	*traduit*,	*translated*,
Pl-AINDRE,	to pity,	"	*plaint*,	*pitied*,
Conn-AÎTRE,	to be acquainted with,	"	*connu*,	*been acquainted with.*

REMARK 1. The past participles which differ in form from the above rules, the learner has been made acquainted with in the preceding lessons. They are the following:

* The circumflex accent over *dû* is a slight irregularity. It is to distinguish it from *du*, the contraction of *de le*.

Acquis,*	*acquired*,	past part. of	Acquérir,	Offert,	*offered*,	past part. of	Offrir,
Couru,	*run*,	"	Courir,	Ouvert,	*opened*,	"	Ouvrir,
Cousu,	*sewed*,	"	Coudre,	Pris,	*taken*,	"	Prendre,
Couvert,	*covered*,	"	Couvrir,	Résolu, Résous,	*resolved*,	"	Résoudre,
Dit,	*said*,	"	Dire,				
Écrit,	*written*,	"	Écrire,	Ri,	*laughed*,	"	Rire,
Fait,	*made*,	"	Faire,	Souffert,	*suffered*,	"	Souffrir,
Mis,	*put*,	"	Mettre,	Suivi,	*followed*,	"	Suivre,
Mort,	*died*,	"	Mourir,	Trait,	*milked*,	"	Traire,
Moulu,	*ground*,	"	Moudre,	Vécu,	*lived*,	"	Vivre,
Né,	*born*,	"	Naître,	Vêtu,	*clothed*,	"	Vêtir.

The above with their compounds, comprise almost all the irregular past participles.†

Have you filled the bottle with pure wine?	Avez-vous rempli la bouteille de vin pur?
I have filled it with it,	Je l' en ai remplie,
He has chosen us for his friends,	Il nous a choisis pour ses amis,
Who has held your horses?	Qui a tenu vos chevaux?
This boy has held them,	Ce garçon les a tenus,
Has the countryman sold his cows?	Le paysan a-t-il vendu ses vaches?
He has sold them,	Il les a vendues.

Have you been able to find as good (*d' aussi bonne*) flour as this? I have found some better, but I was not able to buy it. Has that wicked boy given back to you all the fruit which he took? He has given it back to me. Who has drunk the bottles of wine which they sent you on Friday? Our friends who dined with us yesterday drank them. Has that poor man any money? Yes, sir; I pitied him, and I gave him some last evening (*hier au soir.*) Did you not owe him something? No, sir; I owed him nothing. Did you know the business of that man? I knew it well. Has the shoemaker been willing to sew my shoes? He has been willing to sew them, but he has not been able. What has your neighbor lost? She has lost a piece of linen, a cow, and some (*quelques*) goats. Have you read this German book? I have read it and I have translated it. Have you been

---

* The other compounds of *quérir* form this participle in the same way as *acquérir*. They are *Conquérir*, *Enquérir*, and *Requérir*.

† The following complete the list:

s' Asseoir,	to sit,	makes	*assis*,	seated,
Bénir,	to bless,	"	*béni* and *béni*,	blessed,
Circoncire,	to circumcise,	"	*circoncis*,	circumcised,
Frire,	to fry,	"	*frit*,	fried,
Clore,	to close,	"	*clos*,	closed,
Suffire,	to suffice,	"	*suffi*,	sufficed,

Surseoir, to supersede, forms this participle like *s' asseoir*.

Luire, *Reluire*, and *Nuire*, make *lui*, *relui*, and *nui*.

acquainted with the lady who has translated so many German books? I have been well acquainted with her. Is the cook going to grind the coffee? He has ground it. What are they (*on*) doing at the mill? They are grinding the grain which we carried there. Have they resolved upon peace or war? They have resolved upon peace. Has the servant-woman milked the cows? She has milked the cows and the goats.

Was it (*faisait-il*) good living in London when you were there? Was it as dear living there as in New York? Does that man look so joyful because he has finished (*See Rule for past participle*) his business, and (*que*) has received his due? You are near-sighted; why do you not wear spectacles? The sun shines; does it not rain also at the same time? Can you tell me what are the four seasons of the year? Is not summer the most beautiful season? Is it foggy or does it rain? Why did you not open the windows? I did open them, but it was too cold and I shut them again; (*de nouveau;*) is it not too cold? Were you not studying while I was traveling? Let us go up to our room; have you learnt* (*appris*) your lesson? Is not the sky covered with clouds? Has the master given a lesson to each scholar? Are they easy or difficult? Mine is easy; is not yours more difficult than mine? The master is sick; are you not very sorry for it (*en?*)

There is the man whose son you are looking for. (*See Less.* 56, *Rem.* 2 *and* 3.) There is the man with whose son you dined on Wednesday. Napoleon was a great general; Washington was a great man. The latter sought (imperfect of *chercher*) to render America free (*libre*) and happy, the former seemed (*semblait*) to believe that it was enough to (*de*) render France glorious (*glorieuse*) and formidable (*redoutable.*)

58. CINQUANTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

PARTICIPLE, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

To build. *To pass.* A *house.* A *rock,* *Bâtir.* *Passer.* Une *maison.* Un *rocher*
A *stone.* A *brick.* What *age?* Une *pierre.* Une *brique.* Quel *âge?*

* *Apprendre* is compounded of *prendre*, and forms its participle in the same way.

What *distance?* An *hour.* *Half,*	Quelle *distance?* Une *heure.* *Demi,*
A *quarter.* A *step, pace,*	Un *quart.* Un *pas,*
Quite, perfectly, entirely,	*Tout-à-fait,*
Far. *As far as, to,*	*Loin.* *Jusque,*
About. About a *mile,*	*Environ.* Environ un *mille,*
He builds a house of wood; we build one of stone or of brick,	Il bâtit une maison de bois; nous en bâtissons une de pierre ou de brique,
How far is it from here to that rock?	Quelle distance y a-t-il d' ici à ce rocher?
It is not quite half a mile,	Il n' y a pas tout-à-fait un demi-mille,
Is it far from here to your house?	Y a-t-il loin d' ici chez vous?
It is about two miles and a quarter,	Il y a environ deux milles et (un) quart,
It is a mile and a half to the mill,	Il y a un mille et demi d' ici au moulin.

REMARK 1. In such sentences *d' ici* is not to be omitted unless *jusque* be used.

It is a mile and three quarters to your father's,	Il y a un mille et trois quarts d' ici chez votre père,
I shall go *as far as* the village,	J' irai *jusqu'* au village,
He passed more than two hours here,	Il a passé plus de deux heures ici.

REMARK 2. *Than* before a number is rendered in French by *de.*

We pass more *than* six hours a day in studying,	Nous passons plus *de* six heures par jour à étudier,
I have passed more than two hours and a half in writing,	J' ai passé plus de deux heures et demie à écrire.

REMARK 3. *Demi* is an adjective. It is invariable when placed before its noun, to which it is then always joined by a hyphen; when placed after the noun it agrees with it in gender and is always singular: Thus,

Half an hour. An hour and a half,	Une demi-heure. Une heure et demie,
The *half,*	La *moitié,* (noun,)
He gives half of his money to the poor,	Il donne la moitié de son argent aux pauvres,
The age of man is not more than eighty years,	L' âge de l' homme n' est pas plus de quatre-vingts ans.

In speaking of age, the French often use the verb *to have* where the English employ the verb *to be.*

How old are you?	Quel âge avez-vous?
I am less than twelve years old,	J' ai moins de douze ans,
How many years old is your brother?	Combien d' années votre frère a-t-il?
He is more than fifteen years old,	Il a plus de quinze ans,
My little sister is not quite ten years old,	Ma petite sœur n' a pas tout-à-fait dix ans,
How far is it to that brick house?	Quelle distance y a-t-il d' ici à cette maison de brique?
It is only a hundred paces,	Il n' y a que cent pas,

They pass half an hour in writing and two hours and a half in studying,

Ils passent une demi-heure à écrire et deux heures et demie à étudier.

Let the learner give the past participle of each of the following verbs, according to the rules in the preceding lesson (57.) *The terminating letters, which mark the changes to be made, are in italics.*

Fin*ir*,*	to finish,	Battre,	to beat,	Attendre,	to wait for,
Sent*ir*,	to feel,	Croire,	to believe,	Eteindre,	to extinguish,
Consent*ir*,	to consent,	Entendre,	to hear,	Reconnaître,	to recognize,
Bâtir,	to build,	Conduire,	to conduct,	Paraître,	to appear,
Aperc*evoir*,	to perceive,	Produire,	to produce.		

Let the learner give the past participle of the following compound verbs also; bearing in mind, that compounds follow the model of their simple verbs, given Less. 57.

Compounds of *Venir*, { *Revenir*, to return, *Parvenir*, to succeed,
Compound of *Mettre*, *Promettre*, to promise,
Compounds of *Prendre*, { *Apprendre*, to learn, *Comprendre*, to comprehend, *Entreprendre*, to undertake.

Do they build the houses of stone in your village? They do not build many of stone; they build more of brick and of wood. Are you not building a stone house? No, sir; I built one of stone in August, and now (*à présent*) I am building one of brick. Do you pass all the year in the country? No, sir; I pass half the year in (*à*) the country, and half in (*en*) the city. Does that scholar pass the day† (*journée*) in studying? No, sir; he passes the morning in studying and the evening in reading. How much time do you pass in writing? I pass half an hour a day in writing, and two hours and a half in working in the garden. What are those workmen building? They are building a brick house. How far is it (from here) to that rock? It is only two hundred paces. Is it far (from here) to the market? It is a mile and three quarters. Is it far to the river? It is not quite a quarter of a mile. Are there rocks in the river? There are rocks under the water. Is it quite a hundred paces to the fountain which comes out (*sort*) of the rock? It is quite half a mile. How old is your cousin? He is about fifteen years old. How many years old are you? I am more than twelve years old. Have you been as far as the mill? I have been as far as the village.

Our neighbor appears displeased; is he not angry? That woman

* *Finir*, according to the rule, makes *fini*, finished. *Sentir* makes *senti*, felt. *Consentir*, *consenti*, consented. *Bâtir*, *bâti*, built. *Apercevoir*, *aperçu*, perceived. *Battre*, *battu*, beaten, etc.

† The meaning here is the *entire day*, as, in the next sentence, the *entire morning* and the *entire evening*.

looks crazy; why does she weep? Will you come to my house to-morrow morning or to-morrow evening? Are your brothers out of the city? Is not the king out of his kingdom? Are there many potatoes in the cellar? Does the servant cover them with earth? Why do you cover your face with a handkerchief? We suffer from heat in summer; do you not suffer from it also? Have they consented to give us our due? Do those workmen consent to build your house? Has (*est*) the servant gone to the cellar? Do serpents (*serpents*) change their skin every year (*tous les ans?*) (*See Less.* 55.) Have they not the skin covered with scales (*écailles?*) Is not their skin very hard (*See Less.* 30, *Rem.* 1?) Does the servant cover the plates because it is dusty (*il fait de la poussière?*)

They have brought me these towels; are they yours (*à vous?*) They are (so.) (*See Less.* 53, *Rem.* 3.) There are two little boys; are they your brothers? They are (so.) Are those ladies French? They are (so.) Are they not your neighbors? They are (so.) (*See Less.* 52, *Rem.* 3.) That woman has passed the half of her life in England; is she not English? She is (so.) Are there some who desire to depart (*sortir*) from life? That man gains his living by making bricks; does he make (*de*) good ones?

59. CINQUANTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

THE PLUPERFECT TENSE is formed, in French as in English, by joining the *past participle* to the *imperfect tense of the auxiliary.**

Had you finished your lesson when I saw you?	*Aviez*-vous *fini* votre leçon quand je vous ai vu?
I had finished it,	Je l' *avais finie*,
He had dined when we went to his house,	*Il avait dîné* quand nous sommes allés chez lui,
They had breakfasted when they came here, and we had breakfasted also,	Ils *avaient déjeuné* quand ils sont venus ici, et *nous avions* déjeuné aussi,

* The learner has already seen that most verbs have AVOIR for their auxilary; a few have ÊTRE.

I had gone to school when he came, and my brothers had gone there also,	J' *étais allé* à l' école quand il est venu, et mes frères y *étaient allés* aussi,
To arrive, to happen,	*Arriver.*

Arriver takes *être* for its auxiliary.

His father had died when he arrived,	Son père *était mort* quand il est arrivé,
Had you arrived in the city when you received the letter?	*Étiez*-vous *arrivés* en ville quand vous avez reçu la lettre?
We had arrived there,	Nous y *étions arrivés*,
Hadst thou breakfasted when I arrived?	*Avais*-tu *déjeuné* quand je suis arrivé?
Now, at present,	*À présent, maintenant,*
To avoid,	*Éviter,* (*de* before infinitive,)
To clean. To cough,	*Nettoyer. Tousser,*
A *minute,*	Une *minute,*
Every year. Every month,	Tous les ans. Tous les mois,
Every week. Every day,	Toutes les semaines. Tous les jours,
Every morning. Every evening,	Tous les matins. Tous les soirs,
Every hour. Every minute,	Toutes les heures. Toutes les minutes
Whence, from where,	*D' où,*
From where do you come?	D' où venez-vous?
To go for. Elsewhere,	*Aller chercher. Ailleurs,*
Are you going for the horses?	Allez-vous chercher les chevaux?
Go for them,	Allez les chercher,
Let us go for some,	Allons en chercher,
Let us go for one,	Allons en chercher un,
Has the servant gone for some wine?	Le domestique est-il allé chercher du vin?
He has gone for some,	Il en est allé chercher,
He will go for some water,	Il ira chercher de l' eau,
He will go for some. A *boot,*	Il en ira chercher. Une *botte.*

The verb *aller* with an infinitive expresses an immediate future.

We are (now) going for our books,	Nous allons chercher nos livres,
He is (now) going to finish his work,	Il va finir son ouvrage,
I am (now) going to see my brother,	Je vais voir mon frère,
During all the night,	*Pendant* toute la nuit,
During all the week,	Pendant toute la semaine,
The *number*. The number of his house,	Le *numéro*. Le numéro de sa maison,
The *number*. The number ten,	Le *nombre*. Le nombre dix.

Numéro applies only to a marked series; *nombre* is a collection of units.

He lives in Dauphin-street number twenty-five,	Il demeure (dans la) rue Dauphin (au) numéro vingt-cinq,
They were in sufficiently large number,	Ils étaient en assez grand nombre,
The *mountain*. The *top*, to the top,	La *montagne*. Le *haut*, au haut,

The *bottom*, to the bottom, below,	Le *bas*, au bas,
Danger,	Le *danger*,
Is there danger in ascending to the top of the mountain?	Y a-t-il du danger à monter au haut de la montagne?
How far is it to the bottom of the mountain?	Quelle distance y a-t-il d' ici au bas de la montagne?
Do you avoid these men or those men?	Évitez-vous ces hommes-ci ou ces hommes-là?
I avoid these and those,	J' évite ceux-ci et ceux-là,
He cleans my boots,	Il nettoie mes bottes,
He has finished his lesson, and now he is reading,	Il a fini sa leçon, et à présent il lit,
Do you cough often?	Toussez-vous souvent?
I cough every five minutes,	Je tousse toutes les cinq minutes,
I do not know from whence he comes,	Je ne sais pas d' où il vient,
I have seen that elsewhere,	J' ai vu cela ailleurs.

Did you feel (*senti*) the cold this morning in church? I did not feel it much. Did you perceive (*aperçus*) us in Dauphin-street this morning? I perceived you far off (*de loin.*) Had some one beaten (*battu*) that child this morning when he wept? No, sir; he wept from anger (*rage.*) Had you built your brick house when you bought the stone one? I had built the brick one and the wooden one. Do you clean your boots every morning? The servant cleans them every morning; I do not clean them. Can one always avoid misfortunes? No one can always avoid them. Why do you avoid those men? We avoid them because they are bad. Does not that man cough much? He coughs every five minutes, and I cough much also. Where had you come from when I saw you to-day? I had come from the mountain. Had your brothers recited their lessons when you recited yours? They had recited them. Had your neighbors arrived when you went to their house this morning? They had arrived. Had that merchant acquired much credit when you were acquainted with him? He had not acquired much. Had miss C. gone to the ball when you went to her house this evening? She had gone there. Hadst thou given the workmen their due when we saw them? I had given it to them.

Is there elsewhere as pure water as this? Has the servant gone for some milk? Have you written during the whole day? I have

hardly any (*guère*) money; can you lend me some? That lady is hardly less than (*n' a guère moins de*) thirty years old; how old is her sister? Do you live at number forty? How far is it to the bottom of the mountain? Is there danger in passing that river? Do the servants clean your boots and shoes every evening? Is it far to the top of the mountain? It is hardly less than three miles; do you wish to go there? Had you written your letter when I wrote mine? This young lady is beautiful, but that one is more (so) (*l' est davantage.*) That man has followed us here; (*jusqu' ici;*) does he wish to follow us further (*See Less.* 54, *Rem.* 2?) I finished my lesson late; did you finish yours late also? Did you go to school this morning early or late? What is your brother doing now (*maintenant?*)

I had not yet breakfasted this morning when thou arrivedest; for (*car*) thou knowest that I always breakfast late. A person asked (*demandait à*) one of his friends, why he had married (*épousé*) a woman small and thin (*maigre.*) "It is because (*C' est que*) I have always thought that of all the evils which afflict (*affligent*) us, a prudent (*prudent*) man ought always to choose the least."

60. SOIXANTIÈME LEÇON.

PASSIVE VERB.

To praise. To blame,	*Louer. Blâmer,*
To reward. To punish,	*Récompenser. Punir,*
To esteem. To despise,	*Estimer. Mépriser,*
To hate, hated,	*Haïr*, (irregular,*) past participle, *haï.*

Je hais,	*tu hais,*	*il hait,*	*nous haïssons,*	*vous haïssez,*	*ils haïssent,*
I hate,	thou hatest,	he hates,	we hate,	you hate,	they hate.

RULE. THE PASSIVE VERB is formed in French, as in English, by joining the *past participle* to the auxiliary *to be,* (*être.*)

The participle must agree in gender and number with the subject of the verb.

* The only irregularity is the omission of the diaresis in some of the persons.

I *am loved*,	Je *suis*, { *aimé* or *aimée*,
Thou *art loved*,	Tu es, { *aimé* or *aimée*,
He *is blamed*. She *is blamed*,	Il *est blâmé*. Elle *est blâmée*,
We *are rewarded*,	Nous *sommes récompensés* or *récompensées*,
You *are rewarded*,	Vous *êtes*, { *récompensé* or *récompensée*, *récompensés* or *récompensées*

When *vous* refers to but one, the participle, as well as adjective agreeing with it, is singular

They *are punished*,	Ils, or elles, *sont punis*, or *punies*,
I *have been esteemed*,	J' *ai été estimé*, or *estimée*,
We *had been despised*,	Nous *avions été méprisés* or *méprisées*,
You *will be hated*,	Vous *serez*, { *haï* or *haïe*, *haïs* or *haïes*,
Ignorant. Diligent,	*Ignorant. Diligent*,
Negligent. Studious,	*Négligent. Studieux*,
The *thief*, *robber*. A *globe*,	Le *voleur*. Un *globe*,
The *form*, *figure*, also *face*,	La *forme*, la *figure*,
By. By water. By land,	*Par*. Par eau. Par terre,
The *place*. In that place,	Le *lieu*. Dans ce lieu-là,
In the place of, *instead of*,	*Au lieu de*, (often followed by the inf.,)
To correct. To play,	*Corriger. Jouer*,
He plays instead of correcting his exercise,	Il joue au lieu de corriger son thème,
He goes by water instead of going by land,	Il va par eau au lieu d' aller par terre.

Remark 1. In reference to the sentiments of the heart, *by* before the agent is rendered by *de*; in actions purely physical or mental, it is rendered by *par*.

She is loved by her friends,	Elle est aimée de ses amis,
He is punished by his master,	Il est puni par son maître,
The earth has the form of a globe,	La terre a la figure d' un globe,
Thou art praised by thy relations,	Tu es loué par tes parents,
He did not believe what I told him,	Il n' a pas cru ce que je lui ai dit,
I did not hear what he said,	Je n' ai pas entendu ce qu' il a dit,
We conducted him to the church,	Nous l' avons conduit à l' église,
This country has produced gold,	Ce pays a produit de l' or,
The thieves have waited for the night,	Les voleurs ont attendu la nuit,
The wind has extinguished the light,	Le vent a éteint la lumière,
He was recognized by his *voice*,	Il a été reconnu à sa *voix*,
He appeared to be sick,	Il a paru être malade,

To neglect. He neglects to study,
Good children are praised,

Négliger. Il néglige d' étudier,
Les enfants *sages* sont loués.

Sage, applied to children, means *good*.

Art thou praised? I am praised. By whom (*par qui*) art thou praised? I am praised by the master. By whom are your brothers praised? They are praised by their friends. Who is blamed? The lazy and the negligent are blamed and punished. Have you never been blamed? We have been blamed when we have been negligent; but we have been more frequently (*plus fréquemment*) praised and rewarded. By whom are you rewarded? We are rewarded by our fathers. Has that lazy boy been punished by the master? He has been punished, and that studious one has been praised and rewarded. Who will be esteemed, and who will be despised? The diligent and the studious will be esteemed and loved, and the negligent and the ignorant will be despised. Are the wicked always despised? The wicked are always despised and hated, and the good are always esteemed and loved. Has the thief been punished? He has not been punished yet, but he will be next week. What do you hate? I hate that which is evil (*mal.*) Is that good scholar studious? He is very studious and very diligent, and is loved by the master; but his cousin is negligent and ignorant; he plays instead of studying, and he is often punished by the master. Do you correct your exercises? No, sir; the master corrects them. Why do you play instead of studying? I have learnt my lesson and have written my exercises, and now I am going to play.

That poor man appeared to be sick; what was the matter with him? There is your old friend; did you recognize him? The lights have been extinguished; who extinguished them? Did you wait for me? Have you believed all that that man has said? Did you hear what the master said to you? Where did you conduct that stranger? Have your trees produced much fruit this year? Where was that traveler born? That man is skillful; does he not succeed in all that he undertakes? Why does he change his clothes? Do you consent to change your place? Have you changed your horse for another? Do you pass the day in reading? Do you not neglect your health? Does your neighbor pass the day in working? Does he pass the

morning in working and the evening in reading? Has he neglected to do his work? Have you a cold in the head or in the breast? That man appears to be near-sighted; can he read without spectacles? That child appears to be very credulous; has he not believed all that you told him?

Cato, the Censor, (*Caton le Censeur,*) said often that he repented of (*se repentait de*) three things: first, of having passed a day without learning something, (*rien,*) (*See Less.* 34, *Rem.* 2,) then (*ensuite*) of having told a secret to any one; and finally, (*enfin,*) of having trav eled by water when he was able to go by land. I prefer to give nothing to that man; have you given any thing to him?

61. SOIXANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, NOUNS, PARTITIVES, ETC.

To send for. To smoke,	*Envoyer chercher. Fumer,*
To swim. To fit,	*Nager. Aller bien,*
Not to fit,	*Aller mal, n' aller pas bien,*
To salt. To cost,	*Saler. Coûter,*
The *volume.* The *cause,*	Le *volume.** La *cause,*
The *revolution. Fatigued, tired,*	La *révolution. Fatigué,*
A *lady's cap, head-dress,*	Une *coiffe,*
An *offer.* That *stable,*	Une *offre.* Cette *écurie,*
Can there be? There can be,	*Peut-il y avoir?* Il peut y avoir,
There can not be,	Il ne peut pas y avoir,
Do you go to church *oftener* than I?	Allez-vous à l'église *plus souvent* que moi?
I go there *less frequently* than you,	J' y vais *moins fréquemment* que vous.

For the hours of the day, *one o'clock, two o'clock, half-past two,* etc., the French use simply the number with the hour, and say, *one hour, two hours, two hours and a half,* etc.

What o'clock is it?	*Quelle heure est-ce qu' il est?*
It is late. *Is it three o'clock?*	Il est tard. *Est-il trois heures?*
It *is one o'clock.* It is two o'clock,	Il *est une heure.* Il est deux heures,

* In books, *volume* denotes that which is bound into one; *tome,* the division of a work made by the author. The former may contain several of the latter. They are sometimes, also, synonymous.

It is half-past five,	Il est cinq heures et demie,
It is a quarter after ten,	Il est dix heures et (un) quart,
It is ten minutes after six,	Il est six heures et dix minutes,
It is a quarter before nine,	Il est neuf heures moins un quart
It is twelve o'clock, *noon*,	Il est *midi*,
It is half-past twelve, (at noon,)	Il est midi et demi,
It is twelve o'clock, *midnight*,	Il est *minuit*,
It is twenty minutes before twelve, (at night,)	Il est minuit moins vingt minutes,
Do you wish to send for the doctor?	Voulez-vous envoyer chercher le médecin?
I wish to send for him,	Je veux l' envoyer chercher,
Does he wish to send for some wine?	Est-ce qu' il veut envoyer chercher du vin?
He wishes to send for some,	Il veut en envoyer chercher,
Will he send for some glasses?	Enverra-t-il chercher des verres?
Do you drink tea or coffee?	Est-ce que vous prenez le thé* ou le café?
I drink coffee in the morning and tea in the evening,	Je prends le café le matin et le thé le soir,
That cap fits that lady,	Cette coiffe va bien à cette dame,
It will fit her,	Elle lui ira bien,
He laughed in my face,	Il m' a ri au nez.

Revenir and *Parvenir*, compounds of *venir*, also take *être* for their auxiliary.

He has returned home,	Il est *revenu* chez lui,
Have you succeeded in learning to swim?	Êtes-vous *parvenu* à apprendre à nager?
Do you wish to buy some salt to salt the beef?	Est-ce que vous voulez acheter du sel pour saler le bœuf?
That work is in three large volumes, and each volume costs two dollars,	Cet ouvrage est en trois grands volumes, et chaque volume coûte deux piastres,
The sky promised us fine weather,	Le ciel nous a *promis* de beau temps,
He has learnt his lesson, and has understood it well,	Il a *appris* sa leçon, et il l' a bien *comprise*,
I have undertaken to translate this book,	J' ai *entrepris* de traduire ce livre,
The *money*, *coin*, *change*,	La *monnaie*,
Lend me the change of a dollar,	Prêtez-moi la monnaie d' un dollar.

REMARK. We have seen (*Less.* 29, *Rem.* 1) that negative partitives, where the meaning is affirmative, do not omit *le*. They take *de* and the article. To this class may be referred negative partitives which are effectually limited by an adjective or something else following, thus:

Do not lend him any money,	Ne lui prêtez pas *de* monnaie,

* *Le* is used in such phrases when we speak of what is habitual. *Prenez-vous le thé* means, do you take tea (habitually?) *Prenez-vous du thé*, do you take some tea (now?)

Do not lend him counterfeit money, Ne lui prêtez pas de la monnaie fausse.*

Will you send for some wine? The servant has gone for some. What do you wish to send for? I wish to send for the second volume of Mr. B.'s new work. Has any one gone for my hat? The boy has gone for it. Does your brother smoke tobacco? He never smokes, but the German smokes all day. Do you know how to swim? We know how to swim, and we swim every evening. What does the cook send for? He sends for some salt to salt his fish. Has he salted the soup? He has salted it. That head-dress fits that lady; has she bought it? She has not bought it because it costs too much. Does it cost more than five dollars? Yes, sir; it costs more than ten. What is the matter with that boy? He has run all the morning and he is much fatigued. Is not the lady fatigued who ascended the mountain? She is not much fatigued. The servant has taken my horse to the stable; has he returned from it? He returned and has gone for some water. That man wishes to buy your house, and has made you a fine offer; do you accept it? I do not accept it. Do you know the causes which have brought on (*amené*) the French revolution? I do not know them all? Have you succeeded in going to the top of that mountain? I have succeeded in going there, and I go there often. Do you go there oftener than your neighbor? I go there less frequently than he. Your friend promised to return early from the ball; at what o'clock (*à quelle heure*) did he return?

Did you return late? Had you learnt your lesson at ten o'clock? Had you learnt it at half-past ten? Did your brother comprehend all that he learnt? Did he comprehend it well? Is it not eleven o'clock? The doctor promised to return here at a quarter before eleven; has he returned? Do you accept the offer which I

* The meaning of this sentence without *fausse* is, *do not lend him any money;* but with *fausse*, it implies, *lend him some money, but not counterfeit.* So,

I will make you no reproaches,	Je ne vous ferai pas *de* reproches,
I will make you no frivolous reproaches,	Je ne vous ferai pas *des* reproches frivoles,
I have no money,	Je n' ai pas *d'* argent,
I have no money to spend madly,	Je n' ai pas *de l'* argent pour le dépenser follement.

Here is the same distinction. First, I will make you no reproaches. Second, I will make you reproaches, but not frivolous. Third, I have no money. Fourth, I have money, but not to spend madly. Thus we see that an adjective or limiting clause, adds a kind of affirmative meaning, and the partitive then takes the article

make you? What o'clock is it? Is it noon? Is it not late? What has that scholar undertaken? Has he undertaken to translate the German book? Had you recited your lesson at noon? Do you sometimes study until (*jusqu' à*) midnight? Have they put your horses in (*à*) the stable? Nature is always beautiful; do you not admire the beauties of nature? Can there be danger in going to the bottom of that mountain? Your beard is long and thick; do you wish to send for a barber? Have you ever lived in England? What day of the month is it? Is it not the twentieth of September?

What were the tastes of your father when he was from twenty to twenty-five years old? He loved to go a hunting, (*à la chasse,*) to ride a horse, (*monter à cheval,*) to swim, to run in the woods; in fine, (*enfin,*) he loved all the exercises (*exercices*) of the body, and had only aversion (*l' aversion*) for those of the mind.

62. SOIXANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

To come for,	*Venir chercher,*
To offend. To wish,	*Offenser. Souhaiter,*
I wish you a *good morning*,	Je vous souhaite le *bonjour*,*
He wishes us a *good evening*,	Il nous souhaite le *bonsoir*,
Riches,	La *richesse*, or les *richesses*,
I wish you great riches,	Je vous souhaite de grandes richesses,
To try,	*Essayer*, (*de* before the infinitive,)
To begin,	*Commencer*, (*à* or *de* before the infin.)

REMARK 1. *Commencer* takes *à* before the infinitive when progress is implied; *de* when progress is not implied.

His *pupils* begin to speak French,	Ses *élèves* commencent *à* parler le français,
The *orator* has begun to speak,	L' *orateur* a commencé *de* parler,†

* Observe the use of *le* instead of *un*.

† The pupil makes progress, and learns to speak better and better; the orator is master of his language, and no progress is implied. So, we say of a child who is learning to read, *Il commence à lire;* but of a man who has learned, *il a commencé de lire ce livre.*

Will you know? I shall know,	*Saurez-vous? Je saurai,*
The *look. Commendable,*	La *mine. Louable,*
That roast meat looks good,	Ce rôti a bonne mine,
He is a good-looking man,	C' est un homme de bonne mine.

REMARK 2. The verb *devoir* through all its moods and tenses, when followed by an infinitive, like the English verb *to be*, implies obligation or appointment of some future action or event.

My brother is to arrive to-morrow,	Mon frère doit arriver demain,
They are to go home this evening,	Ils doivent aller chez eux ce soir,
Something is to happen,	Quelque chose doit arriver,
I know what is to happen,	Je sais ce qui doit arriver,
Is there to be? are there to be?	*Est-ce qu' il doit y avoir?*
Is there to be a ball at your house?	Doit-il y avoir un bal chez vous?
There is to be one there,	Il doit y en avoir un,
To do without. He does without wine,	*Se passer de.* Il se passe de vin,
He takes off his gloves before taking off his hat,	Il ôte ses gants avant d' ôter son chapeau.

REMARK 3. The infinitive mood used absolutely takes no preposition before it.

To eat too much is *dangerous*,	Manger trop est *dangereux*,
To do good to those who have offended us is a commendable action,	Faire du bien à ceux qui nous ont offensés est une action louable,
To take place,	*Avoir lieu*,
The *ceremony*. The *company*,	La *cérémonie*. La *compagnie*,
The ceremony is to take place to-morrow,	La cérémonie doit avoir lieu demain,
Will the ceremony take place earlier to-day than yesterday?	La cérémonie aura-t-elle lieu de meilleure heure aujourd' hui qu' hier?
Some misfortune is to happen,	Quelque malheur doit arriver,
The *lip*, the *lips*. The *cheek*,	La *lèvre*, les *lèvres*. La *joue*,
His right cheek is swollen,	Il a la joue droite enflée,
His lips are thick,	Il a les lèvres épaisses,
When will you come for your money?	Quand est-ce que vous viendrez chercher votre argent?
I come for it now,	Je viens le chercher maintenant,
I am trying this gold pen,	J' essaie cette plume d' or,
At what o'clock is the company to arrive?	À quelle heure la compagnie doit-elle arriver?
It is to arrive before ten o'clock,	Elle doit arriver avant dix heures.

REMARK 4. When the adverb *tout* precedes a feminine adjective or participle, beginning with a consonant, it is made, for sound's sake, to agree in gender and number with the noun. Otherwise it is invariable

A cravat all dirty,	Une cravate *toute* sale,

Some apples all red,	Des pommes *toutes* rouges,
A napkin all *worn*,	Une serviette *tout usée*.

RULE. Adjectives and participles which refer to two or more nouns singular, not connected by *ou*, and not synonymous, must be plural; and must be masculine when the nouns are of different genders.

The cow and the goat are black,	La vache et la chèvre sont noires,
The horse, the cow, and the goat, are black,	Le cheval, la vache, et la chèvre, sont noirs,
Your mother and sister have come,	Votre mère et votre sœur sont *venues*,
Your mother, sister, and brother, have come,	Votre mère, votre sœur, et votre frère, sont *venus*.

What does that man come for? He comes for some grain. Will you come for money to-morrow? I will come for it to-morrow morning. Do you wish for great riches? No, sir; I wish for good health, but not great riches. What did your neighbor wish you? He wished me a good morning. Did you wish him a good morning? Yes, sir; and I wished him riches and all good fortune. Have you not offended that lady? I do not know; I have not wished to offend her. Do you never offend any one? I wish to offend no one, but to do good to every body, (*à tout le monde*,) to those even (*même*) who have offended me. Does that sick man try to walk? He tries, but he can not walk much. Do those lazy scholars try to learn their lessons? They do not try much. Do you begin to speak French? Yes, sir; I try, and I begin to speak it a little. Does your little brother begin to read and write? He begins to read very well, but he does not yet begin to write. At what o'clock does that orator begin to speak? He begins to speak at half-past ten, or a quarter before eleven. If that orator speaks to-morrow will you know it? I shall know it. If the thieves take some of his (*de son*) fruit will your father know it? He will know it. Is there to be a marriage (*mariage*) in the church to-morrow? No, sir; there is to be one on Sunday. At what o'clock is the ceremony to take place? It is to take place at ten minutes after ten. Is the company to arrive early?

The friend of your sister is a good-looking young lady; her skin

is fair, and her cheeks are red, but are not her lips too thick? That thief has a bad look; is he not a dangerous man? To do good to those who have offended us is an action very commendable; do you not wish to do good to every body? Is it not dangerous to (*de*) go alone to the top of that mountain? God has given us much good; ought we not at least to be contented? Do you always take off your hat before taking off your gloves? Good evening, sir; shall I not have the pleasure of seeing you (*de vous voir*) to-morrow? I have come for some flour; have they ground the grain? War is an evil, the most terrible; (*terrible;*) ought we not always to prefer peace to war? Have kings always chosen peace instead of war?

In the month of March, it is not yet warm. (*Less.* 44, *Rem.* 1.) Nevertheless, the snow (*cependant la neige*) begins to melt (*se fondre.*) The gardeners work already at their gardens, and the birds at their nests. The month of April is going to make us forget the cold which we have suffered until now. I am very willing (*veux bien*) to make no noise, if you do not make any yourself. (*Less.* 34. *Rem.* 2.)

---

63. SOIXANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

THE PAST DEFINITE.

The PAST PERFECT or PAST DEFINITE of all verbs of the *first conjugation*, infinitive *er*,) is formed by changing *é* of the past participle into the following terminations:

AI, AS, A, ÂMES, ÂTES, ÈRENT. Thus:

PARLER, *to speak*, Past Participle, PARLÉ, *makes*,

Je parlai,	*tu parlas,*	*il parla,*	*nous parlâmes,*	*vous parlâtes,*	*ils parlèrent,*
I spoke,	thou spokest,	he spoke,	we spoke,	you spoke,	they spoke.

ALLER, *to go*, Past Participle, ALLÉ, *makes*,

J' allai,	*tu allas,*	*il alla,*	*nous allâmes,*	*vous allâtes,*	*ils allèrent,*
I went,	thou wentest,	he went,	we went,	you went,	they went.

As this tense, and the indefinite or present perfect, and the imperfect, do not correspond to the divisions of past time in English, let the learner note well the distinction.

The past definite or *past perfect*, marks a time of which the present day forms no part; it must be separated from us by at least one night. *The past indefinite* or *present perfect*,

properly marks a past time of which the present day forms a part, or from which it is not necessarily excluded. It is often used, however, like the past perfect, for time entirely gone and separated from us. *The imperfect* is used, (*as seen in Less.* 51,) of that which was continuous or unfinished at the time spoken of.* Let the learner, therefore, be guided in their use by the following

RULE. If something past be spoken of as continuous or unfinished at the time specified, let *the imperfect* be used. If it be something entirely completed, and in a time not excluding the present day, let *the past indefinite* or present perfect, be used. If it be something entirely completed, and in a time separated from us, excluding the present day, *the past* or *the present perfect,* may either of them be used.

We may say, either *Je lui* AI PARLE or *je lui* PARLAI, *hier, la semaine passée, l' été passé,* etc., because here the present day is excluded. But we must say, *Je lui* AI PARLE, and not *je lui parlai, aujourd' hui, cette semaine, cet été,* etc., because here the present day is included, being a part of this week this summer etc.

But to warrant the use of the past definite, the time should be mentioned in the proposition, or sufficiently implied by what precedes.

It is to be observed, however, that in transactions long past, in narrative and historical writing, the definite or past perfect is used, not the indefinite.

The distinction between the two perfect tenses is illustrated in the following examples:

I *went* to your house to-day, (*present day not excluded,*)	J' *ai été* chez vous aujourd' hui,
I *went* to your house on Thursday, (*present day excluded,*)	J' *allai* chez vous jeudi,
I *have been* in Europe, (*pr. d. not ex.*)	J' *ai été* en Europe,
I *went* there last year, (*pr. day ex.*)	J' y *allai* l' an passé,
The general *arrived* in New Orleans this month, (*present day not excl.*)	Le général *est arrivé* à la Nouvelle-Orléans ce mois-ci,
I was in New Orleans when the general *arrived* there last month, (*present day excluded,*)	J' étais à la Nouvelle-Orléans quand le général y *arriva* le mois passé,
We *spoke* to him this morning, (*present day not excluded,*)	Nous lui *avons parlé* ce matin,
We *spoke* to him yesterday, (*pr. d. ex.*)	Nous lui *parlâmes* hier,
He *broke* the window, (*pr. d. not ex.*)	Il *a cassé* la croisée,

* These three tenses may be briefly characterized thus: The *imperfect tense* represents something as *unfinished in past time.* The *past perfect* (or *definite*) represents something as *finished in past time.* The *present perfect* (or *indefinite*) represents something as *finished in present time:* and is sometimes used also like the past perfect.

He *broke* it yesterday, (*pr. day ex.*)	Il la *cassa* hier,*
Madam, are you ill?	Madame, êtes-vous malade?
Yes, I am, (so,)	Oui, je *le* suis,
Are these your servants?	Sont-ce là vos domestiques?
Yes, they are, (so,)	Oui, ce *les* sont,
Ladies, are you pleased with that music?	Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de cette musique?
Yes, we are, (so,)	Oui, nous *le* sommes, (*Less.* 52, *Rem.* 3,)
A *ball*, (sphere.) An *enemy*,	Une *boule*. Un *ennemi*,
The *snow*. A *flower*,	La *neige*. Une *fleur*,
The rain falls,	La pluie tombe, il tombe de la pluie,
The snow falls,	La neige tombe, il tombe de la neige,
Below, *yonder*. *Big*,	*Là-bas*. *Grosse*, (feminine of *gros*,)
A *pie*. A *metre*, (measure,)	Un *pâté*. Un *mètre*,
Bare-headed,	*Nu-tête*, or *tête nue*,
Barefoot,	*Nu-pieds*, or *pieds nus*.

In these expressions, when the adjective follows the noun, it agrees with it; when it precedes, it does not, the two words are connected with a hyphen.

The *looking-glass*, *mirror*,	Le *miroir*,
To foresee, *foreseen*,	*Prévoir*, (com. of *voir*,) p. p. *prévu*,
Generous,	*Généreux*, (mascu.) *généreuse*, (fem.)
A big ball of snow,	Une grosse boule de neige,
Wise men foresee *events*,	Les hommes sages prévoient les *événements*.

Have you been to the neighbor's this week? Yes, sir; I went there on Monday, and I went there again yesterday. Didst thou speak to the general on Tuesday? I spoke to him, and my brother spoke to him also. We found some beautiful flowers in the woods (*bois*) last week; did you not find some there at the same time? We did not go to the woods last week, but we went there the day before yesterday (*avant-hier*) and found many; our cousins also found many, which they gave to their sisters. When you were dining with the general on Saturday, did you taste of his best wine? I did not taste it, for (because) I never drink wine; but the captain tasted it, and found it very good. When you were in the country last summer, did you not buy some cows? No, sir; my brothers bought some, and they bought

* The learner will, of course, understand that, in all the above examples where the present day is excluded, and the past perfect used, the present perfect is equally grammatical. We say equally well, *J' ai été chez vous jeudi*; *J' y ai été l' an passé*, etc.

some goats also. Who has broken your beautiful mirror? That boy broke it day before yesterday with his ball. Have I offended that lady? Yes, sir; when you passed her in the street last week without speaking to her, you offended her. Do you wish for some pie or some roast beef? I wish for some pie. Is your brother below? No, sir; he has gone to hear the orator. What is the boy doing there below? He is throwing (*jette*) snow-balls. Does that man go out bare-headed? He often goes out bare-headed and barefoot; he is crazy. What are the children doing there below? They are making a big ball of snow. Do children like to run barefoot? Yes, sir; they sometimes run barefoot in the snow. Can any one foresee all events? God alone foresees them.

Do the wise foresee all their misfortunes? That man has given half of his riches to the poor; is he not very generous? Is it not very generous to do good to an enemy? Are not men more generous than children? Is not the metre* the element (*élément*) of all other measures (*mesures?*) When did they break that beautiful mirror? Is not that woman your enemy (*ennemie?*) Did that man foresee his misfortune? Has not your friend lived long in this country? Has he not lived here twenty years at least? Do not give that man (*ni*) a cent more nor a cent less. Let us not give him a cent too much nor a cent too little. Has that scholar been able to learn his lesson? (*See Less.* 57, *Rule.*) Has he wished to learn it well? Have you given back to him his books? Has he sold them? Has he lost them? Has he read them? Has he translated them? Did you not pity that poor man? Have you been acquainted with him long? Does not the boy wish for a piece of this pie?

The month of August has arrived. See how many families leave (*familles quittent*) the city to (*pour*) go to dwell in the country during some time. The young people (*gens*) go out from their boarding-schools, (*pensions,*) or from their colleges, (*collèges,*) and go to pass some days with (*chez*) their relations. Has not that man drunk too much wine? Did that scholar know his lesson? Has your uncle consented to sell his stone house? Has he built one of

* A *metre* is the ten millionth part of the arc of a meridian, extending from the equator to the pole; and is the basis of all other measures to the French. It is equal to 39.33 English inches.

brick? Why have you beaten that dog? How old are you? How many paces is it to the stable?

64. SOIXANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

PAST DEFINITE, IRREGULAR VERBS.

To look at,	*Regarder,*
TO BE WORTH,	VALOIR, (IRREGULAR,)
Je vaux, tu vaux, il vaut,	*nous valons, vous valez, ils valent,*
I am worth, thou art worth, he is worth,	we are worth, you are worth, they are worth
Will it be worth? It will be worth,	*Vaudra-t-il?* Il vaudra,
The *pound.* The *bushel,*	La *livre.* Le *boisseau,*
To be wrong,	*Avoir tort,* (*de* before the infinitive,)
To be right,	*Avoir raison,* (*de* before the infinitive,)
Have I been wrong in buying books?	Ai-je eu tort d' acheter des livres?
You have been right in buying some,	Vous avez eu raison d' en acheter,
Is it long? (in time.)	Est-ce qu' il y a longtemps?
It is long. It is six months,	Il y a longtemps. Il y a six mois,
Every man. Every woman,	Tous les hommes. Toutes les femmes,
Every scholar, Every body,	Tous les écoliers. Tout le monde,
To call. To throw, throw away,	*Appeler. Jeter.*

RULE. Verbs in *eler* and *eter* double the *l* and the *t* when these consonants are followed by *e* mute.

(*Acheter*, and *Geler* we have seen, *Less.* 20 *and* 50 are excepted.*) Thus:

J' appelle, tu appelles, il appelle, nous appelons, vous appelez, ils appellent

Do you call me?	Est-ce que vous m' appelez?
I call you,	Je vous appelle,
Do you throw away your money?	Jetez-vous votre argent?
I do not throw it away,	Je ne le jette pas,
The *sea.* The *shore,*	La *mer.* Le *rivage,*
Along,	*Le long,* (*de* before noun,)
Along the sea shore,	Le long du rivage de la mer,
Learned. Ingenious,	*Savant. Ingénieux,*

* I have followed the academy here. It makes six exceptions: *acheter, bourreler, déceler geler, harceler* and *peler.* Noël and Chapsal make none; but prefer to double the *l* in all these before *e* mute. They write *j' achette, il gelle,* etc.

Interesting. A *remedy.*	*Intéressant.* Un *remède,*
Hardly, scarcely. *Almost,*	*À peine. Presque,*
The remedy has done me good,	Le remède m' a fait du bien,
That lady looks interesting,	Cette dame a l' air intéressant.

Remark 1. The adjective following *avoir l' air*, is sometimes of a kind that can not well be applied to *air*, and it is then made to agree with the subject, and *d' être* is placed immediately before it.

That apple looks cooked,	Cette pomme a l' air d' être cuite,
That lady looks badly formed,	Cette dame a l' air d' être mal faite,
She looks agreeable,	Elle a l' air agréable,*
How much is meat worth a pound?	Combien la viande vaut-elle la livre?
How much are apples worth a bushel?	Combien les pommes valent-elles le boisseau?
They are worth a dollar a bushel,	Elles valent un dollar le boisseau,
How much may that ox be worth?	Combien ce bœuf peut-il valoir?
He may be worth thirty dollars,	Il peut valoir trente piastres,
Look at that beautiful sky,	Regardez ce beau ciel,
Unbeknown, unbeknown to him,	*À l' insu*, à son insu.

Remark 2. In speaking of an action or state begun in past time, but which still continues, the English employ a *past tense;* the French employ *the present.*

Have you lived long in this street?	Y a-t-il longtemps que vous demeurez dans cette rue?
I have lived here a year,	Il y a un an que j' y demeure, or, j' y demeure depuis un an,
How long have you studied German?	Combien de temps y a-t-il que vous étudiez l' allemand? or, depuis combien de temps étudiez-vous l' allemand?
I have studied it six months,	Il y a six mois que je l' étudie, or, je l' étudie depuis six mois,
I have had your book a long time,	Il y a longtemps que j' ai votre livre, or, j' ai votre livre depuis longtemps,
That tailor boy is ingenious,	Ce garçon tailleur est ingénieux,
I have been here hardly five minutes.	Il y a à peine cinq minutes que je suis ici.

Past Definite of Être.

Je fus,	*tu fus,*	*il fut,*	*nous fûmes,*	*vous fûtes,*	*ils furent,*
I was,	thou wast,	he was,	we were,	you were,	they were.

I was at thy house last week, and my brother was there also,	Je *fus* chez toi la semaine passée, et mon frère y *fut* aussi,

* The *look* can be *agreeable*, but it can not be *cooked* nor *badly formed*. *Agréable*, therefore, can agree with *air*, but *cuit* and *fait* can not.

Were you at Boston last month?	Est-ce que vous *fûtes* à Boston le mois dernier?
We were there, and our cousins were there also,	Nous y *fûmes*, et nos cousins y furent aussi,
To be worth more,	*Valoir mieux*,
You are worth more than he,	Vous valez mieux que lui,
I am worth more than he,	Je vaux mieux que lui.

How much is grain worth a bushel? It is worth a dollar a bushel. Will it be worth more in winter? It will be worth more. How much are potatoes worth a bushel? They are worth almost as much as grain. How much is butter worth a pound? It is worth almost a quarter of a dollar a pound. Have you been looking at that picture long? I have been looking at it hardly ten minutes. How long has your friend been looking at it? He has been looking at it almost an hour. Have all the ladies been looking at it long? They have been looking at it hardly a quarter of an hour. Whom are you calling? We are calling the scholars. Why do you call them? We call them because the master has come. What does that boy throw away? He throws away his gloves. Why does he throw them away? He throws them away because they are worth nothing. Do you sometimes go along the shore of the sea? Yes, sir; I like to go along the shore of the sea, and to look at the sea and the sky. That man is studious; is he also learned? He is very learned in history. What are those children throwing? They are throwing snow balls. Is not that workman ingenious? He is very ingenious. Does not that lady look interesting? She looks interesting. She looks tall; (*grande;*) is she not too tall? No, sir; she is not so tall as she appears. Has that sick man taken the remedy which the physician ordered (*ordonné?*) He took it, and it did him good. Were you at New York last summer? I was there and my brother was there also. Am I not worth as much as my brother? You are worth more than he.

We were in the new church on Sunday; were your brothers there at the same time? When thou wast at my house yesterday didst thou look at my new picture? When the servant broke the glasses yesterday did you not blame him? At what o'clock did your friends arrive yesterday? We arrived from Europe the tenth of last month;

did you arrive earlier (*plus tôt*) than we? Is it far from here to the foot of the mountain? Is it not almost two hundred paces? Is it not quite half a mile? I have been as far as the river; have you been as far as there? Is it far to the river? Is it about a mile and a half? Is it about two miles to the village? Is your servant cleaning your boots now? Does he clean them every morning? From whence do you come? Do you always avoid the lazy and the negligent? Am I not worth more than my cousin? Does the learned man avoid the ignorant?

Do the servants always clean your boots while you sleep? From whence does that boy come? That child coughs every five minutes; has he a cold? Are there elsewhere as beautiful flowers as these? Can there be less danger elsewhere than here? Can nature be more beautiful elsewhere than here? Do not the learned say that several new stars have appeared?

---

65. SOIXANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

PAST DEFINITE, IRREGULAR VERBS.

To cut, cut off. Opposite to,	*Couper. Vis-à-vis de,*
I live opposite the church,	Je demeure vis-à-vis de l' église,
To split, divide,	*Fendre,*
To steal, take away, (*from,*)	*Dérober,* (*à,*)
He takes away some *moments* from his business,	Il dérobe des *moments* à ses affaires,
To surprise,	*Surprendre,* (*à* before infinitive,) (compound of *prendre*, *Less.* 35,)
A *surgeon.* An *ax,*	Un *chirurgien.* Une *hache,*
A *wing. Strong,*	Une *aile. Fort,* (adjective,)
Strongly, forcibly, also *very,*	*Fort,* (adverb,)
The surgeon is going to cut off that man's arm,	Le chirurgien va couper le bras à cet homme,
He is going to cut it off,	Il va le lui couper.

Remark 1. When any part of a person is spoken of as above, the preposition *à*, and not *de*, is prefixed to the possessor

Are they going to cut your brother's hair?	Est-ce qu' on va couper les cheveux à votre frère?
They are going to cut it,	On va les lui couper,
You break your mother's heart,	Vous fendez le cœur à votre mère,
You break her heart,	Vous lui fendez le cœur,
That noise confuses my head,	Ce bruit me fend la tête.

Remark 2. When, as in the following examples, the same part is spoken of in several persons, if that part be singular with each individual, it is put singular in French; if it be plural with each individual, it is put plural in French; Thus:

He washes the children's faces,	Il lave le visage aux enfants,
He washes the children's hands,	Il lave les mains aux enfants,
He washes their faces and hands,	Il leur lave le visage et les mains.

Each one has the face singular and the hands plural. The French therefore, in the above phrases, say *le visage* and *les mains*.

Those birds have strong wings and hard *beaks*,	Ces oiseaux ont les ailes fortes et le *bec* dur,
Their beaks are very hard,	Ils ont le bec fort dur,
I surprised the thief in stealing from me some money,	J'ai surpris le voleur à me *dérober* de l'argent.

Past Definite of Faire, *to make or do.*

Je fis,	*tu fis,*	*il fit,*	*nous fîmes,*	*vous fîtes,*	*ils firent,*
I made, or did,	thou madest,	he made,	we made,	you made,	they made.

Didst thou do thy exercise well on Wednesday?	*Fis*-tu bien ton thème mercredi?
I did it without making mistakes,	Je le *fis* sans faire de fautes.

Sans, with partitives, as before seen, is in effect a negative.

Did you do yours well?	*Fîtes*-vous bien les vôtres?
We did ours well, and Charles did his well, but his brothers made many mistakes in theirs,	Nous *fîmes* bien les nôtres, et Charles *fit* bien le sien, mais ses frères *firent* beaucoup de (bien des) fautes dans les leurs

Past Definite of Venir.

Je vins,	*tu vins,*	*il vint,*	*nous vînmes,*	*vous vîntes,*	*ils vinrent,*
I came,	thou camest,	he came,	we came,	you came,	they came.

So likewise *tenir*, and of course the compounds of *venir* and *tenir*.

Didst thou come here last week?	*Vins*-tu ici la semaine passée?
I came here, and my brother came also,	J' y *vins*, et mon frère y *vint* aussi,
Did you hold the horses?	*Tîntes*-vous les chevaux?
We did not hold them; the servants held them,	Nous ne les *tînmes* pas; les domestiques les *tinrent*.

PAST DEFINITE OF VOIR.

Je vis,	*tu vis,*	*il vit,*	*nous vîmes,*	*vous vîtes,*	*ils virent,*
I saw,	thou sawest,	he saw,	we saw,	you saw,	they saw.

Did you see George the Fourth in London?	*Vîtes*-vous George quatre à Londres?
I saw him, and my brother saw him,	Je le *vis*, et mon frère le *vit*,
My friends saw him also.	Mes amis le *virent* aussi,
People, folks,	Des *gens.*

Adjectives preceding *gens* are generally feminine, and those following it masculine.

Wicked people,	Les méchantes gens, les gens méchants
Are there people who love to do evil?	Y a-t-il des gens qui aiment à faire du mal?
There are people credulous enough to believe all that one says,	Il y a des gens assez crédules pour croire tout ce que l' on dit,
You surprise me much,	Vous me surprenez beaucoup,
He divides his head with a blow of an ax,	Il lui fend la tête d' un coup de hache.

What is that man doing? He is cutting some sticks. Does he cut them with a knife? No, sir; he cuts them with an ax. What do those men do with their axes? They cut and (*et ils*) split wood with them. Who is that man? He is a thief; I surprised him in taking away (*à me dérober*) (my) clothes. What is the weather (*Less.* 44?) It is bad weather; the clouds take away the sky from (*à*) our eyes. Do you surprise your father? We surprise him sometimes. Is the surgeon going to cut off that boy's arm? No, sir; he is going to cut off his finger. Do you cut off the wings of those birds? We cut them off. Do you cut off their beaks? We do not cut them off. Are not their wings strong? They are very strong. Do you sometimes go to see your old friend? I steal away each day some moments from my affairs to (*pour*) go to see him. Didst thou not make too much noise yesterday in school? I did not make any, but the little boys made too much. Did you make the noise on Thursday? We did not make it, your cousin made it. Did you come here on Friday? We came here and your cousins came here also. Why didst thou hold thy cousin by (*par*) the arm yesterday? I held him by the arm in order to (*pour*) speak to him. Didst thou see the general on Saturday? I saw him.

I was at the church yesterday, and my friends were there also; wast

thou there? We were at your house yesterday, and you were not there; where were you? Where were your brothers? Do you avoid this man or that? Do you avoid both? Does the sick man cough now as formerly (*autrefois?*) Do they clean our boots while we are eating? I dwell in Charles street, number ninety-six; at what number do you dwell? Can there be danger in going to the top of the mountain? Does that child understand the cardinal numbers? Does he understand the ordinal numbers? Was there a great number of persons (*personnes*) at the ball? Is that scholar praised? Is he blamed? By whom is he rewarded? Is he not punished? We are esteemed and rewarded; are they not punished and despised? Who is hated? By whom is he hated? By whom will the thief be punished.

Are those scholars playing? Are they correcting their exercises? Do they play instead of correcting their exercises? Do they correct their exercises instead of playing? Has not the earth the figure of a globe? Have you recognized your old friend? What has extinguished the light? Have you waited for me? Did you hear the noise of the thunder? Where have they conducted that man? Have those trees produced much fruit this year? Have you sent for your books? This wood smokes much; is it dry? Do you swim well? That cap fits that lady; does it cost more than five dollars? Do you know the cause of the last French revolution? I am fatigued; are you not fatigued also? They have made you a handsome offer; do you accept it?

66. SOIXANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

PAST DEFINITE, IRREGULAR VERBS.

Partir, *sortir*, and also *devenir*, a compound of *venir*, take *être* for their auxiliary.*

To become.	*By the side of, next to,*	*Devenir.*	*À côté de,*
My father has departed,		Mon père *est parti*,	
My sisters have gone out,		Mes sœurs *sont sorties*,	
That man has become rich,		Cet homme *est devenu* riche,	

* Of verbs which take *être* for their auxiliary the following have now been given: *Aller Arriver*, *Devenir*, *Mourir*, *Naître*, *Partir*, *Parvenir*, *Revenir*, *Sortir*, *Tomber*, and *Venir*.

To pull, pull out. The *stove*,	*Arracher.* Le *poêle*,
To wipe, also *to experience.* The *duck*,	*Essuyer.* Le *canard*,
The *turkey.* The *crop, harvest*,	Le *dindon*, la *dinde.* La *récolte*,
The *rest, remainder.* The *grammar*,	Le *reste.* La *grammaire*,
There is the rest of my money,	Voilà le reste de mon argent,
Something left,	Quelque chose de reste,
I have nothing left,	Je n' ai rien de reste,
He has some ducks left,	Il a des canards de reste,
Are there some left?	Est-ce qu' il y en a de reste?
There are a few left,	Il y en a quelques-uns de reste,
There are none left,	Il n' y en a pas de reste,
He knows grammar well,	Il sait bien la grammaire,
By the side of the rocks,	À côté des rochers,
Next to the store. By his side,	À côté du magasin. À côté de lui,
Next to my house. Some few stoves,	À côté de chez moi. Quelques poêles,
A few, some few,	*Quelques-uns*, (masculine,) *quelques-unes*, (feminine,)
A few more turkeys,	Encore quelques dindons,
A few more apples left,	Encore quelques pommes de reste,
A few more,	Encore quelques-unes,
I have need of but a few more,	Je n' en ai plus besoin que de quelques-unes.

The French use *faire* with an infinitive where the English use *get* or *have* with a participle in phrases like the following :

To get mended. To get washed,	Faire raccommoder. Faire laver,
To get made. To get swept,	Faire faire. Faire balayer,
Are you getting your coat mended?	Faites-vous raccommoder votre habit?
I am getting it mended,	Je le fais raccommoder.

REMARK. *Faire*, thus used, is not to be separated from the infinitive which it governs.

Have you got a coat made?	Avez-vous fait faire un habit?
I have got one made,	J' en ai fait faire un,
Do you wish to get your linen washed?	Est-ce que vous voulez faire laver votre linge?
I wish to get it washed,	Je le veux faire laver,
Did you get those trees pulled up?	Est-ce que vous avez fait arracher ces arbres?
I did get them pulled up,	Je les ai fait* arracher,
He has made that man laugh,	Il a fait rire cet homme,
He will make those workmen work,	Il fera travailler ces ouvriers,
The rain has done harm to the harvest,	La pluie a fait du mal à la récolte.

* *Fait* is not here varied to agree with *les*, because the infinitive *arracher*, and not *les*, is properly its object, (*See Less.* 96, *Rem.* 2;) it is so, whenever *fait* is followed by an infinitive.

PAST DEFINITE OF COUVRIR.

Je couvris,	*tu couvris,*	*il couvrit,*	*nous couvrîmes, vous couvrîtes, ils couvrirent,*
I covered,	thou coveredst,	he covered,	we covered, you covered, they covered.

So likewise of *offrir*, *ouvrir* and *souffrir*.

When you bought this book last year did you not cover it with paper?	Quand vous achetâtes ce livre l' an passé ne le *couvrîtes*-vous pas de papier?
No, sir; I covered it with leather,	Non, M.; je le *couvris* de cuir,
Did the physician open the sick man's windows yesterday?	Le médecin *ouvrit*-il les fenêtres du malade hier?
No, sir; it is we who opened them because it was too warm,	Non, M.; c' est nous qui les *ouvrîmes* parce qu' il faisait trop chaud,
When I was without money they offered me their *purse*,	Quand j' étais sans argent ils m' *offrirent* leur *bourse*,
Didst thou not suffer from the cold yesterday?	Ne *souffris*-tu pas du froid hier?

PAST DEFINITE OF ÉCRIRE.

J' écrivis,	*tu écrivis,*	*il écrivit,*	*nous écrivîmes,*	*vous écrivîtes,*	*ils écrivirent,*
I wrote,	thou wrotest,	he wrote,	we wrote,	you wrote,	they wrote.

Did you write him from Paris?	Lui *écrivîtes*-vous de Paris?
No, sir; I wrote him from Berlin,	Non, M.; je lui *écrivis* de Berlin,
He wrote to me last week,	Il m' *écrivit* la semaine dernière.

PAST DEFINITE OF NAÎTRE.

Je naquis,	*tu naquis,*	*il naquit,*	*nous naquîmes,*	*vous naquîtes,*	*ils naquirent,*
I was born,	thou wast born,	he was born,	we were born,	you were born,	they were born.

When wast thou born?	Quand *naquis*-tu?
I was born the tenth of October eighteen hundred and twelve,	Je *naquis* le dix octobre dix-huit cent-douze,
My brother was born in eighteen hundred and thirty; were you not born the same year?	Mon frère *naquit* en dix-huit cent-trente ne *naquîtes*-vous pas la même année?
We were born before that year,	Nous *naquîmes* avant cette année.

Are you pleased with your horse? Yes, sir; he is a good horse, but he always becomes lean in summer. Does not that fruit become red? It becomes red in autumn. Do not those who go to school become learned? They become learned if they study well. Is the surgeon going to pull that child's tooth? Yes, sir; he is going to pull it, for it has pained him a long time (*See Less.* 64, *Rem.* 2.) Does he pull teeth well? He pulls them well; he is a skillful surgeon. What

is the servant doing? He is wiping the face and hands of those children (*See Less.* 65, *Rem.* 2.) Does he wipe their mouths often? He wipes them every minute when they eat. Why do the scholars wipe their slates? They wipe them because they are wet. Has the rain done harm to the crop? No, sir; it has done it good. Have those boys done any thing bad? Yes, sir; they have pulled out the eyes of those ducks and turkeys. Is there any wood left. There is none left, I have put it all in the stove. Did you see the merchant yesterday? I saw him, and I offered him the rest of his money. Did he offer to buy your grain? He offered to buy it on credit, and I offered to sell it to him for cash.

Why did you open your window early yesterday? Did you open it because you were warm? Did not that poor child suffer from the cold last week? Did not all the poor suffer at the same time? Did your cousins write to their relations last week? I was born in this city; where were you born? Have your friends departed? Have they been gone (*partis*) two hours? Has the servant gone out? Have the children gone out also? Do the studious always become learned? Has that lady become rich, and have her daughters become rich also? Is there a horse by the side of the stable? Does my servant go to the stable more frequently than yours? Does he go there less frequently? What o'clock is it? Is it noon? Is it ten minutes before noon? Did you return from the ball at midnight? Did you return before midnight? Did your friends come to wish you a good morning? Did you wish your father a good evening? Did you wish your sisters a good evening?

Do you begin to speak the French? Do you try to speak it? Does the orator begin to speak at a quarter after twelve, (at noon?) Shall we know how to write French next year? The general is a good-looking man; have you seen him? Is there to be a ball at your house to-night? To do good is commendable; do all men wish to do good? Do all men wish to do commendable actions? Are not those people very dangerous? Is the ceremony to take place before midnight? At what o'clock is the company to come? That young lady has red cheeks and lips, and a fair skin; is she not beautiful? She has beautiful cheeks and skin; and she has also great riches.

67. SOIXANTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

PAST DEFINITE, IRREGULAR VERBS.

To astonish. To tear,	*Étonner*, (*de* bef. inf. and n.) *Déchirer,*
To belong,	*Appartenir*, (compound of *tenir*,)
To conceive, to comprehend,	*Concevoir,*
Sooner. A *master-work,*	*Plus tôt.* Un *chef-d' œuvre,*
I shall be ready to go out sooner than you,	Je serai prêt à sortir plus tôt que vous,
A *phrase. Such,*	Une *phrase. Tel,*
Such an affair, such a fact,	Une telle affaire, un tel fait,
Prudent. Without, out of it,	*Prudent. Dehors,*
She is a prudent woman; she keeps a prudent silence,	C' est une femme prudente; elle garde un silence prudent,
He has produced a master-work,	Il a fait un chef-d' œuvre,
He carried the barrels into the store and left the casks without,	Il a porté les barils dans le magasin et il a laissé les tonneaux dehors,
To meet. Formerly,	*Au-devant de. Autrefois,*
The prince comes; let us go to meet him,	Le prince vient; allons au-devant de lui,
That house belongs to me; it belonged formerly to your father,	Cette maison m' appartient; elle a appartenu autrefois à votre père,
He astonishes every body,	Il étonne tout le monde,
Do you comprehend well what I say to you?	Concevez-vous bien ce que je vous dis?
I comprehend it well,	Je le conçois bien,
I have never conceived of such a fact,	Je n' ai jamais conçu un tel fait,
To overcome, to vanquish,	*Vaincre*, (irregular.)

PRESENT TENSE,

Je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vainc, nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent,
I overcome, thou overcomest, he overcomes, we overcome, you overcome, they overcome.

PAST DEFINITE,

Je vainquis,	*tu vainquis,*	*il vainquit,*
I overcame,	thou overcamest,	he overcame,
Nous vainquîmes,	*vous vainquîtes,*	*ils vainquirent,*
We overcame,	you overcame,	they overcame.

He overcomes all *obstacles,*	Il vainc tous les *obstacles,*
He has overcome all his enemies,	Il a vaincu tous ses ennemis,
Cæsar vanquished the *Britons,*	César *vainquit* les *Bretons,*
The Romans overcame the *Gauls*	Les Romains *vainquirent* les *Gaulois*

PAST DEFINITE OF VÊTIR,

Je vêtis,	*tu vêtis,*	*il vêtit,*	*nous vêtîmes,*	*vous vêtîtes,*	*ils vêtirent.*
clothed,	thou clothedst,	he clothed,	we clothed,	you clothed,	they clothed

So also, its compound *Revêtir*, to invest.

Did you clothe those poor children the past winter?
Vêtîtes-vous ces pauvres enfants l' hiver passé?

I clothed them,
Je les *vêtis*,

They invested king Charles the First with his *royal* robes,
Ils *revêtirent* le roi Charles premier de ses habits *royaux*.

PAST DEFINITE OF MOURIR,

Je mourus,	*tu mourus,*	*il mourut,*	*nous mourûmes,*	*vous mourûtes,*	*ils moururent,*
I died,	thou diedst,	he died,	we died,	you died,	they died.

After having lived seventy years, that great man died,
Après avoir vécu soixante-dix ans, ce grand homme *mourut*,

His brothers died when he was absent,
Ses frères *moururent* quand il était *absent*.

PAST DEFINITE OF TRADUIRE,

Je traduisis,	*tu traduisis,*	*il traduisit,*
I translated,	thou translatedst,	he translated,
Nous traduisîmes,	*vous traduisîtes,*	*ils traduisirent,*
We translated,	you translated,	they translated.

REMARK. All French verbs ending in *aindre*, *eindre*, *oindre*, and *uire*, (about thirty,) form this tense in the same manner; that is, by changing *ez* of the second person plural present into *is*, etc., as in the above terminations.

Last year after having read that book, did you translate it?
L' an passé après avoir lu ce livre, le *traduisîtes*-vous?

I translated it,
Je le *traduisis*,

We conducted that stranger to the church on Sunday; didst thou conduct him to the play on Monday?
Nous *conduisîmes* cet étranger à l' église dimanche; le *conduisis*-tu au spectacle lundi?

No, sir; my brothers conducted him there,
Non, M.; mes frères l' y *conduisirent*,

The other day when he saw those poor men he pitied them much, but he pities them no longer,
L' autre jour quand il vit ces pauvres hommes il les *plaignit* beaucoup, mais il ne les plaint plus.

Let the learner give the past definite of ÉTEINDRE, *to extinguish*, *Less.* 43.

Why does that boy tear his book? He tears it because he does not wish to learn his lesson. Has he not much talent (*talent?*) Yes, sir; he astonishes every body. Why are you astonished? That news has astonished me; I have never conceived of such an affair. Have you torn your cloak? Yes, sir; I have torn it, and I wish to get it mended. Do those horses belong to you? No, sir; they did

belong to me last year, but now they belong to the neighbor. Do you comprehend well what the master says to you? We comprehend it well. Will you be ready to set out sooner than your brother? No, sir; he will be ready sooner than I. Have you written all the Latin phrases of your lesson? I have written all the Latin phrases and all the Greek phrases. Are you acquainted with that German? Yes, sir; he is a very prudent man. Did Cæsar overcome the Gauls? He overcame the Gauls and many (*plusieurs*) other nations (*nations.*) Did the king invest his minister with power? He invested him with full power. Did your father die in Europe? No, sir; he died in America.

Do those children frequently tear their books? Have they torn them? Do you not astonish all your friends? Do such (*de telles*) affairs astonish them? Do you leave the horses out of the stable? Do you leave them out of it? Does the servant leave them out of it? Our friends are coming, let us go to meet them; shall we not go to meet them? When it was cold last winter my birds died; did not yours die also? Did not Cæsar vanquish all his enemies? That house formerly belonged to my grandfather; to whom does it belong now? What o'clock is it? What day is it? Is it not Friday? What day of the month is it? Do you smoke tobacco? Do those children swim well? How much do those books cost? If the orator begins to speak will you know it? Your lips and cheeks are swollen, do they not pain you? Are your lips sore? Why does that child go out bare-headed? Does he not sometimes go out bare-headed and barefoot? Why does that lady run so frequently to the looking-glass? Have they broken your large mirror? Did you foresee that accident? Do the wise foresee all their misfortunes? Do you often foresee that which is to happen (*doit arriver?*)

That man does good to his enemies; is he not very generous? Are not these balls too big? That man's head is big; is it not too big? Are not those flowers beautiful? Are there many flowers in the garden? Did you see my brother in your tour (*tour*) in Europe? Yes, I saw him last month in London, and I remained some time with him at the hotel (*à l' hôtel*) D . . ., where I left him to travel in France. Do you like better to travel than to study? (*Less.* 84, *Rem.* 5.) No, sir; I like to study better than to travel.

68. SOIXANTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

PAST DEFINITE, ITS FORMATION.

The PAST PERFECT, or PAST DEFINITE of all French verbs, except those already given, is formed by the following general rule:

RULE. For the FIRST CONJUGATION, (as seen in *Less.* 63,) change *é* final, of the past participle, into the terminations,

AI, AS, A ÂMES, ÂTES, ÈRENT.

For the SECOND and FOURTH CONJUGATIONS, change *i* and *u* final, of the past participle, into the terminations,

IS, IS, IT, ÎMES, ÎTES, IRENT.

For the THIRD CONJUGATION, change *u* final, of the past participle, into the terminations,

US, US, UT, ÛMES, ÛTES, URENT.

FIRST CONJUGATION, DONNER, *to give*, Past Participle, DONNÉ, *makes*,

Je donnai,	*tu donnas*,	*il donna*,	*nous donnâmes*,	*vous donnâtes*,	*ils donnèrent*,
I gave,	thou gavest,	he gave,	we gave,	you gave,	they gave.

SECOND CONJUGATION, FINIR, *to finish*, Past Participle, FINI, *makes*,

Je finis,	*tu finis*,	*il finit*,	*nous finîmes*,	*vous finîtes*,	*ils finirent*,
I finished,	thou finishedst,	he finished,	we finished,	you finished,	they finished.

FOURTH CONJUGATION, VENDRE, *to sell*, Past Participle, VENDU, *makes*,

Je vendis,	*tu vendis*,	*il vendit*,	*nous vendîmes*,	*vous vendîtes*,	*ils vendirent*,
I sold,	thou soldest,	he sold,	we sold,	you sold,	they sold.

THIRD CONJUGATION, RECEVOIR, *to receive*, Past Participle, REÇU, *makes*,

Je reçus,	*tu reçus*,	*il reçut*,	*nous reçûmes*,	*vous reçûtes*,	*ils reçurent*,
I received,	thou receivedst,	he received,	we received,	you received,	they received.

NOTE 1. Verbs whose past participle ends in *is* or *it*, form the past perfect, like those ending in *i* of the second conjugation, thus:

METTRE, *to put*, Past Participle, MIS, *makes*,

Je mis,	*tu mis*,	*il mit*,	*nous mîmes*,	*vous mîtes*,	*ils mirent*,
I put,	thou puttest,	he put,	we put,	you put,	they put.

DIRE, *to say*, Past Participle, DIT, *makes*,

Je dis,	*tu dis*,	*il dit*,	*nous dîmes*,	*vous dîtes*,	*ils dirent*,
I said,	thou saidest,	he said,	we said,	you said,	they said.

NOTE 2. The following verbs, of the second and fourth conjugations, follow the form of the third; that is, they form this tense by changing *u*, of the past participle, into *us*, *us*, *ut*, etc

Boire, to drink, makes *je bus*, I drank, *Croire*, to believe, makes, *je crus*, I believed,
Courir, to run, " *je courus*, I ran, *Moudre*, to grind, " *je moulus*, I ground,
Lire, to read, " *je lus*, I read, *Résoudre*, to resolve, " *je résolus*, I resolved
Plaire, *to please*, " *je plus*, *I pleased*, *Vivre*, to live, " *je vécus*, I lived,
Conclure, *to conclude*," *je conclus*, *I concluded*, and all verbs in *aître* and *oître*, (nine.) Thus:

CONNAÎTRE, *to know*, Past Participle, CONNU, *makes*,

Je connus,	*tu connus*,	*il connut*,	*nous connûmes*,	*vous connûtes*,	*ils connurent*,
I knew,	thou knewest,	he knew,	we knew,	you knew,	they knew.

The irregular past perfects, (all of which have been given in the last four lessons,) are the following:

INFINITIVE.	PAST PERFECT.	INFINITIVE.	PAST PERFECT.	INFINITIVE.	PAST PERFECT.
Couvrir,	*couvris*,	Naître,	*naquis*,	Venir,	*vins*,
Écrire,	*écrivis*,	Offrir,	*offris*,	Vaincre,	*vainquis*,
Être,	*fus*,	Ouvrir,	*ouvris*,	Vêtir,	*vêtis*,
Faire,	*fis*,	Souffrir,	*souffris*,	Voir,	*vis*,
Mourir,	*mourus*,	*Tenir*,	*tins*,	verbs in *aindre*, *eindre*, *oindre*, *wire*.	

To conquer,	*Conquérir*, (va. like *acquérir*. *Less.* 56,)
To subdue,	*Soumettre*, (compound of *mettre*,)
To let down, *cast down*. *To raise*,	*Baisser*. *Lever*,
To blush, *to become red*. *To injure*,	*Rougir*. *Nuire*, (*à* before the noun,)
To reduce. *To construct*,	*Réduire*, (*à* before infin.) *Construire*,
A *professor*. *Music*,	Un *professeur*. La *musique*,
That affair has injured his *reputation*,	Cette affaire a nui à sa *réputation*,
She conquers all hearts,	Elle conquiert tous les cœurs,
He subdues all his enemies,	Il soumet tous ses ennemis,
She blushes and casts down her eyes,	Elle rougit et baisse les yeux,
He reduces the number of his servants,	Il réduit le nombre de ses domestiques,
Does he construct a house of brick?	Construit-il une maison de brique?
He has constructed one of stone,	Il en a construit une de pierre,
A *veil*. The *fever*,	Un *voile*. La *fièvre*,
She raises her veil,	Elle lève son voile,
He died of the yellow fever,	Il mourut de la fièvre jaune.

Let the learner give the past perfect of the following verbs: Baisser*, *Demander*, *Lever*, *Conquérir*,† *Rougir*, *Avoir*, *Répondre*, *Vendre*, *Dire*, *Soumettre*, *Construire*, (*Less.* 67, *Rem.*,) *Nuire*, and *Réduire*.

Yesterday, as soon as I had my money, I departed; and as soon as he had his horse he came to me,	Hier, aussitôt que j'*eus* mon argent, je *partis*, et aussitôt qu'il *eut* son cheval il *vint* à moi,
Yesterday, as soon as we had our money, we departed,	Hier, aussitôt que nous *eûmes* notre argent, nous *partîmes*,

* For the participles from which this tense is formed, see *Less.* 57, *Rule*.

† *Conquérir* has for *past participle*, *conquis*. (*See Note to* ACQUIS, *Less.* 57, *Rem.* 1.)

The other day, after having labored a long time, you finished your work and they finished theirs,	L' autre jour, après avoir travaillé longtemps, vous *finites* votre ouvrage et ils *finirent* le leur,
I had three horses; but I sold one last week; I gave another to my friend the day before yesterday, and the third died yesterday in the evening,	J' avais trois chevaux; mais j' en *vendis* un la semaine passée; j' en *donnai* un autre à mon ami avant-hier, et le troisième *mourut* hier au soir,
Did you receive the letters which I wrote you last winter?	*Reçûtes*-vous les lettres que je vous *écrivis* l' hiver passé?
I received mine, and my brothers received theirs,	Je *reçus* la mienne et mes frères *reçurent* les leurs,
Cæsar reduced Spain and conquered Gaul; he penetrated even into Germany; he subdued Egypt,	César *réduisit* l' Espagne et *conquit* la Gaule; il *pénétra* jusqu' en Allemagne; il *soumit* l' Egypte.

Is not the general loved? He is loved, because he is very generous and conquers all hearts. Did Cæsar conquer Gaul? He conquered Gaul and subdued the Britons; Alexander (*Alexandre*) also conquered Asia and subdued Greece. Why does that girl cast down her eyes? She casts them down because she is ashamed. Does she always cast down her eyes when one looks at her? She often casts them down, but she raises them when one speaks to her. Why does she raise her veil? She raises it because she wishes to speak to her friends. Did she blush when you spoke to her yesterday? She blushed and cast down her eyes. Why did she let down her veil? She let it down because we were looking at her. What did your friend do, after having lost his fortune (*sa fortune?*) He reduced his expenses. Did he reduce the number of his servants? He reduced them one half (*de moitié.*) Did those workmen construct your house? They did construct it. Did you have it constructed last autumn? No, sir; I had it constructed in summer. Does eating too much injure the health? Yes, sir; and drinking too much injures it also. Why do you injure that man? I have not injured him; at least, I have not wished to injure him.

Does the professor love music? Did Alexander conquer more kingdoms than Napoleon? Was gold worth more formerly than at present? When you spoke to those ladies yesterday, what did they reply? Did they not reply at all? Did you not blush when they spoke to you? Was your grandfather acquainted with general

Washington? Did he know him intimately? Did not the cold, which there was (*Less.* 44, *Rem.* 1) last winter, injure those trees? When you had need of money the other day, did you sell your horse? When you received the money two years ago, had you not your due? When we were at your house, did we not tell you the news? How much are potatoes worth a bushel? How much will beef be worth a pound in winter? Will it be worth ten cents a pound? Will apples be worth a dollar a bushel? Why do you call the servant? Were you not wrong to throw away your fruit? Have you lived long in this street? (*Less.* 64, *Rem.* 2.) Have you lived here three years? Do you sometimes go along the shore of the sea? Do you like to go along the shore of the sea when it is very windy?

Who is that man? He is a surgeon (*Less.* 42, *Rem.* 1) very ingenious; are you not acquainted with him? Is that tailor ingenious? That lady looks interesting; is she not very interesting? Has the remedy done you good? An Irishman (*Irlandais*) went to see a professor of music, and asked him what was the price (*le prix*) of his lessons. The professor replied: Six dollars for the first month and three for the second. Then, (*alors,*) said the Irishman, I will come the second month.

69. SOIXANTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

PAST DEFINITE CONTINUED.

To fear,	*Craindre,* (*de* before the infinitive,)
To defend,	*Défendre,* (*de* before the infinitive,)
To beware of, to take care not,	*Prendre garde,* (*à* bef. noun, *de* bef. inf.)
Beware of that man,	Prends garde à cet homme,
Beware of him,	Prends garde à lui, (not *lui prends garde,*)
Take care not to fall,	Prenez garde de tomber,
He guards against the robbers,	Il prend garde aux voleurs,
To deny. To shave, (others,)	*Nier. Raser,*
Will you be willing?	*Voudrez-vous?*
I shall be willing,	*Je voudrai,*
The *guard.* The *truth.*	La *garde.* La *vérité,*

A *limb*, *member*. The *leg*,	Un *membre*. La *jambe*,
Friendship, from friendship,	L' *amitié*, (feminine,) par amitié,
Among, among the young people,	*Parmi*, parmi les jeunes gens,
Behind, behind him or her,	*Derrière*, derrière lui ou elle,
Behind them,	Derrière eux, derrière elles,
Before the door, behind the door,	Devant la porte, derrière la porte,
The *front door*,	La *porte de devant*,
The *back door*,	La *porte de derrière*,
An *obligation*. *Flattery*,	Une *obligation*. La *flatterie*,
In this manner,	*De cette manière*,
The *singing*. *Virtue*,	Le *chant*. La *vertu*,
What I love to hear is the truth,	*Ce que* j' aime à entendre *est* (or *c' est*, la vérité.

Remark 1. When a clause, beginning with a relative, intervenes between the verb *être* and its subject *ce*, as in this last phrase, the *ce* may or may not be repeated before the verb, if the verb be followed by a substantive singular. So:

What makes the *merit* of man is virtue,	*Ce qui* fait le *mérite* de l' homme *est* (or *c' est*) la vertu,

Remark 2. But if the verb be not followed by a substantive singular, the *ce* must be repeated.

What I desire is to see you,	*Ce que* je désire *c' est* de vous voir,
What *excites* me is the *wrongs* of men,	Ce qui me *révolte ce sont* les *injustices* des hommes.

Remark 3. When *ce* does not begin the first clause, it is to be used with *être* in the second, if that be preceded by an attribute clause of some length. Thus:

The thing most dear to man after virtue, is friendship,	La chose la plus chère à l' homme après la vertu, c' est l' amitié,
The music most agreeable, in a beautiful morning of spring, is the singing of the birds,	La musique la plus agréable, dans une belle matinée de printemps, c' est le chant des oiseaux,
Do you fear that danger?	Craignez-vous ce danger?
I do not fear it,	Je ne le crains pas,
I always defend my friends,	Je défends toujours mes amis,
He denies those facts,	Il nie ces faits.

Que is used in phrases like the following, to render the expression more forcible.

It is a beautiful thing to preserve secrecy,	C' est une belle chose *que* de garder le secret,
A battle is a terrible thing,	C' est une chose terrible *qu'* une bataille,
Money is a good friend,	C' est un bon ami *que* l' argent,
The barber shaves him twice a day,	Le barbier le rase deux fois par jour,

He will be willing to do that;	Il voudra faire cela,
All his limbs pain him,	Tous les membres lui font mal,
He has a wooden leg,	Il a une jambe de bois,
Do you open the front door or the back door?	Est-ce que vous ouvrez la porte de devant ou la porte de derrière?
I open both,	J' ouvre l' une et l' autre,
He fulfills all his obligations,	Il remplit toutes ses obligations,
The greatest part of men love flattery,	*La plupart* des hommes aiment la flatterie.

Remark 4. *La plupart.* like *bien*, takes the article before the following noun, while most words of quantity omit it (*See Less.* 40, *Rem.* 3.) The verbs, adjectives, or participles also, following *la plupart*, do not agree with it, but with the noun which it limits.

Most women are not beautiful,	La plupart des femmes ne sont pas belles,
The greatest part are amiable,	La plupart sont aimables,
I always write in that manner,	J' écris toujours de cette manière.

Let the learner give the past participle of the following verbs, according to Rule, Less. 57, *and the past perfect according to Rule, Less.* 68. *Bâtir, Punir, Devenir,* (a compound of *venir,*) *Appartenir,* (a compound of *tenir,*) *Nettoyer, Récompenser, Jouer, Savoir, Prévoir,* (a compound of *voir,*) *Concevoir, Fendre, Surprendre,* (a compound of *prendre,*) and *Craindre.*

Has that stranger courage? Yes, sir; he is a man who fears nothing. Do they fear him? They fear him more than they love him (*Less.* 48, *Rem.* 2.) Does he not love the truth? He loves the truth and defends it with more courage than you think. When that lady was in danger last evening did you defend her? I defended her at the peril (*au péril*) of my life. Do not the mountains defend your house from the wind? They defend it from the wind and from the cold. That man is dangerous, beware of him; are you on your guard against him? I am on my guard against him. Do you intrust the guard of your house to that dog? I intrust it to him. Do you deny that truth? No, sir; it is a fact which one can not deny. Why are you angry at (*fâché de*) that man? Because he denies what I say. Does the barber shave you? He shaves me every day. Will your father be willing to sell his horses? He will be willing to sell one. Do your limbs pain you? Yes, sir; all my limbs pain me. What member is the surgeon going to cut off for that boy? He is going to cut off his left leg. Did you find my pen among your books? I found your pen among my books and your pencil among my papers.

Are you going to open the front door or the back door? What I desire is to fulfill all my obligations; do you not desire to fulfill all

yours? What kings commonly like the best is flattery; do not most men like flattery? What I like the best is to hear the singing of the birds; do you not like much to hear their singing? The thing most precious in this world is virtue; do you not believe that? Does that scholar always read in that manner? Did the remedy which the physician gave the sick man on Wednesday do him good? Are your misfortunes without remedy? How long has that man been in this country? (*Less.* 64, *Rem.* 2.) He has been here hardly two months; have you been here longer (*plus longtemps*) than he? I have been here almost a year. What is that carpenter doing with his ax? That bird's wings are very strong; is not his beak very hard also? There are some wicked people; are they not dangerous? Those workmen have built me a house this summer; did they not build you one the last summer?

When that boy was at school last week did not the master punish him? When you studied sixteen hours a day did you not become sick? Did not New Orleans formerly belong to the French? When the boy found your pocket-book in New York did you reward him? When I took your book on Thursday did you know it? When your misfortunes happened (*arrivèrent*) to you in England, what did you do? An Irishman who had a looking-glass in (*à*) his hand, shut his eyes and placed (*plaçait*) it before his face; another asked him why he did that: My faith, (*ma foi,*) replied he, it is to see how I am when I sleep.

70. SOIXANTE-DIXIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF AVOIR.

J' aie, tu aies, il ait, nous ayons, vous ayez, ils aient.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD in French has a use widely different from that in English. It always depends upon some other verb or phrase, expressed or understood, and is preceded by the conjunction *que*, or a relative pronoun. It expresses the meaning of the verb, *under some condition of uncertainty or supposition;* not as actually being, but *as regarded by the mind*, and all the cases of its use might be reduced to this one rule. It will be necessary, however, for the instruction of the learner, to be more minute.

RULE I. Verbs expressing, *will, desire, doubt, fear, command, consent* and *affections of the mind* generally, govern a dependent verb in the subjunctive,* provided the subject of the dependent is different from that of the governing verb.

Dost thou *like* me to take care of thy things?	*Aimes*-tu que *j' aie*† soin de tes affaires?
I *like* thee to take care of them,	*J' aime* que tu en *aies* soin,
Do you wish us to have our money?	*Voulez*-vous que nous *ayons* notre argent?
We wish you to have it,	Nous *voulons* que vous l' *ayez*,
We desire that boy to have his, and his brothers to have theirs,	Nous *désirons* que ce garçon *ait* le sien, et que ses frères *aient* le leur.

The following are among the verbs which govern the subjunctive with *que* according to the above rule.

Aimer,‡	Consentir,	Être content,	Trouver bon,
Aimer mieux,	Craindre,	Préférer,	Trouver mauvais,
Attendre,	Défendre, *to forbid*,	Prendre garde,	Vouloir,
Avoir envie,	Désirer,	Souffrir,	Avoir besoin.
Avoir peur,	Douter,	Souhaiter,	

To order, *Ordonner*, (*à* before person, *de* before infinitive.)

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF ÊTRE.

Je sois, tu sois, il soit, nous soyons, vous soyez, ils soient.

Dost thou await until I be there?	*Attends*-tu que je *sois* là?
I await till thou be there,	J' *attends* que tu y *sois*,
I have a desire that you may be pleased, and that your relations may be pleased also,	J' *ai envie* que vous *soyez* content, et que vos parents *soient* contents aussi,
He is afraid that you are angry, and that your father is angry also,	Il *a peur* que vous ne *soyez* fâché, et que votre père ne *soit* fâché aussi,

* *Espérer*, though expressing an affection of the mind, does not govern the subjunctive.

† Here the second verb *aie* evidently depends on the first *aimes*, and has a different subject, *je* instead of *vous*. *Voulez-vous le livre que j' ai?* Here the second verb is not subjunctive because it does not depend on *voulez*, which here has *livre* for its object. *Voulez-vous avoir soin de mes affaires?* Here the second verb *avoir* is not subjunctive because it has no subject different from that of *voulez*.

‡ We observe that the governed verb after all these does not express a thing positively. To say that we *love, expect, desire, fear, consent*, etc., that an act be done, is very different from saying that it is, or will be done. It is representing it as doubtful, supposititious or merely as regarded by the mind.

Avoir peur, *craindre*, and all verbs expressing *fear* and *apprehension*, not negative, take *ne* before the following subjunctive.

Your father orders that the servant take care of the horses,	Votre père *ordonne** que le domestique *ait* soin des chevaux,
Order the domestic to come,	Ordonnez au domestique de venir,
Dost thou consent that I have these books?	*Consens*-tu que *j' aie* ces livres?
I consent that thou shouldst have them,	Je *consens* que tu les *aies*,
Does the master forbid you to be here early?	Le maître *défend*-il que vous *soyez* ici de bonne heure?

Remark 1. *Prendre garde que*, when not negative, takes *ne* before the following subjunctive.

Beware lest this child have the fever,	*Prends garde* que cet enfant *n' ait* la fièvre,
He forbids us to be here before noon,	*Il défend* que nous *soyons* ici avant midi,
He is afraid that they are sick,	*Il a peur* qu' ils *ne soient* malades.

Subjunctive Present of Aller.

J' aille, tu ailles, il aille, nous allions, vous alliez, ils aillent.

Do you consent to my going to the theatre?	Est-ce que vous *consentez* que j' *aille* au *théâtre*?
I consent to thy going there,	Je *consens* que tu y *ailles*,
Do you prefer that my brother should go?	*Aimez*-vous *mieux* que mon frère y *aille*?
I consent that you both go,	Je *consens* que vous y *alliez* l' un et l' autre,
He approves of their going to the ball, and he disapproves of our going there,	Il *trouve bon* qu' ils *aillent* au bal, et il *trouve mauvais* que nous y *allions*,
He wishes me to be *laborious*,	Il *veut* que je *sois laborieux*,
We are afraid of their going on the lake,	Nous *craignons* qu' ils *n' aillent* sur le lac,
He is afraid of my going to the general's,	Il *a peur* que je *n' aille* chez le général,
To descend,	*Descendre*,
That traveler has descended from the mountain,	Ce voyageur est descendu de la montagne.

Descendre, and several other verbs, take sometimes *avoir* and sometimes *être* for auxiliary. *See Less.* 88.

The *theatre*. *Noble*,	Le *théâtre*. *Noble*,
Nevertheless, *in the mean time*,	*Cependant*,
Otherwise. *After*,	*Autrement*. *Après*.

* Verbs expressing command or order may govern the infinitive, and they sometimes take the *future* or *conditional*. The latter tenses are used, when the command is so authoritative as to be regarded fixed and certain, as the command of sovereigns, courts of justice, etc. The subjunctive, however, in this case would not be a fault.

REMARK 2. *Autre* and *autrement*, (like comparatives of superiority and inferiority, (*Less.* 48, *Rem.* 2,) when not negative, take *ne* before the following verb.

He is quite (other than) different from what he was,	Il est tout autre qu' il *n*' était,
He does quite (otherwise than) differently from what you believe,	Il fait tout autrement que vous *ne* croyez,
He does not differently from what you believe,	Il ne fait pas autrement que vous croyez,
That man is noble by both sides,	Cet homme est noble des deux côtés,
He promised me to do that, nevertheless he does quite otherwise,	Il m' a promis de faire cela, cependant il fait tout autrement,
He does not approve of children's having much money,	Il ne trouve pas bon que les enfants aient beaucoup d' argent,
She is afraid of our going on the river,	Elle craint que nous n' allions sur la rivière,
God commands us to love him,	Dieu nous commande de l' aimer,
The king orders me to go to the war,	Le roi ordonne que j' aille à la guerre.

Commander and *ordonner* take *de* before the infinitive.

He orders the servant to do that,	Il ordonne au domestique de faire cela.

Do you approve of my going to the theatre? I approve of your going there sometimes; but I disapprove of your going there every night. Do you disapprove of our having much money? I disapprove of your having more money than your brother. Are you afraid that your servant may be sick? I am afraid of it. Do you wish your brother to go to church on Sunday? I wish him to go to church on Sunday and to go to school the rest of the week. Does the master command the scholars to make no noise? He commands them to make none. Does the general command the soldiers of the king? He commands them all. What has God ordered us? He has ordered us above all to love him. Has your father come down from his room? Yes, sir; he has been down for a long while. Is your friend noble? He is noble by both sides. Is he noble by his mother's side? He is noble by his father and his mother's side. Is that man your friend? He promised me to be so; nevertheless he has done quite otherwise. Do you need some wood? No, sir; there is sufficient in the stove. Are those our hats? Yes, sir; this is mine, that is yours.

Has the countryman some ducks and some turkeys? Has he not some few? Has the bad weather injured (done harm to) the crop?

Where will you go after the harvest? Here is the rest of my money; have you not more than I? Do you wish to get some fire made in the stove? (*See Less.* 66.) Does this stove smoke sometimes? Do you wish to buy a few ducks? I wish to buy a few ducks and a few turkeys; has the countryman some good ones? Is it not often very hot in the time of harvest? Does the surgeon live next to (*à côté de*) your house? Have you had (got) your gloves and stockings washed? Will you get your boots mended? I wish to get a coat made; do you wish to get one made also? Did you not cover your floors last winter with new carpets? When you had need did your cousin offer to lend you money? I suffered from the cold last week; did not you suffer also? Did not that poor man suffer more than we? I wrote you a letter in November; did you receive it the same month? My father was born the twentieth of January seventeen hundred and ninety-eight; was not yours born the same year? That child astonishes every body by his wit; why does he tear his books? Do those papers belong to you?

Those children understand (*conçoivent*) these phrases better than you think; (*Less.* 48, *Rem.* 1;) are they not studious? Will you be ready to set out sooner than I? Those children make such a (*Less.* 67) noise that one can hear nothing; do they not confuse (*Less.* 65) your head? A king of France asked (*demandait*) one day of (*à*) a bishop, if he was noble. Sire, (*sire,*) answered the bishop, in Noah's ark (*l' arche de Noë*) there were three brothers; I can not say from which I am descended. Did the gardener put the flowers in the house or did he leave them out? Does he always leave them out? Your friend has gone to meet the president; shall we not go to meet him? Have you ever seen such an animal as that? Did men formerly live longer than at present? Were they formerly stronger than at this day? Will you be ready sooner than I? Did Hannibal conquer Italy? Did your father die of the yellow fever?

Charles the Fifth, (*Quint,*) who spoke several European (*européennes*) languages fluently, (*couramment,*) said often that it was necessary (*fallait*) to speak Spanish to the gods, Italian to the ladies, French to our friends, German to soldiers, English to geese, (*oies,*) Hungarian (*hongrois*) to horses, and Bohemian (*bohémien*) to the devil (*le diable.*)

71. SOIXANTE ET ONZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

RULE II. Impersonal verbs, and adjectives following *il est* or *c' est*, which give to the following verb a condition of *uncertainty* or *supposition*, with the conjunction *que*, govern that verb in the subjunctive.*

Such are those which express necessity, possibility, uncertainty, surprise, pleasure and emotions of the mind generally, as in rule first :* The following are some of this kind :

It is to be wished that,	*Il est à désirer* que, / *Il est à souhaiter* que,
It is time that. *It is doubtful* that,	*Il est temps* que. *Il est douteux* que,
It is unjust that. *It is just* that,	*Il est injuste* que. *Il est juste* que,
It is necessary that,	*Il est nécessaire* que,
It is possible that. *It is proper* that,	*Il est possible* que. *Il est à propos* que,
It is surprising that,	*Il est surprenant* que,
It is necessary for me to go home,	*Il faut* que j' *aille* chez moi,
It is necessary that thou be ready early,	*Il est necessaire* que tu *sois* prêt de bonne heure,
It is suitable that he have his money,	*Il convient* qu' il *ait* son argent.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF VENIR.

Je vienne, tu viennes, il vienne, nous venions, vous veniez, ils viennent.

So terminates the subjunctive present of *Tenir*, with all the compounds of *Venir* and *Tenir*.

Is it important that I come here to-morrow ?	Est-ce qu' il *importe* que je *vienne* ici demain ?
It is important that thou come here, and that thy brother come also,	*Il importe* que tu *viennes* ici, et que ton frère y *vienne* aussi,
Is it not sufficient that we come the day after to-morrow ?	Ne *suffit-il* pas que nous *venions* après-demain ?
It is better that you come to-morrow,	*Il vaut mieux* que vous *veniez* demain,
It is to be desired that your cousins come,	*Il est à désirer* que vos cousins *viennent*,
It is to be wished that they return soon,	*Il est à souhaiter* qu' ils *reviennent* bientôt,
It is time that you become prudent,	*Il est temps* que vous *deveniez* prudent,

* This rule is essentially the same as Rule I. ; To say that it is necessary, possible, desirable, important, surprising, etc., that an act be done, is to express it under the same condition of uncertainty as in the former rule.

It is doubtful whether we succeed in doing that,	*Il est douteux* que nous *parvenions* à faire cela,
Must I hold thy books?	Est-ce qu' *il faut* que je *tienne* tes livres?
Thou must hold them,	*Il faut* que tu les *tiennes*,
It is unjust that France should hold Rome,	*Il est injuste* que la France *tienne* Rome,
It is just that we should hold California,	*Il est juste* que nous *tenions* la Californie,
It is not possible for you to hold these horses,	*Il n' est pas possible* que vous *teniez* ces chevaux,
It is proper that they hold them,	*Il est à propos* qu' ils les *tiennent*,
It is surprising that these beautiful houses should belong to that man,	*Il est surprenant* que ces belles maisons *appartiennent* à cet homme.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF FAIRE.

Je fasse, tu fasses, il fasse, nous fassions, vous fassiez, ils fassent.

Must thou do thy work soon?	Est-ce qu' il faut que tu *fasses* bientôt ton ouvrage?
I must do it to-day,	Il faut que je le *fasse* aujourd' hui,
It is becoming that he do that,	Il convient qu' il *fasse* cela,
Is it important that you do your exercises well?	Importe-t-il que vous *fassiez* bien vos thèmes?
It is important that we do them without faults,	Il importe que nous les *fassions* sans fautes,
It is sufficient that they do their duty,	Il suffit qu' ils *fassent* leur devoir,
That affair is very doubtful,	Cette affaire est bien douteuse,
The *United States*,	Les *États-Unis*,
To ask,	*Demander*, (*à* before person, *de* or *à* before infinitive,)
The *governor*. *Wisdom*,	Le *gouverneur*. La *sagesse*,
What you ask is just,	Ce que vous demandez est juste,
I ask you to hear me,	Je vous demande de m' écouter,
I ask the scholar for his book,	Je demande son livre à l' écolier,
He asks money of his father,	Il demande de l' argent à son père.

REMARK. When the verb in one of the conditions mentioned in Rules I. and II., is followed by *de ce que* instead of the conjunction *que*, the indicative is used.* But *de ce que* is allowed only after the verbs which take *de* before their object. After such verbs *de ce que* or *que* may be used. The number of these verbs is very limited.

I am sorry that he is doing that,	Je suis fâché *qu'* il *fasse* cela, or *de ce qu'* il *fait* cela,
I am surprised at his going there,	Je suis surpris *qu'* il *aille* là, or *de ce qu'* il *va* là,

* The reason is, that in such instances the second verb does not depend directly on the first, but on *de ce que*.

Are you astonished at my doing my exercise well? Is it not better to give than to receive? (*Less.* 42, *Rem.* 3.) Yes, sir; and it is better to recognize benefits than to forget them. Is that man rich? He is not rich, but he has the things necessary to life. Will you come to my house this evening? I can not come this evening, but I will come as soon as it shall be possible. Are you acquainted with the governor? Yes, sir; he is a wise man and always speaks to the purpose (properly.) Have you heard the news? Yes, sir; it is very surprising. That lady is of a surprising beauty; are you acquainted with her? Yes, sir; she is a daughter of the governor. Do you wish me to hold your books? No, sir; it is not suitable for you to hold them. Is it just that we hold California? It is just that California belong to the United States. Is it necessary that the physician come here twice a day? It is sufficient that he come once every day. Is it possible for those workmen to do their work to-day? It is possible, but it is not necessary; it is sufficient that they do it to-morrow. Are you afraid that I may do my exercises badly? No, sir; I am afraid that your cousin may do his badly. Are you sorry that the French are in Rome?

Is it unjust that Cuba belong to the United States? It is proper that we do our exercises immediately; does not the master wish you to do yours immediatly? Of (*à*) whom does that man ask money? Does he not ask some of my brother? Does he ask your brother to give it to him or to lend it to him? Were you born in the United States or in Europe? Have the United States conquered many countries? Did Napoleon subdue Spain? Did England subdue the United States? The other day, when you looked at that young lady, why did she lower her veil? Did she not blush? Did not Alexander reduce Asia under his power? Did not the Romans (*Romains*) reduce almost all the world under their power? What is that carpenter constructing? He is constructing a house; do you get a house constructed this year? Has that man injured you? Does he seek to injure you? Is the music professor dead? Did he die of the fever? Did he die of the yellow fever in August 1848? That which I desire the most, after wisdom, virtue and health, is friendship; (*Less.* 69, *Rem.* 1;) do you not desire it more than riches?

Is the surgeon going to cut off that man's leg? Does that scholar always recite his lessons in that manner? Does that lady always wear a veil when she goes out? Have you ever had the yellow fever? Is the barber going to shave that sick man? Shall you be willing to give more for that horse than he is worth? (*Less.* 48, *Rem.* 2.) A child of ten years astonished every body by the correctness (*justesse*) of his replies (*répliques.*) One day a bishop who thought to puzzle (*embarrasser*) him, said to him: "My friend, I promise to give you an apple, if you will tell me where is God." "My lord," (*Monseigneur,*) answered the child to him, I promise to give you two, if you can tell me where he is not. That lady is of a surprising wisdom; do you not admire her? The wisdom which I admire the most is to do well one's (*son*) whole duty; is not that true (*vraie*) wisdom? (*Less.* 69, *Rem.* 3.)

72. SOIXANTE-DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

RULE III. The relatives, *qui, que, lequel, duquel, auquel, dont,* and *ou,* when they impart to the following verb a condition of uncertainty, and some conjunctions which always impart it, govern that verb in the subjunctive.

I wish to find a man who is honest,	Je veux trouver un homme *qui est* honnête,
I wish to find a man who is (may be) honest,	Je veux trouver un homme *qui soit* honnête.

In the former of these phrases the man is known and understood to be honest; in the second, he is yet to be found.* So in the first following, the house is selected and known to be beautiful; in the next, it is yet to be selected.

I am going to buy a house which is beautiful,	Je vais acheter une maison *qui est* belle,

* That is, if I am looking for a certain individual with whom I am acquainted, and whom I know to be honest, I should say, *Je veux trouver un homme qui est honnête;* but if I wish to seek out some honest man for any purpose, not knowing whom, I should say, *Je veux trouver un homme qui soit honnête.*

I am going to buy a house which is (may be) beautiful, — Je vais acheter une maison *qui soit* belle.

The learner can easily determine on reflection, as in the above examples, whether the relative and the verb express something definite and known, or something uncertain and supposititious. In the former case, the indicative is used; in the latter, the subjunctive.

The following are some of the conjunctions which govern the subjunctive, according to the above rule.

*That, in order that,**	*Afin que,*
Unless. Before,	*À moins que. Avant que,*
Though. Provided that,	*Bien que. Pourvu que,*
Until. Though,	*Jusqu' à ce que. Quoique,*
In order that, that,	*Pour que,*
If, in case,	*Au cas que, en cas que,*
I give him money that he may be satisfied,	Je lui donne de l' argent *afin qu'* il *soit* content.

À moins que takes *ne* before the following subjunctive:

He will not be praised unless he be good,	Il ne sera pas loué *à moins qu'* il *ne soit* bon,
Will you go before he comes?	Irez-vous *avant qu'* il *vienne*?
Unless you do your work,	*À moins que* vous ne *fassiez* votre ouvrage.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF POUVOIR.

Je puisse, tu puisses, il puisse. nous puissions, vous puissiez, il puissent.

Although he can not read, he buys books,	*Bien qu'* il ne *puisse* pas lire, il achète des livres,
Thou shalt have my book provided that I can find it,	Tu auras mon livre *pourvu que* je *puisse* le trouver,
Stay here until thou canst recite thy lesson,	Reste ici *jusqu' à ce que* tu *puisses* réciter ta leçon,
Lend us some money that we may be able to buy these books,	Prêtez-nous de l' argent *pour que* nous *puissions* acheter ces livres,
If you can find my money I am willing to give you half of it,	*Au cas que* vous *puissiez* trouver mon argent je veux vous en donner la moitié,
In case they can recite their lessons well they shall be rewarded,	*En cas qu'* ils *puissent* bien réciter leurs leçons ils seront récompensés.

REMARK 1. *Que* used for any conjunction governing the subjunctive, and also for a second *si*, takes the subjunctive after it.

---

* This third rule, again we observe, contains essentially the same principle as the two former. To say in order that, unless, though, etc., an act be done, is to represent it merely in a supposititious state, not as a positive fact.

In order that you may have friends and may be happy, be good,	Afin que vous ayez des amis et *que* vous *soyez* heureux, soyez bon,
If you go to the city and if you meet my friend, give him this,	Si vous allez à la ville et *que* vous *rencontriez* mon ami, donnez-lui ceci.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF SAVOIR.

Je sache, tu saches, il sache, nous sachions, vous sachiez, ils sachent.

In order that thou mayest know thy lesson, it is necessary to study,	*Afin que* tu *saches* ta leçon, il faut étudier,
Unless I know my lesson I shall not go home,	*À moins que* je ne *sache* ma leçon je n' irai pas chez moi,
I shall know my lesson before he knows his,	Je saurai ma leçon *avant qu'* il *sache* la sienne,
Though we know our lessons we recite them badly,	*Bien que* nous *sachions* nos leçons nous les récitons mal,
Provided that you know your lessons you can go home,	*Pourvu que* vous *sachiez* vos leçons vous pouvez aller chez vous,
They can not go away until they know theirs,	Ils ne peuvent pas s' en aller *jusqu' à ce qu'* ils *sachent* les leurs,
To demand. For, (conj.) *because*,	*Exiger. Car*,
He requires that we do that,	Il *exige* que nous *fassions* cela, (*Rule* I.)
Acquaintance, knowledge,	La *connaissance*,
Suitable. Certainly,	*Convenable, conforme. Certainement*,
Together. At home,	*Ensemble. À la maison*,
To be better off,	*En être plus avancé*,
When you shall have money will you be better off?	Quand vous aurez de l' argent en serez-vous plus avancé ?
He has great acquaintance with history,	Il a une grande connaissance de l' histoire,
I see my acquaintances often,	Je vois souvent mes connaissances,
He incurs (makes) an expense suitable to his fortune,	Il fait une dépense conforme à sa fortune,
Certainly he is very able,	Certainement il est très-habile,
He is at home,	Il est à la maison,
They sing together,	Ils chantent ensemble.

REMARK 2. When a relative is preceded by an expression implying comparison, it almost always imparts uncertainty to the verb, and accordingly almost always governs the subjunctive.

Is there any thing which is more agreeable ?	Y a-t-il *quelque chose qui soit* plus agréable ?
There is nothing which is more agreeable,	Il n' y a *rien qui soit* plus agréable,
He is the only man to whom I can intrust my affairs,	C' est *le seul* homme à *qui* je *puisse* confier mes affaires,

He is the greatest general that America has,	C' est le *plus grand* général *que* l' Amérique *ait*,
He is the best man that there is,	C' est le *meilleur* homme *qu'* il y *ait*,
There are few men who know how to be happy,	Il y a *peu* d' hommes *qui sachent* être heureux,
It is the only place where you can be satisfied,	C' est *la seule* place *où* vous *puissiez* être content.

Do you always recite your lessons well? No, sir; though I know them, I can not always recite them well. Is your cousin the best scholar that there is in the school? He is not the best, for, although he can learn fast, he does not study much. Do you study in order to know your lessons? I study in order to know my lessons, and to be able to speak French. Are you willing to lend us a book which we can read? Certainly; I am willing to lend you one, provided that you can read French. Is there any one who can do his exercises without a fault? Yes, sir; although my brother does not know French well, he makes no mistakes in his exercises. In case those boys can have their money will they go to the city? They will go if they know their lessons. Does the master demand that you should know your lessons early? He demands that we should know them at half-past ten. Do the masters demand too much? No, sir; they demand nothing which is not suitable. Are those men of your acquaintance? Yes, sir; we traveled together the last summer.

Is there any thing which can be more agreeable than the beauties of nature? Is there any one who can speak better than that orator? Lend me a book of which you are not in want; have you not one? Do you wish to find a place where you can study the whole day? Are you acquainted with any one who knows more than doctor B.? Is the doctor at home? We are afraid that you may be sick; are you in good health? We forbid the children's going to the garden; have they gone there? Let us beware of those men; are they not thieves? Beware of falling; is it not slippery? Beware lest that man do you harm; (*Less.* 70, *Rem.* 1;) is he not dangerous? Do those men deny what I say? Do you deny it? We can not deny that truth; do you deny it? Does the barber shave you every two days? Do all men love the truth? Does that sick man's limbs pain him? Does the surgeon cut off the lame man's leg? Will he have

a wooden leg? Do you live in friendship with all your acquaintance? Is not friendship worth more than riches? Have you seen my dictionary among your books? Will you open the front door and the back door? Bring me the umbrella which is behind the door; does it not rain?

Do not most men love flattery? The three best things which there are in this world, are virtue, wisdom, and health; are they not the best? Do you admire the singing of that lady? Does she always sing in that manner? Your uncle desires that we go together to the grand ball which the governor gives to-morrow evening; what say you of it? Does it please (*plaît*) you that I go with you? It is more suitable that I stay (*reste*) at home, and that you go with your sister. Nevertheless, if my uncle demands that it be otherwise, I consent to go with you. Does your young friend approve of her aunt's making so long a journey without her, and that she leave (*laisse*) her thus (*ainsi*) alone in the country, without friends and without acquaintance? No, sir; certainly not, she is very sorry that her aunt has an intention (*intention*) so strange. "Has your sister who lives in (*habite*) the United States, a son or a daughter?" said a person to an Irishman, his friend. "To tell you the whole truth," answered (*répondit*) the Irishman, embarrassed, (*embarrassé,*) "I do not yet know whether I am an uncle or an aunt, but I will write to my sister to pray her to inform (*informer*) me, in regard to it, as soon as possible."

73. SOIXANTE-TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

REMARK 1. *Quelque...que*, *quel que*, and *quoi que*, and *si...que*, meaning *quelque...que*, as though not conjunctions, affect the verb in the same way as the conjunctions in the preceding lesson, and may be considered as governing the subjunctive according to Rule III.

Whatever riches he may have, he will be unhappy,	*Quelques* richesses *qu'* il *ait*, il sera malheureux,
However rich he may be, he will be unhappy,	*Quelque* riche *qu'* il *soit*, il sera malheureux,

Whatever. However,	*Quel que*, (adjective.) *Quelque*, (adv.)
Whatever may be,	*Quel que soit,*
Whatever may be your *design*, you do me harm,	*Quel que soit* votre *dessein*, vous me faites tort,
Whatever may be his misfortunes, he *supports* them with great courage,	*Quels que soient* ses malheurs, il les *supporte* avec grand courage,
Whatever he may do he will be blamed,	*Quoi qu'* il *fasse*, il sera blâmé,
However tall he may be, he does not frighten me,	*Si* grand *qu'* il *soit*, il ne me fait pas peur.

Remark 2. There are some conjunctions which, like the relatives, sometimes impart to the following verb a character of positiveness, and sometimes of uncertainty, and accordingly take sometimes the indicative and sometimes the subjunctive after them.

The following are of this kind:

In such a way that,	*De façon que,*
In such a manner that,	*De manière que,*
In such a way that,	*De sorte que,*
Except that, save that,	*Si ce n' est que,*
If not, except that,	*Si non que.*

The learner will determine what mood to use after these, in the same manner as after the relatives in the preceding lesson, *Rule III.*

You fulfill your duty in such a manner that you are esteemed,	Vous remplissez votre devoir *de manière que* vous *êtes* estimé,
Fulfill your duty in such a manner that you may be esteemed,	Remplissez votre devoir *de manière que* vous *soyez* estimé.

The learner will readily understand the distinction in the two following phrases, and be able to apply it in others.

He lives in such a way that he does harm to no one,	Il vit *de façon qu'* il ne *fait* de mal à personne,
Live in such a way that you may do harm to no one,	Vivez *de façon que* vous ne *fassiez* de mal à personne.

Rule IV. Verbs used *negatively* or *interrogatively*, if they impart a character of uncertainty to the dependent verbs; that is, if the speaker look upon what it expresses as doubtful or false, govern it in the subjunctive; otherwise in the indicative.

I do not say that he is my friend,	Je *ne* dis *pas* qu' il *est* mon ami,
I do not say that he is my friend,	Je *ne* dis *pas* qu' il *soit* mon ami.

In the first of these phrases, the speaker has no doubt that the person is his friend; in the second, he doubts or disbelieves it. Still plainer illustrations are the following:

This man is honest; do you believe that he is honest?	Cet homme-ci est honnête; croyez-vous qu' il *est* honnête?
That man is not honest; do you believe that he is honest?	Cet homme-là n' est pas honnête; croyez-vous qu' il *soit* honnête?
Your nephew is not studious; do you think that he is?	Votre neveu n' est pas studieux; pensez-vous qu' il le *soit?*
That man is learned; do you think that he is?	Cet homme est savant; pensez-vous qu' il l' *est?*
He is without sense; he does not believe that there is a God,	Il est insensé; il *ne* croit *pas* qu' il y *a* un Dieu,
He is not superstitious; he does not believe that there are *ghosts*,	Il n' est pas superstitieux; il *ne* croit *pas* qu' il y *ait* des *revenants.*

These examples show that the indicative or subjunctive is to be used, as positiveness or uncertainty prevail in the mind of the speaker. As, however, uncertainty is the more common condition in interrogative and negative verbs, the subjunctive is to be used after them in these exercises when no reason appears to the contrary.

To be used to,	*Être fait à*,
He is used to fatigue,	Il est fait à la fatigue,
He is used to it,	Il y est fait,
To get used to,	*Se faire à*,
He has got used to danger since he has been in it,	Il s' est fait au danger depuis qu' il y est,
To affirm. To assure,	*Affirmer. Assurer*,
To declare. To hope,	*Déclarer. Espérer*,
To confess. To suppose,	*Avouer. Supposer.*

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF PRENDRE.

Je prenne, tu prennes, il prenne, nous prenions, vous preniez, ils prennent.

So of all the compounds of *Prendre*; as, *Apprendre, Comprendre, Entreprendre, Surprendre*, and others.

Do you affirm that I take your books?	Est-ce que vous affirmez que je *prenne* vos livres?
I do not affirm that you take them,	Je n' affirme pas que vous les *preniez*,
I affirm that the boy takes them,	J' affirme que le garçon les prend,
Does he declare that the boy takes his papers?	Déclare-t-il que le garçon *prenne* ses papiers?
No, sir; he declares that you take them,	Non, M.; il déclare que vous les prenez,
Does he confess that they take your ink?	Avoue-t-il qu' ils *prennent* votre encre?

He confesses that they take it,	Il avoue qu' ils la prennent,
Do you assure the master that we take his books?	Assurez-vous au maître que nous *prenions* ses livres?
No, sir; I assure him that his son takes them,	Non, M.; je lui assure que son fils les prend,
Do you hope that your friend may return to-day?	Est-ce que vous espérez que votre ami *revienne* aujourd' hui?
I do not hope it, for he departed yesterday,	Je ne l' espère pas, car il a parti hier,
Do you suppose that the boys take your fruit?	Supposez-vous que les garçons *prennent* votre fruit?
I suppose that they take it,	Je suppose qu' ils le prennent,
To commit,	*Commettre*, (compound of *Mettre*,)
While. A *companion*,	*Tandis que.* Un *camarade*, *compagnon*,
Virtuous. His *progress*,	*Vertueux.* Son *progrès*,
You have committed several faults, while your companion has committed none at all,	Vous avez commis plusieurs fautes tandis que votre camarade n' en a pas commis du tout,
I commit many,	J' en commets beaucoup.

Is that man happy? No, sir; for he is not virtuous; and however rich and learned one may be, he can not be happy if he is not virtuous. Will those poor men have friends? Yes, sir; however poor they may be, they will always have friends. Can that man keep (*garder*) his riches long? No, sir; whatever riches he may have, he can not keep them long. Is your companion in good health? No, sir; he is sick, and whatever remedy he may take, he will be sick a long time. Whatever may be the intention (*intention*) of your companion, has he not committed a fault? He has committed several. Does the governor fulfill his duties in such a way that he is esteemed? He fulfills them in such a way that he is always esteemed. Does your companion write his exercises in such a manner that he is praised? No, sir; he writes them in such a manner that he is often blamed. Act (*faites*) in such a way (*en sorte que*) that the master may be satisfied; is he satisfied? No, sir; he says that I commit many faults. Is the friend of your sister beautiful? She is beautiful except that her mouth may be a little too large. Is that boy good? He is very good except that he is lazy. Is the governor a good-looking man? He is good-looking except that his skin may be too dark.

Is not his wife very good? She is good except that she is discontented. However numerous the enemy may be, can we not beat him? However rich that man may be, are there not some richer than he?

Do they affirm that we take their pens? They do not affirm that you take them. Do they declare that thou takest them? They declare that I take them. Do you confess that they take them? We do not confess that they take them. Do they assure you that I take them? They assure me that thou takest them. Do your relations hope that you will be rich? They do not hope that I shall be rich; they hope that I shall be virtuous and happy. Do they suppose that you make good progress in the French language? They suppose that I make great progress in it. Will you be willing to sell us your house? I shall be willing to sell it to you the next spring. Will your companions be willing to sell us their horses? They will be willing to sell you theirs, and we shall be willing to sell you ours. Do you order the servants to make some fire? We order them to make some. However large that house may be, is it not too small for the prince? However good he may be, has he not some enemies?

The music which I the most frequently admire, is the singing of the birds; do you not admire it? Does your mother approve of your going to the theatre? Does she disapprove of your going there often? Has your father-in-law come down from his room? Do you often descend the mountain alone? I wish to go to the theatre; nevertheless, if you prefer that we go to the ball, I will go there with you; do you not wish to go to the theatre? He has promised to be your friend; nevertheless, has he not done quite otherwise than he promised? (*Less.* 70, *Rem.* 2.) Will you go to the city after dinner? Tell me, my little friend, is it just that your companion should be punished, while it is you who have committed the fault, and he (*qu' il*) has done his duty well? Not at all, sir; it is good that I be punished and that he be rewarded. Do you wish me to go before breakfast to inform (*informer*) our friend that the ceremony is going to take place this evening, at six o'clock? Very well, go and tell him to come at a quarter before six, that he may not be late (*en retard.*) However, in case it be bad weather this evening, the ceremony will take place to-morrow. It is important that he know that. I hope it will not rain to-morrow; do you think it may rain?

74. SOIXANTE-QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

To despair,	*Désespérer*, (*de* bef. noun and infin.)
To disown, to deny,	*Disconvenir*, (compound of *venir*, *de* before the noun and the infinitive.)

REMARK 1. Verbs which contain in themselves the force of a negative, as *Nier*, *Désespérer*, and *Disconvenir*, used affirmatively, govern the subjunctive or the indicative, in the same way as others used negatively.

He denies that I learn my lessons well,	Il *nie* que j' *apprenne* bien mes leçons,
I despair of his learning that lesson,	Je *désespère* qu' il *apprenne* cette leçon,
He denies (does not grant) that they comprehend that,	Il *disconvient* qu' ils *comprennent* cela.

REMARK 2. *Désespérer*, *Disconvenir*, *Douter*, and *Nier*, when negative, take *ne* before the following verb:

I do not deny that that may be,	Je *ne nie pas* que cela *ne* soit,
I deny that that can be,	Je nie que cela *soit*,
We do not despair of his doing that,	Nous *ne désespérons pas* qu' il *ne fasse* cela,
We despair of his doing that,	Nous désespérons qu' il *fasse* cela,
They despair of your comprehending that,	Ils désespèrent que vous *compreniez* cela.

REMARK 3. Conditional clauses beginning with *si* and followed by *que*, (conjunction,) and a verb, govern that verb in the subjunctive, in the same way as interrogative verbs in Rule IV; that is, if the speaker looks upon what it expresses as false or doubtful.

If you believe that that man is *guilty*, punish him,	*Si* vous croyez *que* cet homme *est coupable*, punissez-le,
If you believe that that man is guilty, punish him,	*Si* vous croyez *que* cet homme *soit* coupable, punissez-le.

In the former of these sentences the speaker believes the man guilty; in the latter, he doubts or disbelieves it.

The following illustrations may be clearer:

If you say that that is *true*, you are right,	*Si* vous dites *que* cela *est vrai*, vous avez raison,
If you say that that is true, you are wrong,	*Si* vous dites *que* cela *soit* vrai, vous avez tort,
If he supposes that this man is honest, he is right,	*S'* il suppose *que* cet homme *est* honnête, il a raison,
If he supposes that that man is honest, he does not know him,	*S'* il suppose *que* cet homme *soit* honnête, il ne le connaît pas,

If you think that we undertake that, you are right,	*Si* vous pensez *que* nous *entreprenons* cela, vous avez raison,
If you think that we undertake that without money, you are wrong,	*Si* vous pensez *que* nous *entreprenions* cela sans argent, vous avez tort.

Of the above three remarks, the first and third may both be considered as comprehended under Rule IV. The first, respects what are in essence verbs used negatively; and the third, what are in essence verbs used interrogatively, both under an affirmative form.

Guilty, culpable. True,	*Coupable. Vrai,*
To act. To return, go back,	*Agir. Retourner,*
To sup. To attach, to tie,	*Souper. Attachèr,*
Will he conceive, understand?	*Concevra-t-il?* (future of *concevoir*,)
The *ear*. The *chimney*,	L' *oreille*, (feminine.) La *cheminée*,
That *brandy*. A *basket*,	Cette *eau de vie*. Un *panier*,
Correct. Useless,	*Corrèct. Inutile*,
The *pain, trouble*. Without trouble,	La *peine*. Sans peine,
To be under obligations,	*Avoir des obligations*,
I am under obligations to these strangers,	J' ai des obligations à ces étrangers,
I am under many obligations to them,	Je leur ai beaucoup d' obligations,
If I happen to see my brother,	Si je viens à voir mon frère.

When *venir* signifies to happen, it takes *d* before the following infinitive:

I come to see my brother,	Je viens voir mon frère,
If he happen to arrive,	S' il vient à arriver,
You act differently from what you speak,	Vous agissez autrement que vous ne parlez,
I act as I speak,	J' agis comme je parle,
Does your brother return soon?	Votre frère retourne-t-il bientôt?
I think so. I think not,	*Je pense que oui. Je pense que non*,
He has returned now,	Il est retourné maintenant,
Is that man learned?	Cet homme est-il savant?
He believes so. I believe not,	Il croit que oui. Je crois que non,
He sups on fish and coffee,	Il soupe de poisson et de café,
He ties his basket with a string,	Il attache son panier avec un cordon,
They will conceive well what they read,	Ils concevront bien ce qu' ils liront,
I shall understand what he says,	Je concevrai ce qu' il dira,
He is *hard of hearing*,	Il a *l' oreille dure*,
That stone chimney smokes,	Cette cheminée de pierre fume,

* The same principle may be observed to run through all the rules which have now been given for the government of the subjunctive. It is the principle of doubt and uncertainty. The distinction which may be seen in all the above rules, may be briefly stated thus: The speaker uses the indicative mood to express what he regards as a *fact or truth existing in reality;* he uses the subjunctive to express what he regards as *a supposition existing only in the mind.*

That brandy is very strong,	Cette eau de vie est bien forte,
He is a man useless to the *state*,	C' est un homme inutile à l' *état*,
He wishes me to surprise my father,	Il *veut* que je *surprenne* mon père,
He desires that thou surprise thy father,	Il *désire* que tu *surprennes* ton père,
We must learn that lesson,	*Il faut* que nous *apprenions* cette leçon,
It is suitable that I undertake that work,	*Il convient* que j' *entreprenne* cet ouvrage,
It is doubtful whether he comprehends that,	*Il est douteux* qu' il *comprenne* cela,
Tell me some one who comprehends that,	Dites-moi quelqu' un *qui comprenne* cela,
There is a man who comprehends it,	Voilà un homme qui le comprend,
He gives you books in order that you may learn your lessons,	Il vous donne des livres *afin que* vous *appreniez* vos leçons,
He will not be pleased unless you undertake that,	Il ne sera pas content *à moins que* vous *n' entrepreniez* cela,
Whatever he does he will be praised,	*Quoi qu'* il *fasse* il sera loué,
Does he affirm that we surprise our relations?	Affirme-t-il que nous *surprenions* nos parents?
He does not affirm that you surprise them,	Il n' affirme pas que vous les *surpreniez*,
We affirm that you surprise them,	Nous affirmons que vous les surprenez.

Does the master despair of thy learning thy lessons? No, sir; he does not despair of my learning my lessons; he despairs of those lazy scholars learning theirs. Does he deny (disown) that you comprehend what he says? He does not deny that we comprehend it; he denies that thou comprehendest it. Do you despair of their undertaking that work? I do not despair of their undertaking it, I despair of the neighbor's undertaking it. If he thinks that they surprise us, he is wrong; but if he thinks that his son surprises us, he is right. Does he think that they surprise us? He does not think so. If you say that that man is guilty, I say the same; but if you say that he is not guilty, you are wrong; what do you say of it? I say that he is guilty. Do you say that this history is true? I say that it is true. Act in such a way that you may be praised; are you always praised? No, sir; I always act well toward (*envers*) every body, but I am not always praised. Does that man act in such a manner that he is esteemed? No, sir; he acts in such a manner that he is despised.

Do you return home every day? No, sir; we returned this morning; but we only return every Saturday.

At what o'clock do you sup? Do you sup before eight o'clock? Does not that man sup on bread and milk? I think so. We tie our books with a handkerchief; with what do you tie yours? Do they tie theirs with a string? Will you understand well all that I say, and will those children understand it? I think not. Have you a pain in the right ear or in the left? Is your grandfather hard of hearing? Does that carpenter put his hammer on the chimney? I believe so. Is not the mason building a new chimney? I believe not. That man looks tipsy; has he not drunk too much brandy? Are your exercises correct? That man has committed faults; does he suffer also the pain of them? Are you not under obligations to that man? If you happen to see my brother, tell him to come here; will you see him? Are there many people useless to the state? Do the United States comprehend more than thirty states? With what do you fill your basket? If you happen to find some fruit, put some in your basket and bring it to me; can you do so without trouble?

My dear uncle, do you consent that my sister and I go (*nous allions*) to the country? Yes, my friend, provided that you be good and studious; you know that I refuse you nothing reasonable (*raisonnable*) unless you are not well behaved (*sage.*) I have need of a servant who is (*Rule* 3, *Less.* 72) honest, gentle and laborious; (*laborieux;*) do you know such a one? I know one who is very honest and gentle, but who is scarcely at all (*guère*) laborious. It is very difficult to find one who has all the qualities (*qualités*) which you demand. My dear sir, I learn that you set out to-morrow for beautiful France. (*Less.* 81, *Rem.* 2.) I wish you a journey agreeable, happy, and which may restore (*rende*) to you your health. I thank you very much, my dear; have you any commissions (*commissions*) which I can do? Not that I know of. Adieu (*adieu.*) Did not your friend come near losing (*pensé perdre*) all his money? (*Less.* 86.) Yes, sir; and he came near being killed also. An Irishman, of whom one asked if he comprehended French, answered: "By the powers, (*Parbleu,*) yes; I comprehend French perfectly when one speaks it in Irish."

75. SOIXANTE-QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

REFLECTIVE VERBS, that is, those whose subject and object are the same person or thing, as *I warm myself*, *he warms himself*, are much more numerous in French than they are in English, and require especial attention. The learner may understand then, as

RULE I. All verbs which are reflective in English are reflective in French.

Himself, *herself*, *itself*, *themselves*, *one's self*,	*Se*, placed before the verb,
To wash one's self,	*Se laver*,
To shave one's self,	*Se raser*,
To warm, to warm one's self,	*Chauffer*, se chauffer,
To dress, to dress one's self,	*Habiller*, s' habiller,
To undress, to undress one's self,	*Déshabiller*, se déshabiller,
To behave one's self well,	*Se comporter* bien,
To behave one's self badly, ill,	Se comporter mal,
Dost thou wash *thyself*?	*Te* laves-tu? or, est-ce que tu *te* laves?
I wash *myself*,	Je *me* lave,
Do I wash *myself*?	Est-ce que je *me* lave?
You wash *yourself*,	Vous *vous* lavez.

The pronoun in italics is the object of the verb.

Do you wash yourselves?	*Vous* lavez-vous? or, est-ce que vous *vous* lavez?
We wash ourselves,	Nous *nous* lavons,
Do we not wash ourselves?	Ne *nous* lavons-nous pas? or, est-ce que nous ne *nous* lavons pas?
You do not wash yourselves,	Vous ne *vous* lavez pas,
Does that man shave himself?	Cet homme *se* rase-t-il?
He shaves himself,	Il *se* rase,
Does he not wash himself?	Ne *se* lave-t-il pas? or, est-ce qu' il ne *se* lave pas?
He does not wash himself,	Il ne *se* lave pas,
Does that lady warm herself?	Cette dame *se* chauffe-t-elle?
She warms herself,	Elle *se* chauffe,
Does she dress herself?	*S'* habille-t-elle? or, est-ce qu' elle *s'* habille?
She does not dress herself,	Elle ne *s'* habille pas,

Do not those children undress themselves?	Ces enfants ne *se* déshabillent-ils pas?
They do not undress themselves,	Ils ne *se* déshabillent pas,
Do they behave themselves well?	*Se* comportent-ils bien?
They behave themselves badly,	Ils *se* comportent mal,
Do those girls behave themselves well?	Ces filles *se* comportent-elles bien?
Do they behave themselves ill?	*Se* comportent-elles mal?
They behave themselves well,	Elles *se* comportent bien,
To meet with. To suit, to agree,	*Rencontrer. Convenir*, (compound of *venir*.)

REMARK 1. *Convenir*, meaning *to suit*, takes *à* before the noun; meaning *to agree*, it takes *de*. In the former sense it takes *avoir* for auxiliary; in the latter *être*. It takes *de* before the infinitive.

That house suits him. It has suited his father, and we have agreed upon the price,	Cette maison lui convient. Elle *a* convenu à son père, et nous *sommes* convenus du prix,
To exist, live. To triumph,	*Exister. Triompher*, (*de* before noun,)
The *price.* The *desire,*	Le *prix.* Le *désir,*
Docile. Indocile,	*Docile. Indocile,*
Laborious. Glad, very glad,	*Laborieux. Aise*, bien aise, (*de* before infinitive and noun,)
Then. What,	*Alors. Quoi,*
About what is the question?	De quoi est-il question?

REMARK 2. The pronoun *quoi* always follows a preposition, and always refers to things, not persons.

You were not living at that time,	Vous n' existiez pas dans ce temps-là,
I met that man on my way,	J'ai rencontré cet homme sur mon chemin
Her beauty triumphed over all hearts,	Sa beauté triomphait de tous les cœurs,
He has triumphed over his desires,	Il a triomphé de ses désirs,
This child is docile, that one is indocile,	Cet enfant-ci est docile, celui-là est indocile,
I am glad that he is laborious,	Je suis aise qu' il soit laborieux,
He is very glad to meet us,	Il est bien aise de nous rencontrer,
I was at your house on Friday; where were you then?	Je fus chez vous vendredi; où étiez-vous alors?
He has agreed to buy my house,	Il est convenu d' acheter ma maison.

REMARK 3. When pronouns of different persons form the subject of a verb, the first person is preferred to the second, and the second to the third, and the plural pronoun of the person preferred is repeated before the verb, and the verb agrees with it.

He and I have agreed upon the price,	Lui et moi nous sommes convenus du prix,
You and he have agreed upon it,	Vous et lui vous en êtes convenus,

You and I have triumphed over our desires,	Vous et moi nous avons triomphé de nos désirs,
You and I and my friend have triumphed over them,	Vous et moi et mon ami nous en avons triomphé.

REMARK 4. The subject pronouns when emphatic are often repeated, and then *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, and *eux*, are used in the nominative before the usual subject form of their respective persons. The same are used also in the predicate.

They play and I study,	Ils jouent et moi j' étudie,
They lose, but thou gainest,	Ils perdent, mais toi tu gagnes,
We study, but he plays,	Nous étudions, mais lui il joue,
We go there, but they stay here,	Nous allons là, mais eux ils restent ici,
Who is there? It is I,	Qui est là? C' est moi,
It is he. It is they,	C' est lui. Ce sont eux.

REMARK 5. The verb *être*, preceded by *ce*, is plural only when followed by the third person plural.

It is we. It is you. It is they,	C' est nous. C' est vous. Ce sont eux.

Why dost thou warm thyself? I warm myself because I am cold. Do you not warm yourselves? We do not warm ourselves; it is not cold. Do those travelers warm themselves? They do not warm themselves. Dost thou shave thyself, or does the barber shave thee? I shave myself every morning. Does the servant dress those children, or do they dress themselves? They dress themselves every morning, and undress themselves every night. Does the servant undress that sick man? Yes, sir; the servant undresses him in order to put him to (*au*) bed; he can not undress himself. Do you behave (yourselves) well? Yes, sir; we always behave (ourselves) well. Does that child always behave well? No, sir; he sometimes behaves very ill. Do you not dress yourselves several times a day (*par jour?*) No, sir; we dress but once a day. Does the master like that you should learn Italian? He likes better that we learn German. Have you a desire that we undertake that affair? No, sir; I wish the merchant to undertake it. Are you afraid that it may be bad weather? I am afraid that it may be rainy. Are you waiting for some one to come? No, sir; I am waiting for it to be pleasant weather. Was your father living when general Washington died? Yes, sir; he was born the same year.

Did you meet my brother when you were in Paris? Does your

horse suit that traveler? Have you agreed upon the price? Is it not suitable that I undertake some good work? Is it important that I comprehend all that the master says? Is it not sufficient that I learn my lesson well? Is it not doubtful whether they comprehend what we say? It is necessary for you to come here to-morrow; is it possible for you to come? It is proper that that boy learn Spanish, but is it not better that he learn German? It is surprising that that boy should know his lesson; is he not very lazy? It is doubtful whether riches be a good, but do we not know without a doubt that wisdom is the greatest good? Is it not proper that you learn your lesson better? Do the scholars go to the school before the master comes? Do they go though he be not there? Will you be here until we know our lessons? Do they praise that scholar though he know not his lesson? Do they praise him in case he knows his lesson? That boy makes progress in his lessons, for he studies well; has he not much talent? Whatever that man may do he will be blamed; is he not always blamed? That scholar plays while (*tandis que*) the others study; does he know his lesson? He and I study while you play; is it not better to study?

Were you living at the time of the American revolution? No, sir; but my father was living then, and was still in Europe. He was very young, and nevertheless he had a great desire to see (*voir triompher*) the cause of liberty (*liberté*) triumph. Were you in the city when Sophia (*Sophie*) was sick? No, sir; I was traveling then, but I know that she had a burning (*ardente*) fever. If it is true that madam D. is sick, I will go to see her to-morrow; do you wish to go with me? I wish it much, unless it be bad weather. Your nephew is good, docile and laborious, and if you say that he is (*Less.* 74, *Rem.* 3) bad, indocile and lazy, surely (*certes*) you do not know him well.

76. SOIXANTE-SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

REFLECTIVE VERBS CONTINUED.

RULE II. Verbs are reflective in French though not in English, which express one's doing something to any member or part of himself.

Dost thou wash thy hands?	Te laves-tu les mains?
I wash them,	Je me les lave.

In such phrases the reflective pronoun is the indirect object. Verbatim in English; *Dost thou wash for thyself the hands? I wash them for myself.*

Do you wash your hands?	Est-ce que vous vous lavez les mains?
We do not wash them,	Nous ne nous les lavons pas,
Do they not wash their faces?	Ne se lavent-ils pas le visage?
They wash them,	Ils se le lavent, (*See Less.* 65 *Rem.* 2,)
Does not that girl warm her feet?	Cette fille ne se chauffe-t-elle pas les pieds?
Does she warm them?	Se les chauffe-t-elle; (or est-ce qu' elle se les chauffe?)
She does not warm them,	Elle ne se les chauffe pas,
He *sets himself* to studying,	Il *se met* à étudier,
To burn,	*Brûler*,
To pardon,	*Pardonner*, (*à* before person, *de* bef. inf.,)
To hunt. To kill,	*Chasser. Tuer*,
The *hunt*, *hunting*. *Fishing*,	La *chasse*. La *pêche*,
To go a hunting. To go a fishing,	Aller à la chasse. Aller à la pêche,
To introduce. To present,	*Introduire. Présenter*,
To hurt one's self,	*Se faire mal*,
A *wolf*. A *fox*,	Un *loup*. Un *renard*,
A *squirrel*. A *nail*, (of the finger,)	Un *écureuil*. Un *ongle*,
To ride a horse,	Monter un cheval,
The *society*. A *literary* society,	La *société*. Une société *littéraire*,
A *codfish*. A *mackerel*,	Une *morue*. Un *maquereau*,
To rub. *Stupid*,	*Frotter*. *Sot*, (m.,) *sotte*, (f.,) *stupide*,
Charitable. *Above all*,	*Charitable*. *Surtout*, *par-dessus tout*,
Each other,	*L' un l' autre*,
They praise each other,	Ils se louent l' un l' autre,
They speak against each other,	Ils parlent l' un contre l' autre,
Do they not burn their feet?	Ne se brûlent-ils pas les pieds?
They burn them,	Ils se les brûlent,
Do they not burn their papers?	Ne brûlent-ils pas leurs papiers?
They burn them,	Ils les brûlent,
They cover their faces,	Elles se couvrent le visage,
They cover their books,	Elles couvrent leur livres,
He rubs his hands in order to warm them,	Il se frotte les mains pour se les chauffer,
He rubs his hands before warming them,	Il se frotte les mains avant de se les chauffer,
I hurt my eyes when I rub them,	Je me fais mal aux yeux quand je me les frotte,

I hurt them when I rub them,	Je m' y fais mal quand je me les frotte,
We pardon him for having offended us,	Nous lui pardonnons de nous avoir offensés,
He goes a fishing for codfish and he takes many,	Il va à la pêche de la morue et il en prend beaucoup.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF DEVOIR.

Je doive, tu doives, il doive, nous devions, vous deviez, ils doivent.

He fears that I owe a great deal,	Il craint que je ne *doive* beaucoup?
He forbids thy owing more than a hundred dollars,	Il défend que tu *doives* plus de cent dollars,
Do you doubt his owing much?	Doutez-vous qu' il *doive* beaucoup,
He consents that we should owe him a thousand dollars,	Il consent que nous lui *devions* mille gourdes,
I doubt your owing me a thousand dollars,	Je doute que vous me *deviez* mille gourdes,
We desire that they owe us much,	Nous désirons qu' ils nous *doivent* beaucoup,
He hunts all day and kills nothing,	Il chasse toute la journée et il ne tue rien,
He introduces me at the house of his friend,	Il m' introduit chez son ami,
His nails are too long; does he cut them often?	Il a les ongles trop longs; se les coupe-t-il souvent?
Does not the generous man pardon his enemies?	L' homme généreux ne pardonne-t-il pas à ses ennemis?
There are wolves and foxes in these woods,	Il y a des loups et des renards dans ces bois.

REMARK. In denoting possession, when the object is to point out the different possessors of several articles of the same kind, the French generally use the possessive pronouns; in other cases they use the verb *être*, with *à* before the personal pronoun, as:*

Is that squirrel yours?	Cet écureuil est-il à vous?
He is my brother's,	Il est à mon frère,
Are those mackerel his?	Ces maquereaux sont-ils à lui?
The mackerel are mine and the codfish are the fisherman's,	Les maquereaux sont à moi et les morues sont aux pêcheurs,
This book is mine, that one is yours,	Ce livre-ci est le mien, celui-là est le vôtre.

Do you set yourself to studying early every day? I set myself to studying at five o'clock every morning. Does that negligent boy

* For instance, if the inquiry be to whom a particular book belongs, the answer will be with *à: Il est à moi, Il est à vous*, or *Il est à mon frère*, etc. But if the possessors are selecting each his own book, one uses the possessive pronoun; *Ce livre-ci est le mien, celui-là est le vôtre*, or *le sien*, etc.

burn his shoes when he warms his feet? He burns his shoes and he burns his feet also. Has the master pardoned that lazy boy? He has pardoned him. Have you hunted to-day? We have hunted all day. What have you killed? I have killed a wolf, and my brother has killed a fox and a few squirrels. Do you go a hunting often? I do not go a hunting often, but I go a fishing almost every day; I went a fishing yesterday and took a great many fish. Do you sometimes catch codfish? Yes, sir; we catch many codfish and many mackerel. Are there many squirrels in your woods? There are many squirrels, and there are also a few foxes and wolves there. What do you present to that lady? I present to her some fruits and some flowers. Do you introduce your friends at her house? I introduce them there. Is not that girl stupid? She has not much wit, but she is not so stupid as she appears. Will you see our neighbor before he goes a hunting? I shall not see him before he goes. Do those scholars go to school together? Yes, sir; they go always together and they love each other well.

Is that fish yours? Is it mine? Is it your brothers? Is it theirs? Why does that boy rub his eyes? Does he rub them because they pain him? Do we cut our nails because they are long? Does that poor man rub his hands in order to warm them? Do you wash your hands before cutting your nails? Do you not hurt your hand when you rub it? Do you not hurt your eyes when you wash your face? That merchant is very glad to see us, although he owes us much money; are you not glad to see him? Do you give your servant money in order that he may be satisfied? I give him money though I owe him nothing; is he not satisfied? I wish for some money that I may be able to buy books; do you wish some that you may be able to buy a horse? Will you be here until your brother comes? Will you be there until I return? Do you sell to that man on credit, though he owes you a thousand dollars? I sell to thee on credit, though thou owest me more than he; dost thou not owe me a thousand dollars? Are you satisfied that he should owe you a thousand dollars? Do you prefer that we owe you a thousand? Beware that they do not owe you much; do they owe you any thing? Do you wish to buy that beautiful house in case that you have your money?

Will you come to my house this evening in case it be fine weather? Does the stranger incur (make) expenses suitable to his fortune? Are your acquaintance at home to-day? Certainly, they are at home, for I have seen them all.

Did Charles the twelfth, king of Sweden, love to pardon his enemies? Not at all, he never pardoned him who had once offended him, but he also (*mais aussi*) never forgot a service which one had rendered him. To whom does that superb house belong which one sees yonder? It belonged to Mr. C. who died last week. What kind (*sorte*, fem.) of man was this Mr. C.; were you acquainted with him? Yes, I knew him well. He was an honest man, he was good to (*pour*) every body, and above all charitable to the poor; he gave bread and even money to those of this region; (country;) he loved them as his own (*propres*) children, and they loved him as a father.

77. SOIXANTE-DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

REFLECTIVE VERBS CONTINUED.

RULE III. Reflective verbs are also used in French when a subject of a verb, (sometimes passive,) of a general character is omitted in English and its place supplied by the object.

Cotton *sells* well,	Le coton *se vend* bien,
Glass *breaks* easily,	Le verre *se casse* facilement,
Stone *does* not *cut* easily,	La pierre ne *se coupe* pas facilement,
Dry wood *burns* well,	Le bois sec *se brûle* bien,
Meat *is* sometimes *eaten* raw,	La viande *se mange* quelquefois crue,
This book *is* easily *understood*,	Ce livre *se comprend* facilement,
That work *is finished* without trouble,	Cet ouvrage *se finit* sans peine,
That *writing can be read*,*	Cette *écriture* peut *se lire*,
I go to the right, and he goes to the left,	Je vais à droite, et lui va à gauche.

* All the above verbs may be regarded as having for their subject some word understood, of a general character, as *people*, *they*, *one*, etc., and the phrases turned thus, *They sell cotton well*, *They break glass easily*, *They sometimes eat meat raw*, *One understands this book easily*, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF DIRE,

Je dise, tu dises, il dise, nous disions, vous disiez, ils disent.

So the compounds of *Dire;* as, *Contredire*, to contradict; *Médire de*, to slander; *se Dédire*, to disown; *Interdire*, to forbid; *Prédire*, to foretell; *Redire*, to repeat; and *Maudire* to curse, which, however, doubles the *s*, and makes *que je maudisse, that I curse*, etc.

To prevent,	*Empêcher*, (*de* before the infinitive,)
To tremble,	*Trembler*, (*de* before the infinitive,)
To apprehend,	*Appréhender*, (*de* before the infinitive,)

REMARK 1. The learner can now understand, from the signification of these three verbs, that with *que*, they govern the subjunctive. *Trembler* and *appréhender* when not negative and *empêcher* always, take *ne* before the subjunctive.

He prevents my saying any thing,	Il m' empêche de dire quelque chose,
He trembles lest thou tell his secret,	Il tremble que tu ne dises son secret,
I apprehend that he may tell my secret,	J' appréhende qu' il ne dise mon secret,
They tremble lest we tell the truth,	Ils tremblent que nous ne disions la vérité,
Do they prevent your telling the truth?	Empêchent-ils que vous ne disiez la vérité?
He apprehends that they may tell the truth,	Il appréhende qu' ils ne disent la vérité,
A *boarding-house*, or *school*,	Une *pension*,
To keep a boarding-house,	Tenir pension,
A *boarder*,	Un *pensionnaire*,
He takes boarders,	Il prend des pensionnaires,
A *meal*. To make (or take) a meal,	Un *repas*. Faire un repas,
An *absence*. During my absence,	Une *absence*. Pendant mon absence,
Misery. He suffers misery,	La *misère*. Il a de la misère,
An *inhabitant*,	Un *habitant*,
The inhabitants of Europe,	Les habitants de l' Europe,
By dint of. By dint of blows,	*À force de*. À force de coups,
That *sword*. A blow of a sword,	Cette *épée*. Un coup d' épée,
To draw. He draws his sword,	*Tirer*. Il tire son épée,
To my taste. *Against one's will*,	De, (or à,) mon *goût*. *À contre-cœur*,
Writing. *Immediately*,	*L' écriture*, (fem.) *Immédiatement*,
Will you receive? I shall receive,	*Recevrez-vous? Je recevrai*,
Will you be able? I shall be able,	*Pourrez-vous? Je pourrai*,
For fear that, lest,	*De crainte que. De peur que.*

REMARK 2. The learner will perceive from the nature of these two conjunctions, that they govern the subjunctive. Like *à moins que*, (*Less.* 72,) they take also *ne* before the subjunctive.

For fear that they may surprise us,	De peur qu' ils *ne* nous surprennent,
Lest we surprise them,	De crainte que nous *ne* les surprenions,
I find this wine to my taste,	Je trouve ce vin de, (or à,) mon goût,
He does that against his will,	Il fait cela à contre-cœur.

REMARK 3. *Plus* negative, like *pas* and other negatives, is used without *ne* when not accompanied by a verb.

No more *tears*. No more sorrow,	Plus de *larmes*. Plus de chagrin,
After that no more *studies* for me,	Dès lors plus d' *études* pour moi.

Dost thou wish that I should tell what I know? I wish that thou shouldst tell the whole truth. Do you prefer that we should tell these facts? I prefer that your friend should tell what he knows. Do you tremble lest we should tell your secret? No, sir; I apprehend their telling it. Why do their relations prevent those children from going to the garden? They prevent them from going there, lest they should do harm to the flowers. Do you prevent your servants' learning to read? We do not prevent it, we approve of their learning to read. Do they apprehend that the master may surprise them? No, sir; but they tremble lest he learn what they have done. Do you apprehend that your friend may be sick? I tremble lest he be dead. Does that man keep a boarding-house? Yes, sir; he has done so a long time. Does that man take boarders? He takes a few. Does that woman keep a boarding-house? She wishes only a few boarders for the table. How many meals do they take a day? They take four a day. What will you do during my absence? I shall do all my work. Is not the world full of misery? There is much misery and much pleasure in the world. Do many inhabitants of Europe come to the United States? Yes, sir; many inhabitants of Ireland, of Germany, and of the other countries of Europe, come here every year.

Does that man make his horse run (*fait-il courir*) by dint of blows? Why do you draw your sword? Why do you pull that boy's ears? Is that boat drawn by horses? (*Less.* 60, *Rem.* 1.) Do those lazy scholars learn their lessons against their will? Does that writing read easily? How does grain sell this winter? Does flour sell at (*à*) five dollars a (*le*) barrel? Does wood split easily? Do those plates break easily? Are fish sometimes eaten raw? Are those cakes eaten with tea? Are those phrases easily understood? Is the Spanish language learned in a little time? Have you seen that scholar's writing? Will you receive your money soon? Shall we receive ours to-day? Will they receive theirs before we are able to

receive ours? Will those workmen be able to finish their work soon? Will the carpenter be able to finish his to-day? Do you not deny the fact for fear that your friend be punished? Are you going to see him for fear that he may be sick? However rich that man may be, will he not soon be poor? Whatever wisdom that man may have, is he not wrong sometimes? Whatever may be his virtues, will he not be blamèd? Whatever may be his misfortunes, will he not be contented? Act in such a way that you may be esteemed; do you act in such a way that you are esteemed? Though that man may be poor, he is honest; and though he has few friends, he is contented; is he not contented? That man is very good except that he may be a little lazy; is he not lazy? Do you confess that your companion is guilty? Do you assure us that he is virtuous? Do you not suppose that your cousin makes great progress in his lessons while you play? Does he not study while you play?

An old dandy, who wished to introduce his cousin into a literary society, said, as (when) he presented him: Gentlemen, I can assure you that my young friend is not so stupid as he appears. The young man immediately replied: In that consists the principal difference (*consiste la principale différence*) which every body makes between my cousin and me.

78. SOIXANTE-DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

REFLECTIVE VERBS CONTINUED.

REMARK I. Some verbs are reflective in French, for which no rule can be given, but which are to be learned by observation and practice.* The following are of this kind:

To take possession,	*S' emparer*, (*de* before the noun,)
To abstain,	*S' abstenir*, (compound of *tenir*, *de* before the infinitive and noun,)
To repent,	*Se repentir*, (*de* before noun and inf.)
To remember,	*Se souvenir*, (*de* before the noun and infinitive, compound of *venir*,)

* There may be found, perhaps, in the meaning of these verbs, some especial reference to the subject, but nothing which can be a sufficient guide to the learner in their use.

Dost thou not abstain from wine?	Ne t' abstiens-tu pas de vin?
I do not abstain from it,	Je ne m' en abstiens pas,
He takes possession of those papers,	Il s' empare de ces papiers,
Anger takes possession of him,	La *colère* s' empare de lui,
Do you not repent of your bad *conduct?*	Ne vous repentez-vous pas de votre mauvaise *conduite?*
We repent of it,	Nous nous en repentons,
Do they remember their *promises?*	Se souviennent-ils de leurs *promesses?*
They remember them,	Ils s' en souviennent,
Do you abstain from reading?	Est-ce que vous vous abstenez de lire?
We do not abstain from it,	Nous ne nous en abstenons pas.

Remark 2. Some French verbs are always reflective; that is, they are never used without the reflective pronoun. The four on the preceding page are of this kind. Such verbs are called *essentially reflective verbs*. Those which are used sometimes with, and sometimes without the reflective pronoun, are called *accidentally reflective verbs*. Of this kind are all the reflective verbs given in the preceding lessons.

Anger. A *promise*,	La *colère.* Une *promesse*,
A *kind.* His *conduct*,	Une *sorte, espèce.* Sa *conduite.*

Rule. All reflective verbs take *être* for their auxiliary, the participle always agreeing with its direct object.*

Hast thou warmed thyself?	T' es-tu *chauffé*, or *chauffée?*
I have warmed myself,	Je me suis *chauffé*, or *chauffée*,
Has he dressed himself?	S' est-il *habillé?*
He has not dressed himself,	Il ne s' est pas *habillé*,
She has dressed herself,	Elle s' est *habillée*,
Did you not present yourselves to him?	Ne vous êtes-vous pas *présentés* à lui?
We presented ourselves to him,	Nous nous sommes *présentés* à lui,
Did those ladies introduce themselves?	Ces dames se sont-elles *introduites?*
They did not introduce themselves,	Elles ne se sont pas *introduites.*

Remark 3. When, besides the reflective pronoun, the verb has a second object, let the learner consider whether this second can be the direct object of the verb; if so, the participle agrees with it according to *Rule*, *Less.* 37; but otherwise, it agrees with the reciprocal pronoun, as in the above examples.†

* In reflective verbs, *être* performs the same office as *avoir* in other verbs. It is, in fact, used instead of *avoir*, merely to avoid the disagreeable sounds which would often be produced by the reflective pronoun, the verb *avoir*, and the past participle, joined together.

† The reflective pronoun is always the direct object of all essentially reflective verbs, except *s' arroger*, to arrogate. Hence, some grammarians give the rule, that with these the past participle always takes the gender and number of the subject. But, besides that this is making a distinction where none exists, and needlessly multiplying rules, it is much easier for the learner to determine in all cases what is the direct object of the verb, than to know what verbs are essentially reflective.

He has warmed his hands,	Il s' est *chauffé* les mains,
He has warmed them,	Il se les est *chauffées*,
He has remembered the lessons,	Il s' est *souvenu* des lessons,
She has remembered them,	Elle s' en est *souvenue*.

In the first two of these phrases, the second object of the verb is the direct one; according, therefore, to *Rule. Less.* 37, *chauffé* is not varied in the first phrase, because the object *mains* comes after it; in the second it is varied, and becomes *chauffées*, because the object *les* precedes it. In the last two, the second object being preceded by *de*, is not the direct object of the verb; the participles, therefore, agree with the reciprocal pronouns which precede, and become, in the last one, *souvenue*, because *se* is here feminine, and in the preceding *souvenu*, because it is there masculine. So in the following:

Hast thou not burnt thy hand?	Ne t' es-tu pas brûlé la main?
I have not burnt it,	Je ne me la suis pas brûlée,
Have you warmed your feet?	Vous êtes-vous chauffé les pieds?
We have not warmed them,	Nous ne nous les sommes pas chauffés,
We repented of our conduct,	Nous nous sommes repentis de notre conduite,
They abstained from all kinds of pleasures,	Ils se sont abstenus de toutes sortes de plaisirs,
They repented of their promises,	Elles se sont repenties de leurs promesses,
To make again. To see again,	*Refaire. Revoir,*
I shall make again, do again,	Je *referai*, (future of *refaire*,)
I shall see again,	Je *reverrai*, (future of *revoir*,)
I am very glad to see you again,	Je suis bien aise de vous revoir,
He does his work over again,	Il refait son ouvrage,
Toward. Prudently,	*Envers. Prudemment,*
He acts well toward his friends,	Il agit bien envers ses amis,
They have conducted themselves prudently,	Elles se sont conduites prudemment.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF RECEVOIR.

Je reçoive, tu reçoives, il reçoive, nous recevions, vous receviez, ils reçoivent

So *Apercevoir*, *Concevoir*, and all other verbs in *cevoir*.

Dost thou declare that I receive your money?	Déclares-tu que je *reçoive* votre argent?
I do not declare that thou receivest it,	Je ne déclare pas que tu le *reçoives*,
Dost thou suppose that he receives it?	Supposes-tu qu' il le *reçoive*?
Do you declare that we receive it?	Déclarez-vous que nous le *recevions*?
He approves of your receiving it,	Il trouve bon que vous le *receviez*,
He disapproves of their receiving it,	Il trouve mauvais qu' ils le *reçoivent*.

Do you abstain from tea and from coffee? I abstain from coffee, but not from tea. How long have you abstained from coffee? (*Less.*

64, *Rem.* 2.) I have abstained from it almost two years. Who has taken possession of those houses? Some inhabitants of the city have taken possession of them. Did the children of Mr. B., who died last month, take possession of his things (*affaires?*) No, sir; the lawyers took possession of them. Hast thou repented of thy conduct? I have not repented of it. Have you remembered the promises which you made me? We have remembered them. Dost thou take possession of that house to-day? I took possession of it three days ago. Does your friend abstain from going to the theatre? He abstains from all kinds of pleasure. Does that man repent of what he has done? He repents of it, because he did it in anger. Does that scholar do over again his exercises? He does them over again almost every day. Do you often do yours over again? I never do mine over again. Have you seen my brother to-day? I saw him this morning, and I see him again now. We saw the general yesterday, and I have seen him again to-day; have you seen him to-day? I have seen him to-day, and I shall see him again to-morrow. Have those workmen done over again their work? No, sir; they will do it over again to-morrow.

Do you always act prudently? Do virtuous men act prudently toward every body? Are you always generous toward your enemies? Will the carpenter do over again his work? Will you see him again to-day? Do those who are studious make great progress in their lessons? Do you hope that we may receive our money to-day? Does that child hope that his mother is coming soon? There are men who deny that this history is true; is it not true? When did your friends go back? At what hour do they sup in your boarding-house? Do they sup there before eight o'clock? What are you tying with your handkerchief? Will you understand well what you read? Will you understand it all? Is that old man hard of hearing? Has he always abstained from brandy? Are those exercises quite correct? Will you do them over again? Do those scholars study much that is useless? If you happen to see my brother, will you give him this letter? If you happen to find some good fruit, will you buy me a basket-full? Do you wish those men to receive your money? Do you approve of my receiving it? Do you believe

that he receives it, or that we receive it? Have you warmed your feet? I have warmed them. Has that child washed his hands? He has not washed them, he has warmed them.

Where have you been acquainted with that lady whom we met this morning in Broadway? (*Broadway.*) I saw her for the first time at the Saratoga springs (*aux eaux de Saratoga*) last year; but I had not seen her again since (*depuis.*) Miss, I believed you more advanced (*avancée*) in your lessons; what have you then (*donc*) done during the two hours of my absence? You see (it.) I have written my exercises, and I have learned the lesson which you gave me. Is it not enough? All that is very well; but we are going to see if your exercises are well written, and if your lesson is well learned.

79. SOIXANTE-DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

REFLECTIVE VERBS CONTINUED.

To be, to do, (in regard to health,)	*Se porter,*
To take cold. I have taken cold,	*S'enrhumer.* Je me suis enrhumé,
To address. To address one's self,	*Adresser. S'adresser,*
To serve. To honor,	*Servir. Honorer,*
An *order. Since, from,*	Un *ordre. Depuis.*

Depuis often denotes duration begun in time past, and continued to the present.

He has served me these three years,	Il me sert depuis trois ans,
Attention. To give great attention,	L'*attention,* (f.) Faire grande attention,
Will you perceive? I shall perceive,	*Apercevrez-vous? J' apercevrai,*
An *opinion.* He changes his opinion,	Un *avis,* une *opinion.* Il change d' avis,
A *watch.* He *winds up* his watch,	Une *montre.* Il *monte* sa montre,
A *shawl.* A *cashmere* shawl,	Un *châle.* Un châle de *cachemire,*
Natural. The natural *law,*	*Naturel.* La *loi* naturelle,
Divine. The divine law,	*Divin.* La loi divine,
Around. Around the church,	*Autour de.* Autour de l' église,
To *oblige.* His duty obliges him to do that,	*Obliger.* Son devoir l' oblige à faire cela.

REMARK 1. *Obliger,* meaning to compel, takes *à* before the infinitive; meaning to do a favor, it takes *de.*

You oblige me by doing that,	Vous m' obligez de faire cela,

How do you do?	Comment vous portez-vous?
I am very well, I thank you.	Je me porte très-bien, je vous remercie.

Remark 2. Politeness requires the epithets *monsieur*, *madame*, *mademoiselle* generally before titles and terms of relationship.

How does your father do?	Monsieur votre père comment se porte-t-il?
He is not well,	Il ne se porte pas bien,
Are your sisters well?	Mesdemoiselles vos sœurs se portent-elles bien?
Is the captain at your house?	Monsieur le capitaine est-il chez vous?
Have you not taken cold?	Ne vous êtes-vous pas enrhumé?
I took cold last night at the theatre,	Je me suis enrhumé la nuit passée au théâtre,
He addresses himself to your brother,	Il s' adresse à votre frère,
We address ourselves to him,	Nous nous adressons à lui,
We honor that man's virtue,	Nous honorons la vertu de cet homme,
I wait your orders,	J' attends vos ordres,
There are many persons around him,	Il y a beaucoup de personnes autour de lui
The natural law obliges us to honor father and mother,	La loi naturelle nous oblige à honorer père et mère,
I have just wound up my watch,	Je viens de monter ma montre.

Remark 3. *Venir*, with *de* and an *infinitive*, expresses that the action has just been done.

She has just bought a shawl,	Elle vient d' acheter un châle,
We have just addressed a letter to Mr. B.	Nous venons d'adresser une lettre à M. B.
They have just finished their lessons,	Ils viennent de finir leurs leçons,
Is it necessary that I understand well what you say?	Faut-il que je conçoive bien ce que vous dites?
It is necessary that thou understand it well.	Il faut que tu le conçoives bien,
Do you wish him to perceive what you do?	Voulez-vous qu' il aperçoive ce que vous faites?
I wish you to perceive it,	Je veux que vous l' aperceviez,
He does not believe that we perceive it,	Il ne croit pas que nous l' apercevions,
I do not believe that they comprehend it,	Je ne crois pas qu' ils le conçoivent.

Good morning, sir; how do you do this morning? I am very well, I thank you; and you, are you well? I am not perfectly well, I have taken cold. Where did you take cold? I took cold last evening at the church. Do you take cold often? I take cold almost always when it is cold weather (*fait froid.*) Why does that man address himself to me? He addresses himself to you as the best man

that he can find. How long have those Irishmen served you? They have served me these five years. Do you study a little every day? I study from eight o'clock until (*jusque*) eleven every morning. Does the master wish us to understand what he says? He wishes us to give great attention when he speaks. If the servant comes to your house will you perceive him? We shall perceive him. Do the learned sometimes change their opinion? Yes, sir; all men who are learned and wise sometimes change their opinion. Has not that lady just bought a cashmere shawl? She has just bought a cashmere shawl and a beautiful gold watch. Does that young man study? Yes, sir; the desire to succeed obliges him to study. Does not the divine law oblige us to honor father and mother? Yes, sir; the divine law and the natural law oblige us to honor them. Have not the kings of Europe many soldiers around them? They have very many around them.

Did those children behave well in church on Sunday? Have you met my friend here this morning? Do you grant (agree) that you are wrong? Was your father living in eighteen hundred and one? Did Hannibal triumph over all his enemies? Did the Romans (*Romains*) triumph over him? Does that horse suit you? Have you a desire (fancy) to buy him? Have you agreed upon the price? Is not that scholar laborious and docile? Is not this one indocile? I am glad to see you; have you been well? I was here yesterday at noon; where were you then? I have just dined; at what hour do you dine? That scholar has just finished his lessons; is he not lazy? Tell me in what I can serve you; of what have you need? You have hunted all day; what have you killed? What do you kill when you hunt in these woods? Do you sometimes kill wolves? Do you often kill foxes and squirrels? Do you kill more foxes than wolves? Do you like better to go a fishing than to go a hunting? Do you take mackerel and codfish when you go a fishing? Do you like mackerel better than codfish? Do you soon pardon those who offend you? Who has introduced that stranger into our society? Why do you not offer (present) a chair to that lady? What I desire above all is wisdom and virtue; do you not desire them above all? Those men blame each other; are they not enemies?

Have those men rendered you service? Yes, sir; much; we have found them ready to render us service every time that we have addressed ourselves to them. Where are the letters which I got you to write this morning? Have you got them carried to the post-office (*la poste*) as I told you? Do you speak of the letters which are addressed to your father, or of those which are for Mr. B.? I speak of the latter. I gave them to John with order to carry them himself, and I am going to see if he has done so.

80. QUATRE-VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

REFLECTIVE VERBS, ETC.

To sit. To sit down, to seat one's self, *Asseoir. S' asseoir*, (irregular.)

Je m' assieds,	*tu t'assieds*,	*il s' assied*,
I sit down,	thou sittest down,	he sits down,
nous nous asseyons,	*vous vous asseyez*,	*ils s' asseient*,
we sit down,	you sit down,	they sit down.

I will sit down,	*Je m' assiérai*, or *asseierai*, (future,)
It will be necessary,	*Il faudra*,
To gather,	*Cueillir*, (present varied as *ouvrir*, *Less.* 43,)
A *pear*. A *plum*,	Une *poire*. Une *prune*,
A *rose*. A *pink*,	Une *rose*. Un *œillet*,
A *melon*. Some *grapes*.	Un *melon*. Des *raisins*, (masculine,)
I *will gather*. I will gather some pinks,	Je *cueillerai*. Je cueillerai des œillets,
Newly. *When*,	*Nouvellement*. *Lorsque*,
To seize. He seizes his arm,	*Saisir*. Il lui saisit le bras,
To pronounce. He pronounces *slowly*,	*Prononcer*. Il prononce *lentement*,
A *bargain*. He makes a good bargain,	Un *marché*. Il fait un bon marché,
Incessantly. He talks incessantly,	*Sans cesse*. Il parle sans cesse,
In vain. He labors in vain,	*En vain*. Il travaille en vain,
Lately. A short time since,	Depuis peu. Depuis peu de temps,
I will do *my best*,	Je ferai *de mon mieux*,
To look as if one would or wished,	*Avoir l' air de vouloir*,
He looks as if he wished to study,	Il a l' air de vouloir étudier,
It looks as if it would be cold,	Il a l' air de vouloir faire froid,
It looks as if it would rain,	Il a l' air de vouloir faire de la pluie,

The weather looks as if it were going to rain,	Le temps a l' air de vouloir se mettre à la pluie,
The weather looks as if it were going to be fine,	Le temps a l' air de vouloir se mettre au beau,
He seats himself on the bench,	Il s' assied sur le banc,
We will sit down here,	Nous nous assiérons ici,
Do you gather pears and plums?	Cueillez-vous des poires et des prunes?
We gather melons and grapes,	Nous cueillons des melons et des raisins,
He gathers roses and pinks,	Il cueille des roses et des œillets,
It is a house newly built,	C' est une maison nouvellement bâtie,
Speak slowly,	Parlez lentement.
An *arm-chair*. The *ice*,	Un *fauteuil*. La *glace*,
This pen is mine, that one is yours,	Cette plume-ci est la mienne, celle-là est la vôtre,
This horse is not mine,	Ce cheval n' est pas à moi,
Are you glad of his coming here?	Êtes-vous content de ce qu' il vient ici?

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF BOIRE.

Je boive, tu boives, il boive, nous buvions, vous buviez, ils boivent.

Must I drink this *medicine*?	Faut-il que je boive cette *médecine?*
It will not be necessary that thou drink it,	Il ne faudra pas que tu la boives,
It will be necessary that he drink it,	Il faudra qu' il la boive,
He will not be willing that they drink his wine,	Il ne voudra pas qu' ils boivent son vin,
Will he be willing that we drink it?	Voudra-t-il que nous le buvions?
He will be willing that you drink it,	Il voudra que vous le buviez.

REMARK 2. As the imperative mood, when affirmative, takes the objective pronouns after it, joined by a hyphen, (*Less.* 54, *Rule* 2,) it will of course take the reflective pronouns in this way.

Sit down in this chair,	Asseyez-vous sur cette chaise,
Let us sit down. Seat thyself here,	Asseyons-nous. Assieds-toi ici,
Do not sit down on the bench,	Ne vous asseyez pas sur le banc,
Let us not sit down in these chairs,	Ne nous asseyons pas sur ces chaises,
Wash your hands. Wash them,	Lavez-vous les mains. Lavez-les-vous,
Remember your promises,	Souvenez-vous de vos promesses,
Let us remember them,	Souvenons-nous-en.

REMARK 3. As the past participle agrees only with the direct object preceding, and **never** with the indirect, it follows of course, that in all verbs which have no direct object, the participle is never varied, whether the pronoun be reflective or not.

They have injured themselves,	Ils se sont *nui*, (not *nuis*,)
We have spoken to ourselves,	Nous nous sommes *parlé*, (not *parlés*.)

In these phrases the participles are not varied because *nuire* and *parler*, being intransitive verbs, can have no direct object.*

Good morning, sir; how do you do this morning? I am not very well, I have the toothache. I am very sorry; sit down in this chair. How do your mother and sisters (*madame votre mère et mes-demoiselles vos sœurs*) do? They are perfectly well. Will you not sit in this chair? No, sir; I will sit here. Will not the boy sit in this chair? No, sir; he will sit there on the bench. What fruits are you gathering? I am gathering pears, plums and grapes. What are your neighbors gathering? They are gathering melons, and the little girl is gathering pinks and roses. Will you gather all your fruits to-day? No, sir; I shall gather my pears and plums to-day, and I shall gather my grapes and melons to-morrow. Who is that man? He is an Italian newly arrived in this country. Does he pronounce English well? No, sir; he pronounces it badly. When you were in Paris, did you pronounce French well? I did not pronounce it well. Why do they seize that man? They seize him because he is a great thief. Do you seize his companion? I seize his companion and all his papers. Has the servant caught (taken) your horse? Yes, sir; he has seized him and mounted him. Do you understand Italian when one speaks it slowly? I understand it when one speaks it very slowly.

Has that merchant made a good bargain? That stranger talks without ceasing; do you believe all that he says? That scholar has tried in vain; will he be able to learn that lesson? Does it look as if it would rain? Does it look as if it would be cold? Does the weather look as if it were going to be fine? Your friend looks as if he wished to set himself to studying; does he not wish to study? Will it not be necessary for you to drink that medicine? Will it be necessary for me to drink it? Does the physician approve of our drinking wine? Does he like better that the children should drink water? Does he wish the sick man to drink this medicine? Cut your nails, cut them; are they not too long? I wish to cut my nails; lend me your knife;

* To determine whether a verb can have a direct object or not, observe its use with a noun for its object; if it then require no preposition before the noun, it takes a direct object, if it require a preposition, its object is indirect. Thus with *nuire* we say, *Il nuit à son voisin*, with the preposition *à*; its object is therefore indirect: with *habiller* we say, *Il habille cet enfant*, without a preposition; its object is therefore direct.

have you not one? Is not that man stupid? Is his wife less stupid than she appears? Those men are very good; do they not love each other well? That man desires above all to be introduced into our society; are you willing to introduce him? You have hunted all day; what have you killed? Does any one prevent you from doing what you wish? I tremble lest my friend be sick; is he well? Do you apprehend that we may do something bad? Does your neighbor keep a boarding-house? Has he many boarders? Do they take more than three meals a day? Is not life full of misery? Is there not more pleasure than misery in this world? Will those men do all that we wish immediately? Does that man take but one meal a day?

Last year when I gave you that beautiful cloth, what did you do with it (*en?*) I made two coats of it, the one for me, the other for my brother. Did those merchants make some good bargains when they were at London? No, sir; they made some very bad ones. A lady asked a Frenchman who did not pronounce the English well, why a young Italian, newly arrived in New York, put out (*sortait*) incessantly his tongue when he spoke. I suppose, said the Frenchman, he is trying, as I have done, but in vain, to seize the English accent (*l' accent.*)

81. QUATRE-VINGT-UNIÈME LEÇON.

FIRST FUTURE TENSE.

Will you owe? I shall owe,	*Devrez-vous? Je devrai,* (fut. of *devoir.*)

All verbs ending in *evoir* form their future in this way. *Apercevoir* makes *apercevrai,* I shall perceive; *concevoir, concevrai,* I shall conceive; *recevoir, recevrai,* I shall receive, etc.

We shall owe you much,	Nous vous devrons beaucoup,
He will receive his money to-morrow,	Il recevra son argent demain,
Will you hold?	*Tiendrez-vous?*
I shall hold,	*Je tiendrai,* (future of *tenir,*)
They will hold our horses,	Ils tiendront nos chevaux.

Tenir and *venir*, it may be observed, form their future in the same way, and so of all their compounds; *S' abstenir*, makes *s' abstiendrai*, I shall abstain; *convenir, conviendrai*, I shall agree, etc.

THE FIRST FUTURE of all French verbs, except those already given, are formed by the following general

RULE. In the first three conjugations annex AI to the infinitive, and in the fourth drop E final and annex AI, and we have the first person singular of the future.

The terminations of all the other persons the learner has frequently seen from *Less.* 34, where they were first given.

FIRST CONJUGATION. INFINITIVE, *Aimer.* To love.

FUTURE.

J' aimerai,	*tu aimeras,*	*il aimera,*	*nous aimerons,*	*vous aimerez,*	*ils aimeront,*
I shall love,	thou wilt love,	he will love,	we shall love,	you will love,	they will love.

INFINITIVE, *Donner.* To give.

FUTURE.

Je donnerai,	*tu donneras,*	*il donnera,*	*nous donnerons,*	*vous donnerez,*	*ils donneront,*
I shall give,	thou wilt give,	he will give,	we shall give,	you will give,	they will give

SECOND CONJUGATION. INFINITIVE, *Servir.* To serve.

FUTURE.

Je servirai,	*tu serviras,*	*il servira,*	*nous servirons,*	*vous servirez,*	*ils serviront,*
I shall serve,	thou wilt serve,	he will serve,	we shall serve,	you will serve,	they will serve.

INFINITIVE, *Bâtir.* To build.

FUTURE.

Je bâtirai,	*tu bâtiras,*	*il bâtira,*	*nous bâtirons,*	*vous bâtirez,*	*ils bâtiront,*
I shall build,	thou wilt build,	he will build,	we shall build,	you will build,	they will build.

The only verb of the THIRD CONJUGATION, which forms its future according to rule, is *Prévoir*, which makes *prévoirai*, etc.

FOURTH CONJUGATION. INFINITIVE, *Mettre.* To put.

FUTURE.

Je mettrai,	*tu mettras,*	*il mettra,*	*nous mettrons,*	*vous mettrez,*	*ils mettront,*
I shall put,	thou wilt put,	he will put,	we shall put,	you will put,	they will put.

INFINITIVE, *Boire.* To drink.

FUTURE.

Je boirai,	*tu boiras,*	*il boira,*	*nous boirons,*	*vous boirez,*	*ils boiront,*
I shall drink,	thou wilt drink,	he will drink,	we shall drink,	you will drink,	they will drink.

The irregular futures, (all of which have been given in the previous lessons,) are the following.

INFINITIVE.	FUTURE.	INFINITIVE.	FUTURE.	INFINITIVE.	FUTURE.
S' asseoir,	*Assiérai* or *aseierai,*	Faire,	*Ferai,*	Tenir,	*Tiendrai,*
Avoir,	*Aurai,*	Aller,	*Irai,*	Valoir,	*Vaudrai,*
Cueillir,	*Cueillerai,*	Pleuvoir,	*Pleuvra,*	Voir,	*Verrai,*
Devoir,	*Devrai,**	Pouvoir,	*Pourrai,*	Venir,	*Viendrai,*
Envoyer,	*Enverrai,*	Savoir,	*Saurai,*	Vouloir,	*Voudrai,*
Falloir,	*Faudra,*	Être,	*Serai,*	And all their compounds.†	

To advance. To retard, *Avancer. Retarder,*

My watch goes too fast, yours too slow, Ma montre avance, la vôtre retarde.

* And all verbs in *evoir*,

† Except *Prévoir*, a compound of *voir*, which has the future regular, as given above.

Acquérir, *courir*, and *mourir*, drop *i* in the future, and make,

J' acquerrai, *I shall acquire*, *Je courrai*, *I shall run*, *Je mourrai*, *I shall die.*

Échoir, to fall, and *Mouvoir*, have in the future, *Écherrai* and *Mouvrai*.

I hope that the good *lot* will fall to him,	J' espère que le bon *lot* lui écherra,
Anger will move him to that *action*,	La colère le portera à cette *action*,
He will acquire many friends,	Il acquerra beaucoup d' amis,
To penetrate,	*Pénétrer*,
He penetrates into *the future*,	Il pénètre dans *l' avenir*,
In future, *for the future*,	*À l' avenir*,
He will run *with all his might*,	Il courra *de toute sa force*,
I shall die of this *disease*,	Je mourrai de cette *maladie*,
The *extremity*, also, *one's last moments*,	L' *extrémité*, (feminine,)
He is in his last moments; he will die,	Il est à l' extrémité; il mourra,
The *delirium*. He is in a delirium,	Le *délire*. Il est dans le délire.

Remark 1. In sentences where the English employ other tenses for the future, the future must be used in French, except after *si* implying a condition, where the indicative present must be used.

I will go away if you go away.	Je m' en irai *si* vous vous en *allez*,
If I shall see him I will speak to him,	*Si* je le *vois* je lui parlerai,
When I have money I will travel,	Quand j' *aurai* de l' argent je voyagerai,
He will keep what you give him,	Il gardera ce que vous lui *donnerez*,
I will go there when he comes,	J' irai là quand il *viendra*.

In all these verbs the meaning is future, and the future in French is used in all except those which follow *si*. *Si* meaning *whether* is followed by the future.

I do not know whether he departs to-morrow,	Je ne sais *s'* il *partira* demain.

Remark 2. A future event which is near is sometimes expressed in French as in English by the present.

He arrives this evening,	Il arrive ce soir,
He departs to-morrow. *To bleed*,	Il part demain. *Saigner*,
He bleeds the sick man. *Suddenly*,	Il saigne le malade. *Tout-à-coup*,
The disease took him suddenly,	La maladie l' a pris tout-à-coup,
Famous. *A walk*, (for pleasure,)	*Fameux*. Une *promenade*,
He takes a walk every *afternoon*,	Il fait une promenade toutes les *après midi*.

How does the general do this morning; have you seen him? He is very sick, he is in a delirium, and his physicians believe that he will die of this disease. Will he die soon? Yes, sir; he is in his last moments. Have they bled him? They have bled him several times.

Have you taken a walk this afternoon? No, sir; I took one yesterday afternoon, and I shall take another to-morrow morning. Does that man owe much money? Yes, sir; he will always owe much. Will his partners owe as much as he? They will owe more than he. If I write you a letter will you receive it early? I shall receive it the same day. If that child is sick will you perceive it? I shall perceive it immediately. Who will hold our horses? The servants will hold them. Will you abstain from wine in future? Yes, sir; I have abstained from it these two years, and I shall always abstain from it in future. Will that house suit your father? It will suit him. Shall we acquire many friends? You will acquire many friends and much money. Will this horse run if he sees the dogs? He will not run, he is very gentle, but those will run with all their force. The beauty which I admire the most in a woman is the beauty of good actions; do you not admire it? I admire it above all.

Napoleon was the most famous man of his age; did you see him when you were in France? Did you see any one of his famous generals? Your friend died suddenly; what was the matter with him? Do the wise penetrate into the future? Does any one penetrate into the future perfectly? What will you do this morning? Will you read your new book? We will write some letters to our friends; will you not write some also? Will not those men repent of their bad actions? Will they remember their promises in future? Shall I not pronounce French well in a little time? Wilt thou not draw thy sword if there shall be danger? We shall draw ours; will they not draw theirs also? When they shall be afraid will they draw their swords? Will you make that horse run by dint of blows? Does that scholar learn fast by dint of studying? Is that coffee to your taste? This fish is to my taste, is it not to yours? Will that scholar do his writing against his will? Will you do your writing immediately? Will you receive all the letters that we shall send you? Shall we be able to fulfill our promises? Will your companion fulfill his against his will? Wilt thou be able to learn thy lesson soon? Wilt thou receive thy money as soon as I shall receive mine?

Why dost thou cover thy writing? I cover it lest the master perceive it. Do you cover it for fear that he may be angry? No, sir; but

I do not wish any one to perceive it. Did you take a walk yesterday morning with the children? No, madam; but we took one in the afternoon. At what hour did the maid make the bed yesterday? She made it very late, it was almost noon. The famous physician Chirac was in his last moments of the disease with which he died; after some days of delirium his senses (*la tête*) returned to him in part (*à moitié.*) Suddenly he feels his pulse: (*se tâte le pouls :*) "I have been called too late," said he; "have they bled him"? "No," replies one to him. "Well"! (*Eh bien !*) said he, "he is a dead man." And he said true.

82. QUATRE-VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

SECOND FUTURE TENSE.

RULE II. THE SECOND FUTURE TENSE is formed in French as in English, by joining the past participle to the future of the auxiliary.

When I shall have received my money I will pay you,	Quand j'aurai reçu mon argent je vous paierai,
When he shall have breakfasted he will go out,	Quand il aura déjeuné il sortira,
When we shall have finished our work we will play,	Quand nous aurons fini notre ouvrage nous jouerons.

REMARK 1. The verb *être*, followed by *à* and the infinitive, is sometimes used to express how one is occupied, or to what he is giving attention.

He is writing, or at his writing,	Il est à écrire,
He will be reading,	Il sera à lire,
She is always *complaining*,	Elle est toujours à *se plaindre*,
I pass my time studying,	Je passe mon temps à étudier,
He comes for his book,	Il vient chercher son livre,
They are going for flowers,	Ils vont chercher des fleurs,
We shall send for the doctor,	Nous enverrons chercher le médecin,
They pass before my house,	Ils passent devant chez moi,
They pass behind your house,	Ils passent derrière chez vous,
He complains for a small matter,	Il se plaint pour peu de chose,
You complain without *cause*,	Vous vous plaignez sans *sujet*.

REMARK 2. What has been said of not separating *faire* from the infinitive, (*Less.* 66, *Rem.*) applies also to *écouter*, *entendre*, *laisser*, *voir*, and some others when intimately connected with the following verb. The objective pronoun is placed before both verbs, the noun after both. If the agent also be expressed, it takes, if it be a noun, the preposition *à* before it; if it be a pronoun, the form of the indirect object.

I have just heard my father say that	Je viens d' entendre dire cela à mon père
I have just heard him say it,	Je viens de le lui entendre dire,
Have you seen the men do that?	Avez-vous vu faire cela aux hommes?
I have seen them do it,	Je le leur ai vu faire,
Does he let the girl sing that song?	Laisse-t-il chanter cette chanson à la fille?
He lets her sing it,	Il la lui laisse chanter,
He has heard the lady sing,	Il a entendu chanter la dame,
To advise, counsel,	*Conseiller,* (*de* before infinitive,)
Do you advise your friend to do that?	Conseillez-vous à votre ami de faire cela?
I advise him to do it,	Je lui conseille de le faire,
To permit,	*Permettre,* (compound of *Mettre*, *de* before infinitive.)

Permettre may take after it the infinitive or the subjunctive.

Do you permit your son to do that?	Permettez-vous à votre fils de faire cela?
	Permettez-vous que votre fils fasse cela?
I permit him to do that,	Je lui permets de faire cela,
	Je permets qu'il fasse cela,
To rain. It does nothing but rain,	*Pleuvoir.* Il ne fait que pleuvoir,
To happen, to be, (in a place,)	*Se trouver,*
I happened to be at his house,	Je me suis trouvé chez lui.

Aller as well as *se porter* is sometimes used in reference to health.

How is your health?	*Comment va votre santé?*
Admirably well; and *how are you?*	*À merveille;* et *vous-même?*
How are they at home?	Comment va-t-on à la maison?
Every body is well, *thank God,*	Tout le monde va bien, *Dieu merci,*
And (how are they) at your house?	Et chez vous?
Your *servant.* I am your *servant,*	Votre *serviteur.* Je suis votre *serviteur,*
	Votre *servante.* Je suis votre *servante,*
In like manner. Constantly,	*Pareillement. Constamment,*
I desire it in like manner,	Je le désire pareillement,
He constantly denies the fact,	Il nie constamment le fait,
Sure. I am sure of it,	*Sûr.* J' en suis sûr,
Several times,	*À plusieurs reprises, plusieurs fois,*
I have seen him several times,	Je l' ai vu à plusieurs reprises,
A flash of lightning. It lightens,	Un *éclair.* Il fait des éclairs,

It has just thundered,	Il vient de faire du tonnerre,
An *event*. *Common*,	Un *événement*. *Commun*,
That event is very common,	Cet événement est fort commun,
What does that phrase mean?	*Que veut dire cette phrase?*
Do you know what it means?	Savez-vous ce qu' elle veut dire?
What does that mean?	Que veut dire cela?
He does not know what he means,	Il ne sait pas ce qu' il veut dire.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF VOULOIR,

Je veuille, tu veuilles, il veuille, nous voulions, vous vouliez, ils veuillent.

He will learn provided he be willing to study,	Il apprendra pourvu qu' il veuille étudier,
In case thou be willing to study,	Au cas que tu veuilles étudier,
Although you be willing to do your duty,	Bien que vous vouliez faire votre devoir,
In case they be willing to work,	En cas qu' ils veuillent travailler,
In order that we may be willing to study,	Afin que nous voulions étudier.

Your servant, I wish you a good morning. I wish you one (*le*) in like manner. How do you do this morning? Admirably well; and how are you? Tolerably (sufficiently) well, I thank you; you are very good. I am very glad to see you in good health. How are they at home? Every body is well. And at your house? Perfectly well, thank God. How is your brother? He was well last evening (*hier au soir.*) Does your neighbor complain much? Yes, sir; he loves to complain; he complains for the smallest thing. Is that scholar studying? Yes, sir; he is very studious, he is always studying; and his brother is very diligent, he is always working. Will that boy repent of his bad conduct? When the master shall have spoken to him, he will repent of it. When the general shall have returned, will you see him again? Have you heard my brother say that? I heard him say it last evening. What do you advise that sick man to do? I advise him to send for the doctor. Do you not advise him to take this medicine? I do not advise him to take it. Does your father permit you to do any thing in anger? He does not permit me to do any thing in anger. Does it not look as if it would rain? It begins to rain already. (*Less.* 62, *Rem.* 1.) I happened to be at the market yesterday morning, and I saw your brother there; what was he doing? He went there for pears, plums, and

grapes. Do you make the boy read that book? I make him read it.

Is there any one who has been constantly happy? Has our neighbor constantly done his duty? Is virtue sure of being rewarded in this world? When you were sick last August, did they not bleed you? Did they not bleed you several times? Does it lighten? It has just thundered; does it not look as if it were going to rain? Does it always thunder when it lightens? Was not the death of the president an unhappy event? Are good men very common? Is not our age full of great events? Has the sick man complained without cause? Do you give the servant money that he may be willing to work? Does the master talk to the children that they may be willing to study? Do you think that we are willing to do more than others? Does he think that I am willing to do nothing? Do the wise act prudently toward every body? If you do any thing in anger will you act prudently? Will you always remember your duty toward the poor? Will the lazy scholar do over again his exercise? How old are you? Are you more than fourteen years old?

Does the general act without order? No, sir; he awaits the order of the president. Does that scholar pay attention to what the master says? Yes, sir; he has paid great attention these two hours. Does that German serve you well? He has served me well these two years. Have you still roses and pinks in your garden? I have no more. Are those men Germans? They are so. Are they your servants? They are. (*Less.* 52, *Rem.* 2.) When general Taylor was president, did he come (into) to this city? Yes, sir; and many of his friends came with him. Did you see him? I saw him several times. "Cousin," said a lady to a gentleman who happened to be with her in a numerous (*en nombreuse*) company, "do you think I am right when I say that I am only forty years old?" "I am sure of it, my dear cousin," said the gentleman, "and I can not doubt of it, for I have heard you say that for (*depuis*) more than ten years." "What difference (*différence*) is there," asked the duchess (*duchesse*) of Maine, to the writer (*écrivain,*) La Mothe, "between me and a clock (*une horloge?*") "Duchess," answered La Mothe, "a clock marks (*marque*) the hours and your highness makes (one) forget them."

83. QUATRE-VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

To refresh,	*Rafraîchir*,
It is necessary to refresh them,	Il faut les rafraîchir,
They have refreshed themselves,	Ils se sont rafraîchis,
To accuse,	*Accuser*, (*de* before the inf. and noun.)
They accuse him of *theft*,	On l' accuse de *vol*, (feminine,)
The *judge*,	Le *juge*,
He appears before the judge,	Il paraît devant le juge,
Falsely. They accuse him falsely,	*Faussement.* On l' accuse faussement,
To pass over. By swimming,	*Traverser. À la nage*,
He passes the river by swimming,	Il traverse la rivière à la nage,
They pass over all Italy,	Ils traversent toute l' Italie,
To contain,	*Contenir*,
It contains a thousand persons,	Elle contient mille personnes,
To exclaim. To cry,	*S' écrier. Crier*,
He cried out from *pain*,	Il a crié de *douleur*, (feminine,)
A *calf*, *veal.* He eats veal,	Un *veau*, du *veau.* Il mange du veau,
An *image*,	Une *image*,
He is the image of his father,	Il est l' image de son père,
To be pleased,	*Savoir gré*, (or *bon gré*,) } *à* bef. person,
To be displeased,	*Savoir mauvais gré*, } *de* bef. a thing,
I am pleased with that man for what he has done,	Je sais gré à cet homme de ce qu' il a fait,
I am pleased with him for it,	Je lui en sais bon gré,
To compose. The *senate*,	*Composer.* Le *sénat*,
The *people.* The *republic*,	Le *peuple.* La *république*,
Congress. A member of congress,	Le *congrès.* Un membre du congrès,
The house of *representatives*,	La chambre de *représentants*,
The senate and the people composed the Roman republic,	Le sénat et le peuple composaient la république romaine,
The congress of the United States is composed of a senate and house of representatives,	Le congrès des États-Unis se compose d' un sénat et d' une chambre de représentants,
I am *extremely* obliged to you,	Je vous suis *infiniment* obligé,
I thank you very much,	Je vous remercie infiniment,
As soon as. As soon as he appeared,	*Dès que.* Dès qu' il parut,
As soon as I shall have arrived, I shall see him,	Dès que je serai arrivé, je le verrai,
Until then. Until yesterday evening,	Jusqu' alors. Jusqu' hier au soir,
Until that day,	Jusqu' à ce jour-là,

Once more,	Encore une fois,
I will see him once more,	Je le verrai encore une fois.

RULE. THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE of French verbs is formed by changing *ons* of the first person plural of the indicative present, into *ant*. Thus:

FIRST PERSON.	PARTICIPLE.	FIRST PERSON.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE.
We love,	*Loving*,	Nous aimons,	*Aim*ANT,
We come,	*Coming*,	Nous venons,	*Ven*ANT,
We wish,	*Wishing*,	Nous voulons,	*Voul*ANT,
We write,	*Writing*,	Nous écrivons,	*Écriv*ANT.

The following are the only exceptions:

To have,	*Having*,	Avoir,	*Ayant*,
To be,	*Being*,	Être,	*Étant*,
To fall to,	*Falling to*,	*Échoir*,	*Échéant*,
To know,	*Knowing*,	Savoir,	*Sachant*.

REMARK. This participle is less used in French than in English, the English participle being, as we have seen, often rendered into French by the infinitive. This participle, however, is used in several ways.

First, when two actions are spoken of as performed at the same time, the more enduring of the two is commonly expressed by this participle, preceded by the preposition *en*,

He eats *while he is reading*,	Il mange *en lisant*,
He studies *while he works*,	Il étudie *en travaillant*,
He talks *while he is sleeping*,	Il parle *en dormant*,
He burns his shoes while *warming his feet*,	Il brûle ses souliers *en se chauffant les pieds*,
I cut my finger *while cutting my nails*,	Je me suis coupé le doigt *en me coupant les ongles.*

The present participle used in this way, always refers to the subject of the verb,

Good morning, madam; how is your health? Admirably well; and how are you? Tolerably well; I am extremely obliged to you. How are they at home? Every body is well, thank God. How is your sister? She was well the last time that I saw her. I am very glad (of it.) Where is she? She is in the country. It is necessary to refresh those workmen; are they not tired? No, sir; they have refreshed themselves. Of what do they accuse that man? They accuse him of theft; and they will take him before the judge. How will you pass over that river? I shall pass over it by swimming. How many persons will that room contain? It will contain more

than three thousand. Why does that man cry out? He cries out from pain, because the surgeon is cutting off his left arm. Do you like veal better than mutton? No, sir; I like mutton quite as well as veal. Are the inhabitants of England rich? Some are very rich, but the greatest part are poor. (*Less.* 69, *Rem.* 4.) Are not the United States a great republic? Yes, sir; and France is, at present, a great republic also. Is not your uncle a member of congress? Yes, sir; he is a member of the house of representatives. Are you displeased with me for what I have done? No, sir; I am pleased with you for it.

Did you not make many mistakes in doing over again (*refaisant*) your exercises? In giving his opinion, did not the master speak much? While winding up (*en montant*) his watch, did he not break it? While buying a cashmere shawl, did not your aunt lose her money? Do you often speak while sleeping? Did the boy burn his hand while making the fire? Did you read the news while warming your feet? In looking for your pencil, did you not find your penknife? Does not the natural and the divine law oblige us to honor father and mother? What did the master say in giving his opinion? I happened to be at the market this morning and I found you there; what did you buy? Did you not buy pears, plums, and grapes? Did your sister send for pinks? Did you find some fruit newly arrived from Cuba? That boy talks incessantly, and this one sings incessantly; do they not confuse (*fendent*) your head? Does that scholar try in vain to learn his lesson? I try in vain to understand you; can you not speak slower? Did Chirac, the famous physician, die suddenly? Your sick friend is better; he is no more in the delirium; does the physician think that he is in his last moments?

Is that your servant? It is. (*Less.* 53, *Rem.* 3.) Is that your calf? It is. Are these your books? They are. Are those your companions? They are not. Did your acquaintance come to see you while you were traveling in France? They came several times. The lawyer came to see your cousin last night at ten o'clock; did he see him? He did not see him; it was too late. Did the president come to Washington on his return (*à son retour*) from Philadelphia (*Philadelphie*) last week? Yes, sir; he came on Friday, and

several members of congress came with him. I saw him, for I was in Washington that day; did you not see him? No, sir; I was absent (*absent*) from the city. An honest man, falsely accused of theft, was brought before a judge. As soon as the judge saw the accused, he exclaimed: "I see the image of a thief upon your face." "Do you think then," said the prisoner (*prisonnier*) to him, "that my face is a mirror?" A Russian (*russe*) countryman who had never seen asses, (*d' ânes,*) on seeing several in France, exclaimed: "Heavens! (*mon Dieu!*) what (*que*) large hares (*lièvres*) there are in this country!"

84. QUATRE-VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE CONTINUED.

REMARK 1. The present participle belonging to the subject is used also without a preposition.

Doing nothing, do you hope *to succeed?*	Ne faisant rien espérez-vous *réussir?*
Never studying, can you learn French?	N' étudiant jamais pouvez-vous apprendre le français?
Not knowing that man, do you *trust* him?	Ne connaissant pas cet homme lui *faites-*vous *crédit?*

REMARK 2. The present participle without a preposition may belong also to the object of the verb; but its connection should then be intimate, and the construction such as to avoid ambiguity.

I saw that boy *stealing* my fruit,	J' ai vu ce garçon *volant* mon fruit,
Behold those children playing beneath the shade,	Voyez ces enfants se jouant sous *l' ombrage*, (masculine,)
I saw them running *toward* us,	Je les voyais courant *vers* nous.

REMARK 3. The present as well as the past participle used adjectively, is to be considered an adjective in all respects, and varied accordingly; but as a participle it is always invariable.

She is a good woman, always obliging her friends when she can do so,	C' est une bonne femme, *obligeant* toujours ses amies lorsqu' elle peut le faire,
She is an obliging woman,	C' est une femme *obligeante*,
Persons loving every body love no one much,	Les personnes *aimant* tout le monde n' aiment beaucoup personne,

Loving persons have much pleasure,	Les personnes *aimantes** ont beaucoup de plaisir,
To steal. To succeed,	*Voler, dérober. Réussir,* (*à* before infinitive,)
He succeeds in learning French,	Il réussit à apprendre le français,
He steals money from his master,	Il vole de l' argent à son maître,
To trust. I trust him,	*Faire crédit.* Je lui fais crédit,
They trust those men,	Ils font crédit à ces hommes,
To charm, delight. I am delighted,	*Charmer.* Je suis charmé, (*de* before infinitive and noun,)
The semblance. To pretend,	Le *semblant. Faire semblant,* (*de* before infinitive and noun,)
Does he pretend to sleep?	Fait-il semblant de dormir?
He makes the pretense, (pretends to,)	Il en fait semblant,
The *means. To have the means, afford,*	Le *moyen. Avoir les moyens,* (*de* before infinitive,)
He knows the means of succeeding,	Il sait le moyen de réussir,
It is believed that he can not afford to buy that house,	On croit qu' il n' a pas les moyens d' acheter cette maison.

Remark 4. Where the English employ the passive without an agent, the French use the active with *on*.

It is believed. It is said,	*On croit. On dit,*
They were heard,	On les a entendus,
Firewood. He cuts firewood,	*Du bois à brûler.* Il coupe du bois à brûler.

Rule. Nouns generally which govern the infinitive in English, take the infinitive after them in French, with *de,* if used in a definite or general sense; with *a,* if used in a partitive sense. Such are the following:

The *goodness.*	The *strength,*	La *bonté.*	La *force,*
The *generosity.*	The *patience,*	La *générosité.*	La *patience,*
The *satisfaction.*	The *politeness,*	La *satisfaction.*	La *politesse.*

To this rule belong a large class of nouns too numerous to mention, denoting *time, power will,* various *affections* and *qualities,* and which the learner can readily distinguish; also, *peur, honte, raison,* and *tort,* which are often rendered by adjectives; as,

He has the courage to do it,	Il a le *courage de* le *faire,* (def. sense,)
He has courage in doing it,	Il a du courage à le faire, (partitive sense,)

* The learner must determine whether a word be an adjective or a participle, by considering whether it be merely a qualifying word, or whether it denote also action like a verb.

She is afraid to speak,	Elle a *peur de parler*, (general sense,)
He has the goodness to lend me his book,	Il a la bonté de me prêter son livre,
He had the generosity to give him money,	Il a eu la générosité de lui donner de l' argent,
He had generosity in giving some to him,	Il avait de la générosité à lui en donner,
By sea. He travels by sea,	*Sur mer* or *par mer.* Il voyage sur mer,
The *dentist* pulls his tooth,	Le *dentiste* lui arrache la dent,
Distinctly. He pronounces distinctly,	*Distinctement.* Il prononce distinctement,

Remark 5. *Aimer mieux* takes *que* before a second infinitive to denote preference of taste, and *que de* to denote preference of will; as,

I like eating better than drinking,	J' aime mieux manger que boire,
I like pardoning better than punishing,	J' aime mieux pardonner que de punir,
I like to dance better than to sing,	J' aime mieux danser que chanter,
I like to praise better than to blame,	J' aime mieux louer que de blâmer,
We have wherewith to live,	Nous avons de quoi vivre,
He looks as if he did not know me,	Il a l' air de ne pas me connaître,
Lightly, slightly. Indisposed,	*Légèrement. Indisposé,*
She is slightly indisposed,	Elle est légèrement indisposée,
To invite,	*Inviter,* (*à* before infinitive and noun.)
He invites us to dinner,	Il nous invite à dîner,
To carry away. The *dish, food,*	*Emporter.* Le *mets,*
They carry off the dishes,	On emporte les mets,
Ready to serve you,	Prêt à vous rendre service.

Your servant, miss; how do you do this morning? Admirably well, thank God; and how are you? Ready to serve you. I am extremely obliged to you. How are they at home? Every body is well, I thank you; and at your house? Very well. How is your uncle? I believe that he is well; he was well last evening. I am very glad of it. Where is he? He is in the city. How is your aunt? She is slightly indisposed. I am sorry for it, and I hope that it (*cela*) will be nothing. Do your brothers succeed in learning French? They succeed very well; they begin to speak it already. Do you trust that man? Yes, sir. Is he not honest? He is not; he has stolen clothes and money. Have you seen the children playing here? I saw them playing under the shade. Where have they gone? I saw them running toward the house. Is not Miss B. very charming? Yes, sir; her beauty charms all eyes, and her singing charms all ears.

Are there trees around the house which you have just bought? There are many, and they make a beautiful shade. Turn toward me and see what I have; do you see it? Yes, sir; they are some beautiful flowers; they are very charming.

I see the children playing beneath the shade; do you not see them? That man is not honest, for I found him stealing my fruit; is he not a great thief? There are the children; do you not see them running toward us? I surprised that servant drinking my wine; does he not look tipsy? I found the children eating these apples; do they belong to you? Always playing, can you ever acquire riches? Never doing your duty, can you hope to have friends? Never studying, does that scholar hope to make progress? Not loving your friends, do you believe that they can love you? Did you not surprise the children eating your fruit? Can you not afford to buy these fine horses? It is said that that dentist is very able; are you acquainted with him? It is believed that he has had the goodness to clothe many poor; can he afford to do that? Your horse has not strength to go further; (*Less.* 54, *Rem.* 2;) is he not very much fatigued? That man talks incessantly; have you the patience to listen to him? Have you had the satisfaction to see your friends in good health? The general has had the politeness to offer you his horse; are you not obliged to him? Do you often travel by sea? He pronounces distinctly; can you not pronounce as distinctly as he? That child is lightly clad; will he not be cold? Have you invited company to dinner? Have they not carried off our books and papers?

Did not Lewis the Sixteenth put on (cover himself with) the red cap? Yes, sir; he covered himself with it to satisfy (*satisfaire*) the Jacobins who demanded it. If I write you a letter on Thursday, when will you receive it? I shall receive it the same day. That workman is very diligent; will he not acquire friends? He will acquire friends and money. Will not those soldiers run when they shall see the enemy? They will not run, for they have sufficient courage. Did not Cæsar (*César*) pass over all Italy? He passed over all Italy and penetrated as far as Germany. Can any man penetrate the future? No, sir; God alone can penetrate it. A French officer had invited much company to dinner. His son, who was only six years old, came

to the table, but his father sent him away, (*le repoussa*,) telling him that his beard was too short to dine with his father. But his mother had a little table prepared (*fit dresser*) for him, and ordered him to be well served. In the mean time, (*Less.* 70,) an old cat tried several times to carry off his food; upon which the child, out of patience, exclaimed: "Go and eat (*Va manger*) with my father; thy beard is sufficiently long."

85. QUATRE-VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

To soil. He soils his clothes,	*Salir.* Il salit ses habits,
To spread, extend. He extends his arms,	*Étendre.* Il étend les bras,
Spread some butter on the bread,	Étendez du beurre sur le pain,
To spill, diffuse. He has spilt the water,	*Répandre.* Il a répandu l'eau,
The sun diffuses its light every where,	Le soleil répand partout sa lumière,
To destroy. Age destroys beauty,	*Détruire.* L'âge détruit la beauté,
A *space.* *To feign*,	Un *espace.* *Feindre*, (*de* bef. infinitive,)
He feigns to be in a delirium,	Il feint d'être en délire,
To knock. He knocks at the door,	*Frapper.* Il frappe à la porte.

Remark 1. The subjunctive expressing desire sometimes begins a sentence.

May you (be able to) live happy!	*Puissiez*-vous vivre heureux!
May he arrive soon!	*Puisse*-t-il arriver bientôt!
May it please God that he come soon!	*Plaise* à Dieu qu'il vienne bientôt!
Heaven grant that that may happen!	*Fasse* le Ciel que cela arrive!

Such phrases may be explained by supplying *Je veux que*, or *Je désire que*, or something equivalent; *Je souhaite que vous puissiez vivre heureux*, etc.

Remark 2. The subjunctive present first person singular of *savoir*, with a negative has the peculiarity of being used like the indicative, without any governing phrase.

I know no one like him,	Je ne *sache* personne comme lui,
I know nothing so beautiful,	Je ne *sache* rien de si beau,
I do not know that this man is a thief,	Je ne *sache* pas que cet homme soit un voleur,
To overthrow,	*Renverser*,

He overturned the table,	Il a renversé la table,
That *island*. The *British* isles,	Cette *île*. Les Îles *Britanniques*,
A *battle*,	Une *bataille*,
He has gained many battles,	Il a gagné plusieurs batailles,
Warlike. The warlike Gauls,	*Belliqueux*. Les *Gaulois* belliqueux,
A *century*, *age*. The *hero* of his age,	Un *siècle*. Le *héros* de son siècle,
Arms, (for war.) Fire-arms,	Des *armes*. Des armes à feu,
The *crown*. A crown of flowers,	La *couronne*. Une couronne de fleurs,
A *pair*. A pair of *pigeons*,	Une *paire*. Une paire de *pigeons*,
An *object*. *At once*,	Un *objet*. *À la fois*,
We see many objects at once,	Nous voyons plusieurs objets à la fois,
Cream. This milk has much cream,	La *crème*. Ce lait a bien de la crème,
Longer. As long as,	Plus longtemps. Aussi longtemps que.

THE CONDITIONAL MOOD in French commonly corresponds to *should* or *would*, with the verb in English. It is generally preceded or followed by an *if* with a verb in the imperfect tense; as, *If* I *had* money I *would travel*, *si* j' *avais* de l' argent je *voyagerais*; or, I *would travel if* I *had* money, Je *voyagerais si* j' *avais* de l' argent.

RULE. The *Conditional* is formed by changing the terminating letters of the future. (*Less.* 34.)

AI,	AS,	A,	ONS,	EZ,	ONT, into,
AIS,	AIS,	AIT,	IONS,	IEZ	AIENT.

FUTURE, *Serai*. I shall be.

CONDITIONAL.

Je serais,	*tu serais*,	*il serait*,	*nous serions*,	*vous seriez*,	*ils seraient*,
I should be,	thou shouldst be,	he should be,	we should be,	you should be,	they should be.

FUTURE, *Aurai*. I shall have.

CONDITIONAL.

J' aurais,	*tu aurais*,	*il aurait*,	*nous aurions*,	*vous auriez*,
I would have,	thou wouldst have,	he would have,	we would have,	you would have,

Ils auraient, they would have.

FUTURE, *Aimerai*. I shall love.

CONDITIONAL

J' aimerais,	*tu aimerais*,	*il aimerait*,	*nous aimerions*,	*vous aimeriez*,
I should love,	thou wouldst love,	he would love,	we should love,	you would love,

Ils aimeraient, they would love.

If I had the time I would read,	Si j' avais le temps je lirais,
If he had riches he would not keep them,	S' il avait des richesses il ne les garderait pas,
If we could we would,	Si nous pouvions nous voudrions,
Would you drink if you had water?	Boiriez-vous si vous aviez de l' eau?
They would eat if they had bread,	Ils mangeraient s' ils avaient du pain,

Wouldst thou not warm thyself if thou wert cold?	Ne te chaufferais-tu pas si tu avais froid?
He could if he would,	Il pourrait s'il voulait.

Good morning, sir; how do you do this morning? Sufficiently well, I thank you; and you? Admirably well, I am obliged to you. Did you sleep well last night? No, sir; my teeth pained me a little, and the dogs made much noise; I slept but little. I am sorry for it. How does your mother do? I believe that she is well; here she comes. Madam, I am your very humble servant. Sir, I am your servant. How have you been these several days? Very well, I thank you. Does the captain suffer still from his disease? Yes, sir; he is in his last moments. Does the physician believe that he will die to-day? Yes, sir; his brother also, the famous orator, died of the same disease. Will you take a walk with the children this afternoon? No, sir; they have soiled their clothes; they will stay at home. Beware of soiling the floor; have you not soiled it? No, sir; it is very clean. Why does that child extend his arms? He wishes to go to his mother. Is not the general's brother very famous? Yes, sir; his name extends through (*par*) all Europe. Have you heard the news? Yes, sir; it is spread (diffused) in all the city. Has not that young man dissipated (*dissipé*) his fortune? He has dissipated his fortune and destroyed his health.

Can you learn French well in the space of six months? Why does your neighbor feign anger (to be in anger?) Do not those children feign (to be sick) sickness? Who knocks at the door? Has not some one knocked twice? Are there not many islands in the (sea of the north) north sea? Are the French a warlike people? Have they gained many battles in this century? Who is their greatest hero? Is he not the hero of our century? Did he vanquish the arms (*armées*) of Russia? To whom did he give the crown of Spain? You have a (pair) couple of fine chickens; did you buy them at the market? That scholar does not study at all; is not his head filled with a thousand other objects? Can one pay attention to several objects at once? That cow is good; her milk has a great deal of cream; do you not wish to buy her? Would you not buy her if you had the money? If we wiped the table with our handkerchiefs,

should we not soil them? If those children had butter, would they not spread it on their bread? If this one had milk in his cup, would he not spill it? If thou couldst see the future, wouldst thou be more happy? Should I not die if I drank all that medicine at once? Did not the Romans overthrow the power of Hannibal? Was not that hero their greatest enemy?

Is your neighbor satisfied? No, sir; he is always complaining. When will you go to France? I shall go there when I shall have learned the French language. Have you heard the Italian woman sing? I heard her sing last evening. Does it not look as if it would rain? It has been raining more than two hours. I happened to be at the market this morning, and I saw your brother there; when did he return? He returned yesterday. Why did you not open to me the door the other day when I knocked? I opened it as soon as I could, but you had departed. Is not that German an old soldier of Napoleon? Yes, sir; he suffered much from cold in the campaign (*campagne*) of Russia. Did Lafayette offer the crown to Louis Philippe? Yes, sir; and Louis Philippe pretended to refuse it. In the space of fourteen years, Cæsar reduced the warlike people of Gaul, and conquered Spain twice; he passed over as conqueror (*en conquérant*) all Italy; he penetrated as far as Germany, and into the British isles; he overthrew the power of the Great Pompey; (*Pompée;*) he subdued Egypt; he met and beat Pharnaces, (*Pharnace,*) son of Mithridates; (*Mithridate;*) he vanquished in Africa the great name of Cato, (*Caton,*) and the arms of Juba, and engaged in (*livra*) fifty battles, which cost the life of (*à*) eleven hundred and ninety-two thousand men. This hero was, at the same time, the model of the historians, (*modèle des historiens,*) and the greatest orator of his age after Cicero (*Cicéron.*)

86. QUATRE-VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

CONDITIONAL CONTINUED.

The *burden.* *To support, to maintain,*	Le *fardeau.* *Soutenir,* (comp. of *tenir,*)
He supports that heavy burden,	Il soutient ce lourd fardeau,

The *honey*. The *rice*,	Le *miel*. Le *riz*,
She has quite as much honey as rice,	Elle a tout autant de miel que de riz,
She has as much of this as of that,	Elle a autant de celui-ci que de celui-là,
A *treasure*. *To put back*,	Un *trésor*. *Remettre*, (com. of *mettre*,)
He puts back the treasure,	Il remet le trésor,
A *corner*. *To conceal*, *hide*,	Un *coin*. *Cacher*,
He concealed himself in a corner,	Il s' est caché dans un coin,
The *end*. At the end of the street,	Le *bout*. Au bout de la rue,
First, *at first*. First write to him,	*D' abord*. D' abord écrivez-lui,
A *piano*. She plays on the piano,	Un *piano*. Elle touche le (joue du) piano,
Faith. He acts in good faith,	La *foi*. Il agit de bonne foi,
A *discourse*, *speech*. His *eloquence*,	Un *discours*. Son *éloquence*, (fem.)
He is *eloquent;* he has made a speech full of eloquence,	Il est *éloquent;* il a fait un discours plein d' éloquence.

Penser, with an infinitive, sometimes means to be on the point of or near, sometimes to intend, in which cases the infinitive takes no preposition.

I was near dying,	J' ai pensé mourir,
He was near being killed,	Il a pensé être tué,
I intend to go to France,	Je pense aller en France,
That *compliment*. *To reply*,	Ce *compliment*. *Répliquer*,
He replied well to the compliment,	Il a bien répliqué au compliment,
To lie. He does not lie,	*Mentir*. Il ne ment pas,
To press, *hurry*. He is much hurried,	*Presser*. Il est bien pressé,
The best in the world,	Le mieux du monde.

REMARK 1. Attributes of designation are generally preceded by *à* in French.

The man with the white hat,	L' homme au chapeau blanc,
The lady with the small hands,	La dame aux petites mains,
The servant with the big head,	Le domestique à la grosse tête,
The house with the large windows,	La maison aux grandes fenêtres.

REMARK 2. Sometimes the conditional mood is used when the condition (the *si* and the imperfect) may be looked upon as understood.

He would like to be rich,	Il aimerait à être riche,*
I should like to be wise,	J' aimerais à être sage,
We should wish to be good,	Nous voudrions être bons,
They ought to do their duty,	Ils devraient faire leur devoir,
I could not do that,	Je ne saurais pas faire cela.

Savoir sometimes means to be able, to have the power.

* The condition might be supplied thus: He would like to be rich, *if he could*, and in this form the sentences become similar to those in the preceding lesson.

Sit down a little.	Asseyez-vous un peu.
I (could) can not,	Je ne saurais.

REMARK 3. The conditional is not unfrequently used without any obvious condition where *should* or *would* are used in English.

Thinking that it would rain, he staid at home,	Pensant qu' il pleuvrait, il resta à la maison,
He thought that they would believe him,	Il pensait qu' on le croirait,
I thought that you would come,	Je pensais que vous viendriez,
We hoped that they would be there,	Nous espérions qu' ils seraient là,
He feels a lively pain,	Il sent une douleur vive.

Your servant, madam; how do you find yourself this morning? The best in the world; I thank you very much. And you? Admirably well, thank God. Please (*donnez-vous la peine*) to sit down. I can (could) not. You are very much hurried. I will come again (return) to-morrow. I have only come to know how you did. Make my compliments to your sister. Adieu, sir; I thank you for this visit (*visite.*) Good evening, madam; Is it not very warm? Yes, sir; the heat of the sun is excessive (*excessive*) to-day. Do they wish us to support that heavy burden? Yes, sir; they wish you to support it, for they are very tired. Do you wish for honey with your rice? No, sir; I prefer butter. Does not that child like honey? Yes, sir; and he eats quite as much honey as rice. That treasure is heavy; where did you find it? In the corner of the room, and I am going to put it back. Do you put it back in the same place? I put it back there. Where did the thief conceal himself? He concealed himself at the end of the garden. Does your brother dwell at the corner of this street? No, sir; he dwells at the end of it, and the trees hide the view of his house. Did Miss Smith play on the piano? Yes, madam; at first she sang with her cousin, and after that (*ensuite*) she played on the piano. Have you been well? No, sir; I have been very sick; I came near dying.

Is the general's son-in-law a man of good faith? He is a man without faith; are you not acquainted with him? Is not the representative from Massachusetts an eloquent man? Has he not just made a speech full of eloquence? Will not the representative from Louisiana reply? Do not believe that man, he does nothing but lie; do you believe him? Does he not always lie when he speaks? Why are you so hurried? If you had a chair, would you

not sit down? If that man were prudent, would he not acquire riches? If I had money, should I not have friends? Wouldst thou not run, if thou wert afraid? If they had baskets, would they not gather their fruit? Ought we not to give money to those workmen? Did you not bring your umbrella, believing that it would rain? Did I not assure you that I would come? Believing that we should send for wine, did you not buy some? Believing that you would go to the market, I staid at home; did you go there? If it were cold, would it not be necessary to make some fire? If it lightened, would it not thunder also? Is not death a common event? Are you sure that your friend is coming? Have you not complained without cause? Have I not cause of grief (*douleur ?*) What is the subject (*sujet*) of the book which you have just written? Is that man falsely accused of theft? Did he not come near being punished?

Was not the last governor of the state very charitable? Yes, sir; for he clothed more than twenty poor at his expense. How old was general Taylor when he died? He was more than sixty years old. Did not the last king of France die in exile (*exil?*) Yes, sir; two kings of France died in exile in the space of eighteen years. As soon as your friend shall have arrived, will he come to your house? Yes, sir; and as soon as he shall have come you shall see him. Carry these letters to my brother at the end of this street. Carry them to him, and bring his to me. A Frenchman wishing to pay (make) a compliment to a lady who had great pretensions (*prétentions*) to beauty, said to her: "Truly, (*vraiment,*) madam; you are the most beautiful of the flowers of your sex" (*sexe.*) The lady, who was not very polite, answered him. "I thank you, sir, for your compliment, and I should wish to be able (*en*) to say as much of you." "You can (do) so, madam," replied the Frenchman immediately, "if you can lie as easily (*aisément*) as I." An Irishman comparing (*comparant*) his watch with the clock of St. Paul, and bursting out (*éclatant*) with laughter, (*de rire,*) they asked him at what he was laughing. "And how can I prevent it?" (*m' en empêcher*) cried he, "when my little watch, which was made by my cousin at Cork, and which cost me only ten dollars, has beaten your big clock at New York, about an hour and a quarter, only since yesterday morning."

87. QUATRE-VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

PAST CONDITIONAL.

The PAST CONDITIONAL usually corresponds to *should* or *would have* with the verb in English, and is accompanied with *if* and a verb in the pluperfect tense instead of the imperfect. It is formed by joining the past participle to the conditional of the auxiliary. Thus:

J' aurais eu,	*Il aurait eu,*	*Vous auriez eu,*
I should have had,	He would have had,	You would have had,
Tu aurais eu,	*Nous aurions eu,*	*Ils auraient eu,*
Thou wouldst have had,	We should have had,	They would have had.
J' aurais été,	*Il aurait été,*	*Vous auriez été,*
I should have been,	He would have been,	You would have been,
Tu aurais été,	*Nous aurions été,*	*Ils auraient été,*
Thou wouldst have been,	We should have been,	They would have been.
J' aurais aimé,	*Il aurait aimé,*	*Vous auriez aimé,*
I should have loved,	He would have loved,	You would have loved,
Tu aurais aimé,	*Nous aurions aimé,*	*Ils auraient aimé,*
Thou wouldst have loved,	We should have loved,	They would have loved.
Je serais venu,	*Il serait venu,*	*Vous seriez venus,*
I should have come,	He would have come,	You would have come,
Tu serais venu,	*Nous serions venus,*	*Ils seraient venus,*
Thou wouldst have come,	We should have come,	They would have come.

If I had had the time I should have read, Si j' avais eu le temps j' aurais lu,

If he had been able he would have been willing, S' il avait pu il aurait voulu,

If we had had riches we should have kept them, Si nous avions eu des richesses nous les aurions gardées,

Would you have drunk if you had had water? Auriez-vous bu si vous aviez eu de l' eau?

They would have eaten if they had had bread, Ils auraient mangé s' ils avaient eu du pain,

If they had gone there thou wouldst have gone there also, S' ils étaient allés là tu y serais allé aussi,

If we had been cold we should have warmed our feet, Si nous avions eu froid nous nous serions chauffé les pieds,

To conclude. He has concluded, *Conclure*, (*de* bef. inf.) Il a conclu.

Je conclus, tu conclus, il conclut, nous concluons, vous concluez, ils concluent,
I conclude, thou concludest, he concludes, we conclude, you conclude, they conclude.

To wear out. Worn,	*User. Usé,*
He wears out many shoes,	Il use beaucoup de souliers,
Thus. The thing is thus,	*Ainsi.* La chose est ainsi,
To support. The *elbow,*	*Appuyer.* Le *coude,*
He supports himself on his elbow,	Il s' appuie sur le coude,
Skill. He has skill,	L' *adresse,* (f.) le *savoir-faire.* Il a du savoir-faire,
A *sum.* A large sum,	Une *somme.* Une grande somme,
To govern. A *queen,*	*Gouverner.* Une *reine,*
A queen governs this people,	Une reine gouverne ce peuple,
A *sign. To make a sign, beckon,*	Un *signe. Faire signe,* (*de* bef. inf.)
He beckons to him to come,	Il lui fait signe de venir,
The *post-office. To fail, to lack,*	La *poste. Manquer,* (*de* bef. inf. and n.)
Do not fail to come,	Ne manquez pas de venir,
He lacks money,	Il manque d' argent.

Remark 1. Referring to duty, *manquer* takes *à* before the infinitive and noun.

He fails to fulfill his duty,	Il manque à remplir son devoir,
He has failed in his promise,	Il a manqué à sa promesse,
Carry these letters to the post-office,	Portez ces lettres à la poste,
A *present.* A *cage,*	Un *présent.* Une *cage,*
A present of birds in a cage,	Un présent d' oiseaux dans une cage,
Honorable. An honorable *action,*	*Honorable.* Une action honorable.

Remark 2. *Avoir* with *à* before the infinitive denotes obligation or disposition.

What have you to do?	Qu' avez-vous à faire?
I have to make a *visit,*	J' ai à faire une *visite,*
I have to thank you,	J' ai à vous remercier,
To meet, face,	*Faire face,* (*à* before noun,)
He meets his *engagements,*	Il fait face à ses *engagements,*
His house faces mine,	Sa maison fait face à la mienne.

When will the orator conclude his discourse? He has concluded it at half-past eleven. Has congress concluded the peace? It has not concluded it yet. Do they use much wood in this house? No, sir; they have good stoves, and they do not use much wood. Do not these children wear out many hats? Yes, sir; and they wear out many coats and shoes also. Are not these boots worn? No, sir; they are new. Are your books new or worn? They are very much worn. Do you always leave your books thus? No, sir; I almost always put them in order after having finished my lessons. Does

your cousin always eat thus? He eats with his friends in entire (*toute*) liberty, his elbows on the table. Does the lame man support himself on a stick? No, sir; he supports himself on me. Does he not sometimes support himself on the table? Yes, sir; and he supports himself sometimes on a chair. Why do you support your elbows on the table? Because I have a bad headache. Has your friend lost a large sum of money? He has lost a thousand dollars. Who governs England at present? Queen Victoria governs the English and many other people. Is she a wise queen? She does not lack mind, and she governs England well.

Did you not make a sign to me with (*de*) your head? Did you beckon me to come? Does not that man (make a sign with his eyes) wink to his servant to come? Will you carry these letters to the post-office? In what street is it? Does the postmaster (*maître de poste*) live in the same street? You eat very little; do you lack appetite? Did you receive the present which I sent you? Has not my friend done many generous actions? You make a very short visit; are you in a hurry (hurried?) What have you to do? Have you letters to write? Have you nothing to do? If I had known that sooner, should I not have gained a great sum? If I had been there, wouldst thou not have supported thyself upon my arm? If Victoria had been the queen of Cuba, would she have governed it well? If we had seen you we should have beckoned you to come; would you have come if you had seen us? If they had lost that sum, would they not have lacked everything? If you had bought those beautiful birds which we saw in the cage, would you have sent them to me as a (*en*) present? Do you send that picture to the dentist? Do not send it to him; send it to me. (*Less.* 54, *Rule* III.) Have you refreshed yourself? Have they accused that man of theft falsely?

Do you cross over that river in a boat or by swimming? I cross over it by swimming. How many persons does this room contain? It contains more than two thousand. That man cries out from pain; what is the matter with him? The dentist is pulling a tooth for him. Is the congress of this republic composed (*se compose*) of more than one chamber? Yes, sir; it is composed of a senate and house of representatives. Has that man friends? No, sir; never doing his duty,

he has no friends. A gentleman sent one day his servant with a present of nine ducks in a cage, on which was the following address: (*adresse suivante:*) "To the honorable judge Tour, with IX ducks." The servant, who was more cunning (*rusé*) than honest, stole away (*déroba*) three ducks, and drew (*traca*) the letter *s* before the roman numeral (*chiffre*) IX. The address was then (*donc*) thus: "To the honorable judge Tour, with SIX ducks."

88. QUATRE-VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

REMARK 1. We have seen that ALL PASSIVE VERBS, ALL REFLECTIVE VERBS, and a FEW NEUTER VERBS, always take ETRE for their auxiliary. The following neuter verbs of this kind have already been given.

CLASS I.

Aller,	Naître,	Venir, and the compounds, Revenir.	Devenir,	Parvenir,
Arriver,	Mourir;		Disconvenir,	Retourner,

To these add the following not before given:

Avenir, to happen,	*Redevenir, to become again,*
Décéder, to die,	*Retomber, to fall again,*
Intervenir, to intervene,	*Survenir, to befall, happen unexpectedly,*
Provenir, to proceed from,	*Éclore, to open. Choir, to fall,* (little used,)
Do you know what has happened?	Savez-vous ce qui *est avenu?*
He died at a great age,	Il *est décédé* à un grand âge,
The *royal authority* has interposed,	L' *autorité royale est intervenue*,
He has become *powerful* again,	Il *est redevenu puissant*,
His disease proceeded from his imprudence.	Sa maladie *est provenue* de son imprudence,
He has relapsed into *vice*,	Il *est retombé* dans *le vice*,
A storm came unexpectedly,	Un orage *est survenu*,
The flowers have opened,	Les fleurs *sont écloses.*

REMARK 2. All transitive verbs take *avoir* for their auxiliary. When any verb therefore which generally takes *être* is used transitively, it takes *avoir*, as:

He has turned over the *hay*,	Il *a retourné* le *foin.*

Remark 3. There is a class of neuter verbs also which sometimes take *avoir* and sometimes *être* for their auxiliary. The following already given are of this class.

Class II.

Convenir,	Demeurer,	Passer,	Rester,
Changer,	Monter,	Partir,	Sortir and Tomber.

And the following not before given :

Apparaître, to appear,	*Rentrer, to re-enter,*
Disparaître, to disappear,	*Redescendre, to descend again,*
Descendre, to descend,	*Échapper, to escape,*
Entrer, to enter,	*Sonner,* to sound, to ring.*

In the distinction between the meanings of *avoir* and *être* in this class, usage has made some difference in different verbs, but the following is the general

---

* The other verbs of this class are the following :

Aborder, to land.

We landed yesterday on the island,	*Nous avons abordé hier dans l' île,*
We have been landed these two days,	*Nous sommes abordés depuis deux jours.*

Accourir, to run to.

I ran to him to wish him joy,	*J' ai accouru pour le féliciter,*
I have run hither to the noise,	*Je suis accouru au bruit.*

Accroître, to enlarge.

His property enlarged every day,	*Son bien a accru tous les jours,*
That land has enlarged by alluvium,	*Cette terre est accrue par alluvion.*

Augmenter to increase.

The cold increased suddenly,	*Le froid a augmenté tout-à-coup,*
His fortune has increased,	*Sa fortune est augmentée.*

Baisser, to decrease, fall.

Yesterday the river fell a foot,	*Hier la rivière a baissé d' un pied,*
The river has now fallen,	*La rivière est baissée à présent.*

Cesser, to cease.

The fever ceased this morning,	*La fièvre a cessé ce matin,*
The fever has ceased,	*La fièvre est cessée.*

Croître, to grow, rise.

The river rose two inches this morning,	*La rivière a crû de deux pouces ce matin,*
The river has risen,	*La rivière est crûe.*

Déborder, to overflow.

The river overflowed last year, and it has overflowed now,	*La rivière a débordé l' année passée, et elle est débordée à présent.*

Déchoir, to decline.

He declined from day to day,	*Il a déchu de jour en jour,*
He has declined much in his credit,	*Il est bien déchu de son crédit.*

Dégénérer, to degenerate.

This race has degenerated little by little,	*Cette race a dégénéré peu à peu,*
This race has become degenerate,	*Cette race est dégénérée.*

Dépérir, to decay.

The army diminished daily,	*L' armée a dépéri journellement,*
The army has diminished,	*L' armée est dépérie.*

RULE. If the *action* merely denoted by the verb be meant, let *avoir* be used; but if the *state* resulting from the action be meant, let *être* be used. Thus:

He lived three years in Madrid, (action,)	Il *a demeuré* trois ans à Madrid,
My horse has stopped (is still) on the way, (state,)	Mon cheval *est demeuré* en chemin,
He has changed suddenly, (action,)	Il *a changé* tout-à-coup,
He has (is) much changed, (state,)	Il *est* bien *changé*,
The gun went off all at once, (action,)	Le fusil *a parti* tout-à-coup,
He has (is) gone away from Paris, (state,)	Il *est parti* de Paris.

REMARK 4. The learner will observe that when no circumstance is mentioned or implied with these verbs, showing that *action* is meant, they are understood as denoting *state*.

He has ascended twice to his room, (action,)	Il *a monté* deux fois à sa chambre,
He has gone up into his room, (state,)	Il *est monté* dans sa chambre,
He remained at Lyons two weeks, (action,)	Il *a resté* deux semaines à Lyon,
He has remained at Lyons, (state,)	Il *est resté* à Lyon,
He went over to Europe twice,	Il *a passé* en Europe deux fois,
He has gone over to Europe,	Il *est passé* en Europe,
He went out twice this morning,	Il *a sorti* deux fois ce matin,
He has gone out this evening,	Il *est sorti* ce soir.

Echoir, to fall out, fall due.

My note fell due yesterday,	*Mon billet a échu hier*,
My note has become due,	*Mon billet est échu.*

Embellir, to grow handsome.

She grew handsome every day,	*Elle a embelli tous les jours*,
She has grown handsome,	*Elle est embellie.*

Empirer, to grow worse.

The disease grew worse this morning,	*La maladie a empiré ce matin*,
The disease has become worse.	*La maladie est empirée.*

Expirer, to expire.

My lease expired yesterday,	*Mon bail a expiré hier*,
My lease has expired,	*Mon bail est expiré.*

Grandir, to grow large.

He grew much last year,	*Il a bien grandi l' année passée*,
He has grown much,	*Il est bien grandi.*

Résulter, to result.

What resulted therefrom,	*Qu' a-t-il résulté de là*,
What has become the result,	*Qu' en est-il résulté.*

Add also *Accoucher*, to be confined; *Déménager*, to remove; *Périr*, to perish; *Remonter*, to go up again; *Repartir*, to set out again; *Resortir*, to go out again; and *Vieillir*, to grow old. Some others perhaps, under some circumstances, may admit *être* for the auxiliary.

REMARK 4. *Sortir* more frequently takes *être* for action as well as state; *Tomber* also almost always takes *être*, but *avoir* may sometimes be used, as in the following:

Vulcan fell from heaven during a *whole* day,	Vulcain *a tombé* du ciel pendant un jour *entier*,
Wishing to run he fell,	Voulant courir il *est tombé*.

We have seen (*Less.* 75, *Rem.* 1) that convenir, *to suit*, takes *être*; convenir, to agree takes *avoir*.

God appeared to Moses,	Dieu *a apparu* à *Moïse*,
A *sail* has appeared,	Une *voile est apparue*,
My gloves disappeared suddenly,	Mes gants *ont disparu* tout-à-coup
He has disappeared,	Il *est disparu*,
He descended very fast,	Il *a descendu* très-vite,
He has descended from his room,	Il *est descendu* de sa chambre,
He ascended to his room, but he has come down again,	Il *a monté* à sa chambre, mais il *est redescendu*,
The *stag* escaped quickly from the dogs,	Le *cerf a vivement échappé* aux chiens,
The stag has escaped,	Le cerf *est échappé*,
The *clock* has struck,	L' *horloge a sonné*,
It has struck twelve,	Midi *est sonné*,
It has struck eight,	Huit heures *sont sonnées*,
What *authority*. A *vice*, *fault*,	Quelle *autorité*. Un *vice*,
A *sail*. A *clock*. The *hay*,	Une *voile*. Une *horloge*. Le *foin*,
The *farmer*. The farmer makes hay,	Le *fermier*. Le fermier fait du foin,
Powerful. *Entire*. *Absent*,	*Puissant*. *Entier*. *Absent*,
To discourse,	*Discourir*,
He discourses of that affair,	Il discourt de cette affaire,
To be skilled in, *to be a judge of*,	*Se connaître en*, or *à*,
Are you a judge of pictures?	Vous connaissez-vous en or aux tableaux?
I am a judge of them,	Je m' y connais,
The *merit*. He has merit,	Le *mérite*. Il a du mérite,
To grant. I grant you that,	*Accorder*. Je vous accorde cela.

Has your father entered into his room? He entered into his room, but he has gone out again (*resorti.*) Did the stag enter into those woods? He entered into them and he is there still. Did you enter the house of the baker yesterday? I entered there, but he was not at home. Has Congress authority over the laws? Congress has authority to make laws on many things (*affaires.*) Are not the United States powerful? Yes, sir; and several of the kingdoms of Europe are powerful. Is your horse good? Yes, sir; he has no faults. Is

that young man without vices? No, sir; he conceals his vices, but he has many of them. What is the farmer doing? He is making hay and cider. Have you seen the farmer here this morning? Yes, sir; here he is; he appeared to me when I believed him very far away (*bien loin.*) Have great men appeared frequently in the world? No, sir; they have appeared at long intervals (*intervalles.*) Has the thief disappeared? Yes, sir; he disappeared suddenly, and his companion has disappeared also. Have your cousins come down (descended) from their chamber? They came down, but they have gone up again (*remontés.*) Have they not come down again? No, sir; they went up and have remained in their chamber. Your brother came down from his room twice before breakfast; has he not come down again? He came down again, but he has re-ascended.

The stag escaped from the dogs yesterday; has he escaped from them also to-day? Did the clock strike? Has it struck twelve? Has it struck one? A sail appeared yesterday far off, (*de loin,*) and to-day it has appeared in the same place; do you see it? I remained at your house yesterday an entire hour; where were you? Have you read the whole book? How many sail do you perceive at sea? You have hunted to-day; did you kill any stags? Did you hear the clock strike? Has any one wound up the clock? Has it struck two? Are you discoursing on the merit of the master? Have I not granted to that man all that he asks? On what are you discoursing? Have I not granted you all that I promised? As soon as you shall have breakfasted will you come to my house? In wiping the apple did you not soil your handkerchief? In singing that song did not your cousin charm every body? Have the thieves succeeded in (*à*) stealing the farmer's treasures? Have they stolen his fruit? That man owes you; do you credit him more? Do your trees make much shade? Do you travel toward the north, or toward the south? Will you have the goodness to lend me these books? That horse is very tired; has he the strength to go further? Has your friend the generosity to give this poor man some money? Will you have the goodness to put this letter in the post-office?

I am delighted to see you, sir; how do they do at your house? Every body is well; I thank you very much. And at your house?

My sister is slightly indisposed. I am very sorry for it, and I hope that it will be nothing. I have invited Mr. B. to dinner; will you dine with us also? Yes, sir; you are very good; I shall not fail. If you find that book interesting carry it home. Yes, sir; I thank you very much; I find it very interesting. Some children, one of them blind of one eye, were discoursing on the merit of their masters. "How many hours does he grant you for sleeping," said one child who appeared to like the labor done (*fait.*) "Twelve hours," answered the child interrogated (*interrogé.*) "Twelve hours!" exclaimed the one-eyed one, "my master grants me only six hours!" "That is just," replied the former child, "for you have only one eye to shut, and my friend has two." One day a person of the court asked Lord Chesterfield what he thought of Lady Coventry, whose complexion (*teint*) was evidently of her own manufacture (*évidemment de sa propre manufacture.*) "Really," (*réellement,*) replied his lordship, (*sa seigneurie,*) "I am not a judge of painting" (*peinture.*)

89. QUATRE-VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

THE IMMEDIATE PLUPERFECT, OR PAST ANTERIOR.

RULE. The PAST ANTERIOR is formed by annexing the *past participle* to the *past definite of the auxiliary.* Thus:

J' eus dîné,	*Il eut dîné,*	*Vous eûtes dîné,*
I had dined,	He had dined,	You had dined,
Tu eus dîné,	*Nous eûmes dîné,*	*Ils eurent dîné,*
Thou hadst dined,	We had dined,	They had dined.
Je fus venu,	*Il fut venu,*	*Vous fûtes venus,*
I had come,	He had come,	You had come,
Tu fus venu,	*Nous fûmes venus,*	*Ils furent venus,*
Thou hadst come,	We had come,	They had come.

REMARK 1. This tense denotes that an action had been done immediately before some other action or time. It is generally preceded by an adverb or conjunction expressing immediate time, and attended by another verb in the past definite; as, *aussitôt que j' eus dîné je sortis;* or, *Je sortis aussitôt que j' eus dîné.* The adverbs and conjunctions limiting this tense are these:

As soon as. { *Aussitôt que, sitôt, Dès que,* — When. *Lorsque, quand,* — After. *Après que,*
Hardly. *À peine,* — No sooner. *Pas plus tôt.*

As this tense is used with the past definite, like that, it of course belongs to a time which excludes the present, and is separated from it by at least one night.

Yesterday, as soon as I had breakfasted, I went to his house,	Hier, aussitôt que *j' eus déjeuné*, j' allaï chez lui,
Last Saturday, as soon as he had finished his work, he departed,	Samedi passé, dès qu' il *eut fini* son ouvrage, il partit,
Yesterday evening, as soon as we had received the news, we came,	Hier soir, sitôt que nous *eûmes reçu* la nouvelle, nous vînmes,
Hardly had you dined, the other day, when you departed,	À peine *eûtes-vous* diné l' autre jour, que vous partîtes,
Yesterday, as soon as they had spoken, I understood all,	Hier, aussitôt qu' ils *eurent parlé*, je compris tout,
Yesterday, when I had dressed myself, I went out,	Hier, quand je me *fus habillé*, je sortis,
He wiped his hands when he had washed them,	Il s' essuya les mains lorsqu' il se les *fut lavées*,
Yesterday, after we had warmed ourselves, it struck three,	Hier, après que nous nous *fûmes chauffés* trois heures sonnèrent,
Yesterday you read as soon as you had dressed,	Hier vous lûtes dès que vous vous *fûtes habillés*,
Monday, they had no sooner shaved, than they went out,	Lundi, ils ne se *furent* pas plus tôt *rasés*, qu' ils sortirent.

Remark 2. When something continuous is spoken of, instead of this tense with the past definite, the pluperfect with the imperfect is used.

We used to read as soon as we had supped,	Nous lisions dès que nous *avions soupé*,
As soon as it had struck seven we used to breakfast.	Aussitôt que sept heures *étaient sonnées* *nous déjeunions.**

Remark 3. This tense may also be used without any other verb, when accompanied by some phrase denoting immediate time.

Yesterday, we had immediately finished,	Hier, nous *eûmes* tout de suite *fini*,
Yesterday, we had dined precisely at twelve,	Hier, nous *eûmes dîné* à midi,

* It is, as we have seen, the nature of the imperfect tense to be used with such a meaning, and the pluperfect accompanies it as its corresponding tense.

Do you desire that it *should rain?*	Désirez-vous qu' il *pleuve?* (subjunctive of *pleuvoir*,)
He is afraid that it may rain,	Il a peur qu' il ne pleuve,
Though it *be necessary* to work,	Quoiqu' il *faille* (subjunctive of *falloir*) travailler,
In case it be necessary to suffer,	Au cas qu' il faille souffrir,
To dye. He dyes his coat black,	*Teindre.* Il teint son habit en noir,
Does he get it dyed blue or green?	Le fait-il teindre en bleu ou en vert?
He gets it dyed brown,	Il le fait teindre en brun,
What color do you dye yours?	Comment teignez-vous le vôtre?
You had better. He had better,	*Vous ferez bien*, or mieux. *Il fera bien*, (*de* before infinitive.)
He had better come here,	Il fera bien de venir ici,
His *family. To enjoy*,	Sa *famille. Jouir*, (*de* before a noun,)
The family enjoys good health,	La famille jouit d' une bonne santé,
Since. Since you have been here,	*Depuis que.* Depuis que vous êtes ici,
Since he has lived in the country,	Depuis qu' il demeure à la campagne,
How far? How far has he gone?	*Jusqu' où?* Jusqu' où est-il allé?
He has gone as far as England,	Il est allé jusqu' en Angleterre,
Early in the morning,	*De bon matin, de grand matin*,
He is sick; *is he not?*	Il est malade; *n' est-ce pas?*

N' est-ce pas, or *n' est-ce pas vrai*; *Is it not*, or *is it not true*, annexed to an affirmation or a negation, makes it interrogative.

You will go; will you not?	Vous irez; n' est-ce pas?
They have come; have they not?	Ils sont venus; n' est-ce pas?

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF VALOIR.

Je vaille, tu vailles, il vaille, nous valions, vous valiez, ils vaillent.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF MOURIR.

Je meure, tu meures, il meure, nous mourions, vous mouriez, ils meurent.

Dost thou fear that I may die?	As-tu peur que *je* ne *meure?*
I fear that thou mayest die,	Je crains que *tu* ne *meures*,
Though it be worth much,	Quoiqu' *il vaille* beaucoup,
Though they be worth a hundred dollars,	Bien qu' *ils vaillent* cent dollars,
In case you be worth more than they,	En cas que *vous valiez* mieux qu' eux,
Provided that we should die,	Pourvu que *nous mourions*,
To gnaw. Worms eat wood,	*Ronger.* Les *vers* rongent le bois,
To draw information from, (artfully,)	*Tirer les vers du nez à*,
I have sounded that man,	J' ai tiré les vers du nez à cet homme.

What did you do the other day when you had received my letter?

As soon as I had received your letter I wrote one to you. As soon as the countrywoman had bought those stockings, did she not dye (*Less.* 67, *Rem.*) them black? No, sir; she dyed them brown. When the farmers had sold their grain last year, what did they do with their money? They bought some horses and some cows. Where did you go yesterday? As soon as we had breakfasted, we went a hunting, and killed several squirrels and a fox. Do you wish that it would rain? I wish that it would rain, provided it be not necessary to go out. What color do you dye that cloth? We dye this green, and that blue. Had not those scholars better study French? Yes, sir; they had better study French and Spanish. Are you acquainted with the general's family? No, sir; I know no one of his family. Do you enjoy good health? Yes, sir; we have enjoyed excellent health since we have dwelt in the country. Why can not your uncle enjoy his property? He can not enjoy it because he is always sick, and one can not enjoy any thing without health. How far will you go this summer? I shall go as far as Boston. Do you go out early in the morning? No, sir; unless it be necessary to go to the market.

Why do you go out so early (*de si grand*) in the morning? Do you always go out so early in the morning? That horse is not worth more than a hundred dollars; do you think that he is worth a hundred and fifty? We are worth more than our cousins; do you think that we are worth less than they? I am worth more than my neighbor; do you not believe that I am worth more than he? (*Less.* 73, *Rule* IV.) Do you believe that I am worth less than he? Do you believe that he is worth more than I? You are afraid that your friends may die. Are they not afraid that you may die? After you had gone out yesterday early in the morning, whom did you meet? As soon as your father had shaved himself, did he not breakfast? When we had arrived in the city, did we not go to your house? As soon as I had gone out yesterday morning I saw you; where were you going? After your brothers had arrived in London, where did they go? Did you not always dine in the country as soon as it had struck two? Does your servant pretend to be sick? Can the farmer afford to buy that fine house? Have we been heard? (*Less.* 84, *Rem.* 4.) Have we been seen? Were not thieves heard in the house

last night? What dishes did you have at dinner? Were not all the dishes excellent? Your mother was slightly indisposed yesterday; how does she do to-day? When you had carried that book home yesterday, did you read it? Did you invite the captain to dine with you yesterday as soon as you had met him? He dined with you; did he not?

What is the maid spreading? She is spreading the linen in order to dry it. Does not sound (*le son*) diffuse itself faster than the wind? Yes, sir; and light diffuses itself much faster than sound. What has destroyed that man's fortune? His vices have destroyed his fortune and his health. A child entered into the shop (*la boutique*) of a baker and asked for a loaf (*pain*) of six cents. Perceiving that the loaf which was given him (*Less.* 84, *Rem.* 4) was not sufficiently large, he said to the baker; "This six cent loaf is very small." "No matter," (*n' importe,*) answered the baker, "you will have less trouble to (*à*) carry it." "That is true," said then the child; "but as I always return politeness for politeness, there are four cents; I shall have less to carry and you less to count."

PAST ANTERIOR INDEFINITE.

There is a tense also, in French, which has the same relation to the past anterior which the past indefinite has to the past definite. This tense is used when the accompanying words are such as require the past anterior, but the time such as requires the past indefinite, (*i. e.*, including the present,) and is accompanied by a verb in the past indefinite.

It is formed by annexing the past participle to the past indefinite of the auxiliary; as:

J' ai eu dîné,	*tu as eu dîné,*	*il a eu dîné,*	*nous avons eu dîné,* etc.
I had dined,	thou hadst dined,	he had dined,	we had dined, etc.

As soon as I had breakfasted this morning, I came here, — Aussitôt que *j' ai eu déjeuné* ce matin, je suis venu ici,

When I had written my letter this evening, I sent it to the post-office, — Quand *j' ai eu écrit* ma lettre ce soir, je l' ai envoyée à la poste.

This tense may be called the PAST ANTERIOR INDEFINITE. It is but little used, and in the above phrases a different construction would be preferred; as, *Après avoir déjeuné ce matin,* etc., *après avoir écrit ma lettre,* etc.

90. QUATRE-VINGT-DIXIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT FORMED.

The SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT of all French verbs, except those previously given, are formed by the following general

RULE. Drop EZ final of the second person plural indicative present, and annex the terminating letters

E,	ES,	E,	IONS,	IEZ,	ENT.

IND. PRES.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.			
ParlEZ,	Je parlE,	tu parlES.	il parlE,	nous parliONS,	vous parliEZ,	ils parlENT,
SortEZ,	Je sortE,	tu sortES,	il sortE,	nous sortIONS,	vous sortIEZ,	ils sortENT,
VoyEZ,	Je voiE,*	tu voiES,	il voiE,	nous voyIONS,	vous voyIEZ,	ils voiENT,
RendEZ,	Je rendE,	tu rendES,	il rendE,	nous rendIONS,	vous rendIEZ,	ils rendENT

The irregular subjunctives (all of which have been previously given) are these:

INFINITIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	INFINITIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	INFINITIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.
Aller,	*Aille*,	Faire,	*Fasse*,	Recevoir,‡	*Reçoive*,
Avoir,	*Aie*,	Falloir,	*Faille*,	Savoir,	*Sache*,
Boire,	*Boive*,	Mourir,	*Meure*,	Valoir,†	*Vaille*,
Dire,†	*Dise*,	Pleuvoir,	*Pleuve*,	Venir,	*Vienne*,
Devoir,	*Doive*	Pouvoir,	*Puisse*,	Tenir,	*Tienne*,
Être,	*Sois*,	Prendre,	*Prenne*,	Vouloir,	*Veuille*.

He wishes us to speak,	Il veut que *nous parlions*,
He consents to your going out,	Il consent que *vous sortiez*,
He desires me to see his friend,	Il désire que *je voie* son ami,
I wish him to give back my pencil	Je veux qu' *il rende* mon crayon,
It is necessary that thou believe what he says,	Il faut que *tu croies* ce qu' il dit,
To pay. A *carriage*,	*Payer.* Une *voiture.*

REMARK 1. *Payer*, like *Demander*, takes the thing for the direct, and the person for the indirect object; when the person only is mentioned with *payer*, it is the direct object.

Do you pay that man for the carriage?	Payez-vous la voiture à cet homme?
I pay him for it,	Je la lui paie,
I ask him for it,	Je la lui demande,
Have you paid the dentist?	Est-ce que vous avez payé le dentiste?
I have paid him,	Je l' ai payé,
By heart. He learns by heart,	*Par cœur.* Il apprend par cœur,
Properly. He reads properly,	*Comme il faut.* Il lit comme il faut,
He is *a proper (well-bred) man*,	C' est *un homme comme il faut*,
He is losing his mind, (*senses*,)	Il perd l' esprit,
The *front yard*. The *back yard*,	La *cour de devant*. La *cour de derrière*,
An *apple-tree*. A *pear-tree*. A *plum-tree*,	Un *pommier*. Un *poirier*. Un *prunier*,

* Y in the penult of verbs becomes *i* before *e* mute, (*Less.* 20, *Rem.* 1.)

† *Maudire*, compound of *Dire*, and *Prévaloir*, compound of *valoir*, make *Maudisse*, and *Prévale*, both regular.

‡ All verbs in *evoir* follow the model of *Recevoir*.

There are apple-trees, pear-trees, and plum-trees in the yard,	Il y a des pommiers, des poiriers, et des pruniers dans la cour,
The *heat*. An *insect*,	La *chaleur*. Un *insecte*,
The heat does not hurt insects,	La chaleur ne fait pas mal aux insectes,
The *pupil*. I am his pupil,	L' *élève*, (mas. or fem.) Je suis son élève,
The *trunk*, also *mail*. A *pocket*,	La *malle*. Une *poche*,
A pocket handkerchief,	Un mouchoir de poche,
A *card*. The *game*. The game of cards,	Une *carte*. Le *jeu*. Le jeu de cartes,
He likes (the game of) playing cards,	Il aime le jeu de cartes.

Remark 2. *Jouer* takes *de* before the instrument, and *à* before the game played.

He plays *cards*. He plays *ball*,	Il joue aux cartes. Il joue à la *balle*,
He plays the *violin*. He plays the *flute*,	Il joue du *violon*. Il joue de la *flûte*,
Do you put the money in your pocket?	Est-ce que vous mettez l' argent dans votre poche?
I put it in my trunk,	Je le mets dans ma malle,
The mail has arrived,	La malle est arrivée,
The *fashion*. In the new fashion,	La *mode*. À la nouvelle mode,
In the Paris fashion,	À la mode de Paris,
The English fashion,	La mode anglaise,
And then. He reads, and then he sleeps,	*Puis*. Il lit, puis il dort.

Remark 3. The present of the subjunctive, in general, is not to be used, unless the tense of the governing clauses be present or future, and then it must be employed to denote a time, either present or future (not past) to the governing clause.

I fear that he goes there, I fear that he will go there,	J' ai peur qu' il n' *aille* là,
I shall fear his going there, I shall fear that he will go there,	J' aurai peur qu' il n' *aille* là.

The governing verbs here are either present or future, and the time to be denoted by the governed is either present or future to them; the present subjunctive is therefore used. So in the following:

He wishes me to finish,	Il veut que je *finisse*,
He will wish thee to finish,	Il voudra que tu *finisses*,
It is time that we recite,	Il est temps que nous *récitions*,
It will be time that you recite,	Il sera temps que vous *récitiez*,
I wish that they would study,	Je veux qu' ils *étudient*.

Remark 4. The present subjunctive is, in one case, used after the past indefinite. It is, when that tense is followed by one of the conjunctions, *afin que*, *pour que*, *de crainte que*, *de peur que*, *quoique*, *bien que*.

He has given me money in order that I may have books,	Il m' a donné de l' argent afin que j' *aie* des livres,

I have sent for the doctor for fear you might die,	J'ai envoyé chercher le docteur de peur que vous ne *mouriez*,
I have come that we may talk,	Je suis venu pour que nous *parlions*.

Have you paid the farmer for the carriage? I have paid him for it. When did you pay him? I paid him five hundred dollars yesterday. Will it be necessary for us to learn our exercises by heart? Yes, sir; and the master desires that we should learn all the words of our lesson by heart also. It is important that you write your exercise properly; can you not write it well? I think that I write it well; does the master wish me to write it better than that? He wishes us to write all our exercises without a fault. My cousin does not read properly; do you think that he reads as well as I? No; I think that you read much better than he. Are there many trees in your yard? There are pear-trees and plum-trees in my front yard, and there are apple-trees in my back yard; they make a thick and cool shade. Have you many flowers? I have not many; for the heat has hurt them, and the insects have destroyed many. Have not the insects destroyed your trees? They have destroyed my plum-trees, but not my apple-trees and my pear-trees. That young man looks like a well-bred man; are you acquainted with him? Yes, sir; he is a pupil of our master. Did the mail arrive yesterday at two o'clock? Yes, sir; as soon as it had struck two the mail arrived. Has your father given you money in order that you may buy books? (*Rem.* 4.) He has given me some in order that I may go to the theatre.

Do you wish us to pay the merchant for the carriage? Do you suffer much during the heat of summer? Is that young man a pupil of our master? Did you put that book into your pocket or into your trunk? Does your cousin like playing cards? Does the master wish us to play ball? Do you wish us to buy you a coat in the new fashion? Do you wish us to find you one in the French fashion or in the English fashion? As soon as you have dressed, you take your coffee, and then you go out; do you not? As soon as he has breakfasted, he reads a little, and then he studies; does he not? I wish you to play ball; do you wish me to play cards? Do they wish us to play the violin or the flute? That man feigns a disease; do you not believe that he feigns it? If any one knocks it is important that

you hear him; does any one knock? Did not the Romans overthrow the power of many warlike people? Did they not overthrow the power of Hannibal? Was not that hero the greatest general of his century? Did he carry his arms into Italy? Did he gain many battles in Italy? Did they take away the crown from the last king of France? Do we always see several objects at once? Did not the wind overthrow those trees? Does that child wish for cream or honey on his rice? Can the workman sustain that heavy burden longer? Is it not very heavy?

A good friend is a great treasure; is he not? Yes, sir; but wisdom and virtue are greater treasures. Did you put back my book? Yes, sir; I put it back in the corner of the drawer. Where did the thief conceal what he had stolen? He concealed it at the end of the garden. Do you wish us to play on the piano? No, miss; I prefer that you sing. Are you acquainted with that man? Yes, sir; he looks like a well-bred man, but he lacks good faith. Is not that orator very eloquent? Yes, sir; he has made several discourses full of eloquence. Did that lady reply to your compliment? She replied to it very well. That man tells the truth; do you think that he lies? I do not think that he lies. If you were in a hurry, (hurried,) should you try to do several things at once? No, sir; I should try to do only one thing at a time (at once.) In the beginning (*au commencement*) of the American revolution, after the king of Great Britain (*Grande-Bretagne*) had hurled (*lancé*) the most terrible (*terrible*) of his proclamations (*proclamations*) against the revolted (*révoltés*) Americans, a member of congress said to an American young lady: "Well, Miss, are you not afraid of the roarings (*rugissements*) of the English lion" (*lion?*) "Not at all, sir," answered she, "for I have read in natural history that the king of animals roars (*rugit*) the most (then) when he is the most affrighted (*effrayé.*)

91. QUATRE-VINGT-ONZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE PERFECT.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE PERFECT is formed by annexing the *past participle* to the *subjunctive present* of the auxiliary. Thus:

J' aie eu,	*Il ait eu,*	*Vous ayez eu,*
Tu aies eu,	*Nous ayons eu,*	*Ils aient eu,*
J' aie été,	*Il ait été,*	*Vous ayez été,*
Tu aies été,	*Nous ayons été,*	*Ils aient été,*
Je sois allé,	*Il soit allé,*	*Vous soyez allés,*
Tu sois allé,	*Nous soyons allés,*	*Ils soient allés.*

Remark 1. This tense is to be used, when the tense of the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time which is past to it.

He fears that I have gone,	Il a peur que je ne m' en sois allé,
He will fear that thou hast gone,	Il aura peur que tu ne t' en sois allé.

Here the governing clause is present or future, and the time to be denoted is past to it; the perfect subjunctive is therefore used.

I doubt that he has come,	Je doute qu' il *soit venu*,
Do you approve of our having used your cloak?	Est-ce que vous trouvez bon que nous *ayons usé* de votre manteau?
I approve of your having used it,	Je trouve bon que vous en *ayez usé*,
I like their having paid for the carriage,	J' aime qu' ils *aient payé* le carrosse.

Remark 2. Usage also permits the perfect subjunctive to be employed after the past indefinite, though it is more naturally followed by a different tense.

It has been necessary for him to come,	Il a fallu qu' il *soit venu*,
Has one ever seen a man who has shown more courage?	A-t-on jamais vu un homme qui *ait montré* plus de courage?
He has wished me to be here,	Il a voulu que j' *aie été* ici,
I have ordered them to stay here,	J' ai ordonné qu' ils *soient restés* ici,
To deceive. To amuse one's self,	*Tromper. S' amuser*, (*à* bef. inf. and n.).
At what do you amuse yourself?	À quoi vous amusez-vous?
I amuse myself in reading,	Je m' amuse à lire,
He has cheated me out of that,	Il m' a trompé de cela,
To be mistaken. He is mistaken,	*Se tromper.* Il se trompe,
To go away. He is going away,	*S' en aller.* Il s' en va,
Are you not going away?	Est-ce que vous ne vous en allez pas?
We are not going away,	Nous ne nous en allons pas,
I go away. They go away,	Je m' en vais. Ils s' en vont,
The *powder.* A pound of powder,	La *poudre.* Une livre de poudre,
To breathe. He breathes easily,	*Respirer.* Il respire facilement,
To go for diversion. A *coach,*	*Se promener.* Un *carrosse,*
I take a walk every morning,	Je me promène tous les matins,
Do you take a ride in a coach?	Est-ce que vous vous promenez en carrosse?
We take a ride on horseback,	Nous nous promenons à cheval,
To lie down. To go to bed,	*Se coucher. Aller se coucher,*

To rise. I go to bed late,	*Se lever.* Je me couche tard,
I rise early,	Je me lève de bonne heure,
To flatter. To flatter one's self,	*Flatter. Se flatter,* (*de* bef. inf. and n.)
I flatter myself that I know French,	Je me flatte de savoir le français,
To respect. I respect his character,	*Respecter.* Je respecte son caractere,
To shine. The sun shines,	*Luire.* Le soleil luit,
The *third.* The third of nine is three,	Le *tiers.* Le tiers de neuf est trois,
To lock. He locks his door,	*Fermer à clef.* Il ferme sa porte à clef,
It snows. It hails. It thunders,	*Il neige. Il grêle. Il tonne,*
To snow. To hail. To thunder,	*Neiger. Grêler. Tonner,*
Industrious. Terrible,	*Industrieux. Terrible.*

REMARK 2. *De* and *par* have the same distinction with reflective as with passive verbs. (*Less.* 60, *Rem.*) *De* refers to *sentiments*, *par* to the *intellectual* and *physical.*

He makes himself loved by every body,	Il se fait aimer de tout le monde,
He gets beaten by every body,	Il se fait battre par tout le monde.

Is that man honest? No, sir; he has just cheated me out of a hundred dollars. Are you not sometimes mistaken? Yes, sir; every man is liable (*sujet*) to (*à*) be mistaken. With (*à*) what do you amuse yourself? I occupy (*occupe*) myself in studying, and my cousin amuses himself in playing. Does he play cards? No, sir; he plays the violin and the flute. Does your friend go away to-day? Yes, sir; he goes away immediately. Dost thou go away to-day? No, sir; I shall go away to-morrow at six o'clock. Will your cousins go away at the same time? No, sir; they are going away to-day. Is there powder in that store? Yes, sir; there is a barrel full. Does that sick man breathe easily? No, madam; he has trouble (*de la peine*) in breathing; he has taken cold. Are you tired? Yes, sir; I wish to breathe here a moment (*un moment.*) Do you take a walk in the morning? I take a ride in a carriage every morning and every evening. Do your neighbors often take a ride in a carriage? No, sir; they ride every day on horseback. Do you like to ride in a carriage better than on horseback? Yes, sir; but my brother likes to ride on horseback better than in a carriage. Do you go to bed early or late? I go to bed late; for I can not sleep when I go to bed early. At what hour do you rise? I do not always rise at the same hour; sometimes I rise at six, and sometimes later.

Do you flatter yourself that you know French? Do you not respect that industrious man? Does he not make himself respected by

every body? Are the industrious always respected? That scholar is not diligent; does he not get punished by his master almost every day? That man flatters himself that he is learned; do you suppose that he is learned? Does it often rain when the sun shines? Did it not rain yesterday when the sun shone? Will not the moon shine to-night? Will it not shine all night? That man is generous; did he not offer you a (the) third of his fruit? Did you accept the third? Has your neighbor locked his door? Does he always lock it when he goes to bed? Does it often snow here in winter? Does it often hail in summer? Does it hail and thunder at the same time? Is it always cold when it snows? Do you not respect the character of that old soldier? I have heard the news; is it not terrible? Not knowing your lesson, why do you not study? That boy makes much noise while saying his lesson; does he not?

If you had much money what would you do? I would travel in Europe. If you had heard me knock at your door, would you not have risen? I should have risen immediately. Are you afraid that I have not learned my lesson? I am afraid that your brother has not learned his. Are you afraid that we have come too late? I am afraid that you have come too early. These scholars have played all the morning; does the master believe that they have studied, and that they have been diligent? He thinks that they have studied well. A man had two sons; the one loved to sleep late in the morning, and the other was very industrious, and always rose very early in the morning. This one having gone out (*étant sorti*) one day early in the morning, found a purse (*une bourse*) full of money. He ran to his brother to communicate (*faire part de*) to him his good fortune, and said to him, "See, Lewis, what one gains by rising early." 'My faith," answered his brother, "if he to whom the purse belongs had not risen earlier than I, he would not have lost it."

92. QUATRE-VINGT-DOUXIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT.

RULE. The IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed

from the past definite by changing the *last letter of the first person singular* into the following terminations :

SSE, SSES, ^T, SSIONS, SSIEZ, SSENT.

PAST DEFINITE, *Eus*, makes the SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT,
*J' eus*SSE, *tu eus*SSES, *il eû*T, *nous eus*SIONS, *vous eus*SIEZ, *ils eus*SENT.

PAST DEFINITE, *Fus*, makes the SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT,
*Je fus*SE, *tu fus*SES, *il fû*T, *nous fus*SIONS, *vous fus*SIEZ, *ils fus*SENT.

PAST DEFINITE, *Parlai*, makes the SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT,
*Je parlas*SE, *tu parlas*SES, *il parlâ*T, *nous parlas*SIONS, *vous parlas*SIEZ, *ils parlas*SENT

PAST DEFINITE, *Finis*, makes the SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT,
*Je finis*SE, *tu finis*SES, *il finî*T, *nous finis*SIONS, *vous finis*SIEZ, *ils finis*SENT.

REMARK 1. When the governing verb is past or conditional, this tense must be used to denote a time which is either present or future to the governing verb.

He wished me to be at his house,	Il *souhaitait* que je *fusse* chez lui,
He wished thee to have his money,	Il *a voulu* que tu *eusses* son argent,
It had been necessary for him to speak,	Il *avait fallu* qu' il *parlât*,
I should like you to finish soon,	J' *aimerais* que vous *finissiez* bientôt.

In the first three of the above phrases the governing verbs are in the different past tenses, and in the last in the conditional; and in all, the time to be expressed is either present or future to the governing verb; the imperfect subjunctive is therefore used.

The learner will observe also that this tense is used after the past or conditional of the governing verb, in the same way as the present is after the present or future. Thus :

He wishes us to go away,	Il veut que nous nous en *allions*,
He wished us to go away,	Il voulait que nous nous en *allassions*,
I wait for him to finish,	J' attends qu' il *finisse*,
I waited for him to finish,	J' attendais qu' il *finît*,
He wished me to receive my money,	Il voulait que je reçusse mon argent,
It is necessary for him to live well,	Il faut qu' il vive bien,
It was necessary for him to live well,	Il a fallu qu' il vécût bien,
It is time for you to read,	Il est temps que vous lisiez,
It was time for you to read,	Il était temps que vous lussiez.

REMARK 2. This tense is also used instead of the present; that is, it is used when the governing clause is present or future, to express a time present or future to it, provided it be followed by a conditional expression of past time.

I doubt whether you would be sick, if you had been prudent,	Je doute que vous *fussiez* malade, si vous étiez prudent,
I doubt his finishing, if he had not been diligent,	Je doute qu' il *finît*, s' il n' était pas diligent,
I doubt his succeeding without you,	Je doute qu' il *réussît* sans vous.*

* *Sans vous* is here an expression of past time, meaning *if you did not help him.* If the speaker mean by *sans vous*, *if you do not help him*, (an expression of present time,) the verb must be present, *Je doute qu' il réussisse sans vous.*

As, like. He acts as a general,	*En.* Il agit en général,
She acts like an ignorant one,	Elle agit en ignorante,
A *leaf.* A sheet of paper,	Une *feuille.* Une feuille de papier,
The *mud.* It is muddy,	La *boue.* Il fait de la boue,
The *dust.* It is dusty,	La *poussière.* Il fait de la poussière,
The *smoke.* Does it smoke?	La *fumée.* Est-ce qu' il fait de la fumée?
To dare. He dares nothing,	*Oser.* Il n' ose rien,
Reason. Consult reason,	La *raison.* Consultez la raison.

REMARK 3. Attributes expressing a state of mind take *de* before the infinitive.

He is joyous to see you,	Il est *joyeux de* vous voir,
It is sad to lose that,	Il est *triste de* perdre cela,
He is sorry to go away,	Il est *fâché de* partir,
Imprudence. Imprudent,	*L' imprudence,* (fem.) *Imprudent,*
He has the imprudence to do that,	Il a l' imprudence de faire cela,
The *lock.* The key is in the lock,	La *serrure.* La clef est dans la serrure,
Then. Has he then finished?	*Donc.* A-t-il donc fini?
He *dines regularly* at noon,	Il *dîne régulièrement* à midi,
A *stay. To cure,* also *to get well,*	Un *séjour. Guérir,*
He will cure these *patients,*	Il guérira ces patients,
I hope to get well soon,	J' espère guérir bientôt,
You have made a short stay,	Vous avez fait un court séjour,
Married. She is married,	*Marié.* Elle est mariée,
A *debt.* He is in debt,	Une *dette.* Il est en dette,
Whoever. Whoever shall do that,	*Quiconque.* Quiconque fera cela,
An *arrival.* Since his arrival,	Une *arrivée.* Depuis son arrivée,
The *departure.* Before his departure,	Le *départ.* Avant son départ,
Will it not be better to laugh than to weep?	Est-ce qu' il ne vaudra pas mieux rire que de pleurer?
It will be better,	Cela vaudra mieux,
Go to thy room. Go,	*Va à ta chambre. Va,* (imp. of *Aller,*)
Have thou. Let us have. Have ye,	*Aie. Ayons. Ayez,* (imp. of *Avoir,*)
Be thou. Let us be. Be ye,	*Sois. Soyons. Soyez,* (imp. of *Être,*)
Take care of thy books,	Aie soin de tes livres,
Let us take care of these horses,	Ayons soin de ces chevaux,
Be *attentive.* Let us be attentive,	Soyez *attentif.* Soyons attentifs.

Does the Frenchman always behave himself well? Yes, sir; he always acts like a wise and prudent man. Does his son live like a prudent man? No, sir; he lives like an imprudent and ignorant one. What makes that noise? It is the leaves agitated (*agitées*) by the wind. Will you have the goodness to give me a sheet of paper? Certainly, sir; take as many as you wish for. Is it muddy? It is

very muddy. Was it not dusty yesterday? Yes, sir; the dust rose yesterday and penetrated every where, but the rain fell (*Less.* 88, *Rem.* 4) during the whole night, and now it is very muddy. Whence comes all this smoke? This chimney smokes, the wood is green, and the room is full of smoke. Would you dare to blame the general? I should dare to blame him if he did me (a) wrong. Does that merchant dare much? No, sir; he dares nothing, he will never succeed. Ought not one always to consult reason? Yes, sir; reason is given us to conduct us, and it is necessary to consult it in every thing. Is not your neighbor imprudent? Yes, sir; he has had the imprudence to offend all his friends. Is there a lock to your door? There is one, and I always lock the door when I go to bed. That man is better; he will get well then; will he not? I think that the physician will cure him. Do you rise regularly at the same hour every day? Yes, sir; I go to bed regularly at ten, and I rise regularly at six every day. There is a lock then to your door; where is the key? It is in the lock. Did your stay in London please (*plu*) you? No, sir; the stay in Paris pleased me more.

Will the physician cure your neighbor? Will he get well? Is your brother married? How long has he been married? Is he in debt? Will he ever pay his debts? Whoever shall do that will be punished; will he not? Whoever passes that bridge (*ce pont*) has (*doit*) to pay three cents; has he not? Do you go to the post-office every day at the arrival of the mail? On (*à*) your arrival did you come immediately to my house? After the departure of your brother, will you come here? Did you carry your letters to the post-office before the departure of the mail? Take care of your papers; will you not lose them? Take care of your books; had you not better put them in the drawer? Be attentive to what the master says; are you always attentive? Was the master pleased that I should amuse myself in playing ball? He would like better that thou shouldst study; would he not? Was it not necessary that that sick man should take a ride in a carriage? (*Less.* 71, *Rule* II.) Was it not suitable that we should take a walk? It was important that you should go to bed early; was it not? Was it proper that the children should discourse on the merit of their masters? [*In the*

remainder of this paragraph let each verb be used both in the present and in the imperfect subjunctive, as is given with the first two ; that is, when the verb is given in the present, let the pupil change the phrase also to the imperfect ; and when given in the imperfect, let him change it also to the present.] Is it possible for me never *to be* absent ? [*Changed.*] Was it possible for me never *to be* absent ? Was it not proper for thee *to write ?* [*Changed.*] Is it not proper for thee *to write ?* Do you wish him *to fly ?* — Was it not suitable that you *should bid* adieu to the travelers ? — He wishes you *to enjoy* good health ; does he not ? — Were you afraid that those sick men *would die ?* — Does he think that I *consent* to his injustice (*injustice ?*) — Would you like us *to read ?* — Is it just for you *to deceive* that man ? —

Has your brother gone up to his room ? (*Less.* 88, *Rule.*) He went up, but he has come down again. Has your cousin remained in Paris ? He remained there one month only, (*seulement,*) and has now returned. Where is the workman ; did he not suddenly appear to you when you wished to see him ? Yes, sir ; but he has now disappeared. Were you looking for a trunk which might be able to contain all your linen ? (*Less.* 72, *Rule.*) I was looking for the largest that there might be in the store. Is your brother coming ? Yes, sir ; but I doubt his coming if I had not written him. (*Rem.* 2.) Did you not go out yesterday, although you were sick ? It was necessary that we should see the physician ; and he gave us some medicine, in order that we might get well. Malek, general of the calif (*calife*) Mostali, in the last important victory (*victoire importante*) which he gained over the Greeks, made prisoner (*prisonnier*) their emperor, (*empereur,*) Alexis. Malek asked the prince what treatment (*traitement*) he expected from his conqueror (*vainqueur.*) "If the calif makes war as a king," answered the emperor, "he will send me back (*renverra*) without ransom ; (*rançon ;*) if he makes it as a merchant, he will sell me ; if he makes it as a butcher, he will cut my throat" (*m' égorgera.*) The general, admiring the noble boldness (*audace*) of the emperor, sent him back without ransom.

93. QUATRE-VINGT-TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE PLUPERFECT.

RULE. The PLUPERFECT of the SUBJUNCTIVE is formed by annexing the past participle to the imperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary. Thus:

J' eusse eu,	*tu eusses eu,*	*il eût eu,*
Nous eussions eu,	*vous eussiez eu,*	*ils eussent eu,*
Je fusse venu,	*tu fusses venu,*	*il fût venu,*
Nous fussions venus,	*vous fussiez venus,*	*ils fussent venus.*

REMARK 1. When the governing verb is past or conditional, this tense must be used to denote a time which is past to the governing verb.

He was afraid that I had had his papers,	Il avait peur que je n' *eusse eu* ses papiers,
I feared that thou hadst been sick,	Je craignais que tu n' *eusses été* malade,
I doubted whether he had done it,	Je doutais qu' il l' *eût fait*,
Did you doubt our having done it?	Doutiez-vous que nous l' *eussions fait?*
I doubted your having done it,	Je doutais que vous l' *eussiez fait*,
I liked their having finished,	J' aimais qu' ils *eussent fini.*

In these examples the governing verb is past, and the time to be expressed is passed to it the pluperfect subjunctive is therefore used.

The learner will observe also, that this tense is used after the past or the conditional of the governing verb, in the same way as the perfect is after the present. Thus:

Do you think that he has come?	Pensez-vous qu' il *soit venu?*
Did you think that I had come?	Pensiez-vous que je *fusse venu?*
I do not think that he has come,	Je ne pense pas qu' il *soit venu*,
I did not think that thou hadst come,	Je ne pensais pas que tu *fusses venu*,
I do not think that he has departed,	Je ne pense pas qu' il *soit parti*,
I did not think that he had departed,	Je ne pensais pas qu' il *fût parti*,
It is time that we had arrived,	Il est temps que nous *soyons arrivés*,
It was time that we had arrived,	Il était temps que nous *fussions arrivés*,
He fears that you may have died,	Il craint que vous ne *soyez morts*,
He feared that you had died,	Il craignait que vous ne *fussiez morts*,
We like their having returned,	Nous aimons qu' ils *soient re venus*,
We liked their having returned,	Nous aimions qu' ils *fussent revenus.*

REMARK 2. This tense is also used instead of the perfect; that is, it is used when the governing clause is present or future, to express a time passed to it, provided it be followed by a conditional expression of past time.

I doubt your having been sick, if you had been prudent,	Je doute que vous *eussiez été* malade, si vous aviez été prudent,
I doubt his having finished, if he had not been industrious,	Je doute qu' il *eût fini*, s' il n' avait pas été industrieux,
I doubt his having succeeded without you,	Je doute qu' il *eût réussi* sans vous,
It is two hours since I finished,	Il y a deux heures que j' ai fini,
It is two years since I was there,	Il y a deux ans que je n' y ai été.

Remark 3. *Que* used as above, must be followed by *ne* when the phrase can be made negative in English.

It is an hour since I dined,	Il y a une heure que j' ai dîné,
It is a month since I saw him,	Il y a un mois que je ne l' ai vu,*
A *turn*. Each one in his turn,	Un *tour*. Chacun à son tour,
I will go away *presently*,	Je m' en irai *tout-à-l' heure*,
Like. He acts like his brother,	*Comme*. Il agit comme son frère,
What is that good for?	*À quoi cela est-il bon?*
It is good for nothing,	Ce n' est bon à rien,
To fly. He runs away,	*S' enfuir*. Il s' enfuit,
You run away. They run away,	Vous vous enfuyez. Ils s' enfuient,
To bid adieu. He bids us adieu,	*Dire adieu*. Il nous dit adieu,
Youth. During his youth,	La *jeunesse*. Pendant sa jeunesse,
Old age,	La *vieillesse*,
In *extreme* old age,	Dans une *extrême* vieillesse,
He writes *extremely* fast,	Il écrit *extrêmement* vite,
The *length*. The *height*,	La *longueur*, *long*. La *hauteur*, *haut*,
It is sixty feet long and forty high,	Elle a soixante pieds de longueur (de long) et quarante de hauteur, (de haut,)
A *well*. *Depth*,	Un *puits*. La *profondeur*,
This well is very deep,	Ce puits a bien de la profondeur,
The *soul*. The soul is *immortal*,	L' *âme*, (fem.) L' âme est *immortelle*,
A *philosopher*. A true philosopher,	Un *philosophe*. Un vrai philosophe,
A *preceptor*. An able preceptor,	Un *précepteur*. Un précepteur habile,
The *exercise*. He takes exercise,	L' *exercice*, (mas.) Il fait de l' exercice,
I know the *honesty* of his soul,	Je connais l' *honnêteté* de son âme,
A *moment*. *Only*,	Un *moment*. *Seulement*,
Stop only a moment,	Restez seulement un moment,
He is *prisoner* on parole,	Il est *prisonnier* sur parole.

* In the first of these sentences, we can not properly say, *It is an hour that I have not dined;* but in the second, we may say, *It is a month that I have not seen him.* So in the former, we can not say, *It is two hours that I have not finished;* but we can say, *It is two years that I have not been there.*

Why do you not recite your lesson? I shall recite in my turn. Has not your turn come already? No, sir; but it will come soon. Why do you not write your exercise? I have written it as you see. Do you always write like that? I sometimes write better, and I frequently write worse. What is that gun good for? It is good to kill birds and squirrels. Is that boy good for any thing? He is good to make fires and sweep the rooms. Why do those children run away? They run away because they are afraid. Does the traveler set out soon? Yes, sir; he has just bid adieu to his friends. Has old age always more reason than youth? No, sir; youth has sometimes as much (of it) as old age. That house is extremely large; what length has it? It is a hundred feet long and fifty high. How deep is (*quelle profondeur a*) that well? It is more than sixty feet deep. Do we understand the operations (*opérations*) of the soul? No, sir; we can not understand them perfectly. Is your preceptor learned and wise? Yes, sir; he is a true philosopher. Can one learn French by rules (*règles*) only? No, sir; no language is learned (*Less.* 77, *Rule* III.) without much exercise. Have the prisoners escaped? Yes, sir; they escaped from prison (*prison*) last night.

Can you not stop here a moment? Do those soldiers exercise every day? Do you believe that the soul is immortal? Do you believe that the works of men are immortal? What philosopher was the preceptor of Alexander (*Alexandre*) the Great? What is the length and height of this wall (*ce mur?*) Is that well more than forty feet deep? That horse runs extremely fast; does he belong to you? Have you just bid adieu to your friends? Did you speak to me before I had spoken to you? (*Less.* 72, *Rule* III.) Did you do good to your neighbor, although he had done evil to you? We paid that man, although we had not promised it; did we not? Did your friend suppose that you had been sick? Did you think that they had pretended to be sick? Although I had gone out, my door was not locked; was it? You did not go to the general's until he had returned from Paris; did you? Yesterday that boy entered our house, although we had gone to bed; did he not? Did they think that you had risen? Did your uncle approve of his sons having gone to the theatre? Is it fifteen minutes since it struck two? (*Less.* 88, *Class* II.) It is two

days since the clock struck; have they not forgotten to wind it up? Is it an hour since you recited? Is it two months since you have been to school? [*In the remainder of this paragraph, let each verb be used both in the perfect and pluperfect subjunctive, as is given with the first two.*] Do you believe that I have done that injustice? [*Changed.*] Did you believe that I had done that injustice? Did you fear that your brother had not learned his lesson? [*Changed.*] Do you fear that he has not learned his lesson? Do you approve of our having used your umbrella? — Did the master doubt your having learned the lesson? — Does your cousin deny that you have recited it? — Did your uncle disapprove of your cousins having gone to the theatre? — Do you know any one who has learned more than your friend?

Your father came down from his room once; has he not gone up to it again (*remonté?*) He went up again and has again come down. Does the master grant you much time to play? We can always play, provided that we have finished our lessons. Has your friend succeeded in paying that man for his house? Yes, sir; but I doubt his having succeeded, (*Rem.* 2,) if you had not lent him some money. Do you always rise early in the morning? I always rise early in the morning, provided I go to bed early. How far will you go? I shall go as far as New York. Did not those men run away the other day as soon as they had seen the enemy? They ran away before the enemy had come. Is not your brother loved by his master? (*Less.* 60, *Rem.* 1.) Yes, sir; and my cousin is often punished by his.

General Daumesnil commanded the place of Vincennes, when the Russians and the armies (*armées*) of the allies (*alliés*) rendered themselves masters of Paris in eighteen hundred and fourteen. The citadel (*la citadelle*) of Vincennes being only (*à*) three miles from Paris, the allies believed that it would be easy for them to take it. The Russians summoned Daumesnil several times to surrender (*rendre*) the place, but the French general, who had lost a leg in the campaign of Russia, answered them always with liveliness: (*gaîté:*) "I have left my left leg in your country; send it back (*renvoyez*) to me, and I will surrender to you my place."

A thief having introduced himself during the night into the room

of a poor man, was looking for something to steal, but found nothing. The poor man, who was not sleeping, said to him laughing: "Thou hast mistaken, my friend, in coming during the night to look for something here, where I can find nothing during the day."

---

94. QUATRE-VINGT-QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

SUBJUNCTIVE, CONNECTION OF TENSES.

The learner has now seen, in the last four lessons, that the various tenses of the subjunctive are used according to the following general

RULE. When the time of the governing clause is present or future, the present of the subjunctive is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the perfect to denote a time which is past: but, when the time of the governing clause is past or conditional, the imperfect is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the pluperfect to denote a time which is past: Thus:

I doubt whether he goes there, / I doubt whether he will go there,	Je doute qu' il *aille* là,
I shall doubt whether he goes there, / I shall doubt whether he will go there,	Je douterai qu' il *aille* là,
I doubt whether he has gone there,	Je doute qu' il *soit allé* là,
I shall doubt whether he has gone there,	Je douterai qu' il *soit allé* là,
I doubted whether he went there,	Je doutais qu' il *allât* là,
I have doubted whether he would go there,	J' ai douté qu' il *allât* là,
I had doubted whether he had gone there,	J' avais douté qu' il *fût allé* là,
I should doubt whether he had gone there,	Je douterais qu' il *fût allé* là.

The learner has seen also the following three exceptions to the above rule.

EXC. 1. The present subjunctive is used after the past indefinite followed by the conjunctions, *afin que*, *pour que*, *de crainte que*, *de peur que*, *quoique*, *bien que*.

I have written in order that he come, J' ai écrit afin qu' il *vienne*.

EXC. 2. After a present, the imperfect is used instead of the present, and the pluperfect instead of the perfect, when followed by a conditional expression of past time.

I doubt his succeeding without you, Je doute qu' il *réussît* sans vous,
I doubt his having succeeded without you, Je doute qu' il *eût réussi* sans vous.

Exc. 3. Usage also allows the employment of the perfect subjunctive after the past indefinite.

Has there ever been a man who labored more? Ya-t-il jamais eu un homme qui ait plus travaillé?
The *shop*. A grocer's shop, La *boutique*. Une boutique d' épicier,
The *sound*. The *bell*, Le *son*. La *cloche*,
I hear the sound of the bell, J' entends le son de la cloche,
The *fist*. A blow with the fist, Le *poing*. Un coup de poing,
A *glance*. A *kick*, Un *coup d' œil*, Un *coup de pied*,
A blow with a stick, Un coup de bâton,
A blow with an ax, Un coup de hache,
Cast a glance on that, Jetez un coup d' œil sur cela,
Obedient. She is obedient, *Obéissant*. Elle est obéissante,
Disobedient. He is disobedient, *Désobéissant*. Il est désobéissant,
I have taken it *in order* to read it, Je l' ai pris *afin de* le lire.

Remark 1. *Pour* takes the definite article before the names of all countries except France.

He sets out for England and Italy, Il part pour l' Angleterre et pour l' Italie,
He has set out for France, Il est parti pour France,
A *debtor*. He is my debtor, Un *débiteur*. Il est mon débiteur,
A *creditor*. He is your creditor, Un *créancier*. Il est votre créancier.

Remark 2. When a noun of place comes between *aller* and the infinitive, the latter is preceded by *pour*.

I am going to the market to buy fruit, Je vais au marché pour acheter du fruit,
I am going home to see my friend, Je vais chez moi pour voir mon ami,
The *breadth*, La *largeur*,
A *dozen*, Une *douzaine*, (*de* before noun,)
The *thickness*. The *circumference*, L' *épaisseur*, (fem.) La *circonférence*,
That house is sixty feet long by forty wide, Cette maison a soixante pieds de longueur *sur* quarante de largeur,
That stone is two feet in thickness and ten in circumference, Cette pierre a deux pieds d' épaisseur et dix de circonférence,
A score. A score of eggs, Une *vingtaine*. Une vingtaine d' œufs.

Remark 3. *Pour aller* must be used after *sortir*, when we express the purpose of one's going out.

I am going out for wood, Je sors pour aller chercher du bois,
He is going out for wine, Il sort pour aller chercher du vin,
To obey. Obey God, *Obéir à*. Obéissez à Dieu,

He obeys the master,	Il obéit au maître,
The *newspaper*,	La *gazette*, *le journal*,
He reads the newspaper,	Il lit (la gazette) le journal.

REMARK 4. A noun used like an adjective in the predicate omits the indefinite article.

He is an Englishman,	Il est Anglais,
That man is a soldier,	Cet homme est soldat,
I am a *christian*,	Je suis *chrétien*,
Let us know. Know ye,	*Sachons. Sachez*, (imper. of *Savoir*,)
Be so kind as. Please,	*Veuillez. Veuillez bien*, (im. of *Vouloir*,)
Know your lesson. Let us know it,	Sachez votre leçon. Sachons-la,
Please to listen to me,	Veuillez bien m' écouter,
A horse-shoe. To shoe a horse,	*Un fer à cheval. Ferrer un cheval.*

As soon as your neighbor had risen yesterday did he open his shop? No, sir; as soon as he had risen he breakfasted and read the newspaper, after that he opened his shop. I hear the sound of the bell; why does it ring? It rings because it is twelve o'clock. Has the master given that boy a blow with his fist? No, sir; he has given him some blows with a stick. Why has he beaten him? Because he gave his companion a blow with his fist. Why do you give that dog a kick? Because he is always here in the room, and I wish him to go away. Cast a glance on this writing; have you seen it? Yes, sir; it is beautiful; my cousin wrote (*faite*) it. Have you cast a glance upon the newspapers? No, sir; I have not seen the newspapers to-day. Is that boy obedient? No, sir; he is very disobedient; he obeys no one. Does he not obey the master? No, sir; he obeys neither the master nor his father. Have you come here in order to read these newspapers? No, sir; I have come in order to borrow some; (of them;) please to lend me this one. Do you depart to-day for England or for France? I depart for Spain. Is that man your creditor? No, sir; he is my debtor. How far are you going? I am going as far as Boston, in order to see my friends. Have you a dozen apples? Yes, sir; I have more than a score.

Are you going to the grocer's shop in order to buy coffee? What is the breadth of that stone? What is its thickness? Is it more than twelve feet in circumference? Are you going out to look for a carriage? Are you going out for water? Is your neighbor a Christian? Is that man a Frenchman? Is he a merchant? Please to

lend me your pen-knife a moment; have you not one? Is it just that this workman should do more labor than that one? Was it just that he should do more? Does the master desire scholars who come to school early? (*Less.* 72, *Rule* 3.) Did he not desire those who would come early? We have come late; does he think that we came early? Did he think that we came early? [*In the remainder of this paragraph, let each verb be used in the four tenses, the present, imperfect, perfect and pluperfect subjunctive, as is here given with the first.*] Do you wish me *to see* your friend? [*Changed.*] Do you think that I *have seen* him? [*Changed.*] Did you think that I *saw* him? [*Changed.*] Did you think that I *had seen* him? Do you fear that he *will go?* [*Change to the other three tenses.*] Do you believe that he is writing? — — — Behave in such a way that you *may be* respected. — — — Does your mother disapprove of your *going* to the theatre? — — — Does the master like his scholars *to write* their exercises without a fault? — — — He denies that thou *receivest* his letters; does he not? — — —

Have you not given that boy some money in order that he may go to the theatre? (*Exc.* 1.) No, sir; I have given him some that he may do my work. Why have you given him medicine? I have given him some for fear of his being sick. Will you take the doctor's medicine? We have taken it although we do not get well. Do you doubt my learning my lesson? I doubt your learning it if you had not studied last night. (*Exc.* 2.) Do you doubt our having paid the merchant? I doubt your having paid him if you had not met your debtor. Has not that man much merit? Yes, sir; there has never been a man who has done more good in this village. (*Exc.* 3.)

A poor comedian, (*comédien,*) who had much wit, but little money to pay for his dinner, went to make a visit to a banker celebrated for (*banquier célèbre par*) his riches and his avarice, (*avarice,*) and proposed (*proposa*) to him an operation (*opération*) where there was, he said, a hundred thousand francs to be gained (*à gagner.*) The banker, who was going to seat himself (*se mettre*) at the table, invited the comedian to dine; the latter accepted. After dinner, the banker asked the comedian some particulars regarding (*des détails sur*) the operation of which he had spoken. "Sir," said the comedian to him, "I

have been told, that you give two hundred thousand francs as a dowery (*en mariage*) to your daughter. Well, I (*moi je*) will take her for half of that sum; it is then clear that, in granting me the hand of your daughter, you gain a hundred thousand francs."

95. QUATRE-VINGT-QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

IMPERATIVE AND INFINITIVE MOODS.

THE IMPERATIVE MOOD for the first and second person of all French verbs (except *avoir*, *être* and *aller*, given *Less.* 92, and *savoir* and *vouloir*, *Less.* 94,) was given *Less.* 54. We may now add that the third person singular and plural is always the same as in the present subjunctive. Thus:

Let him study. Let them study,	*Qu' il étudie. Qu' ils étudient,*
Let him come. Let them come,	Qu' il vienne. Qu' ils viennent,
Let him see. Let them see,	Qu' il voie. Qu' ils voient,
Let him read. Let them read,	Qu' il lise. Qu' ils lisent,
Let him go away. Let them go away,	Qu' il s' en aille. Qu' ils s' en aillent,
Come here. Let us go to school,	Viens ici. Allons à l' école,
Let him hold these horses,	Qu' il tienne ces chevaux,
Let them pick up the apples,	Qu' ils ramassent les pommes,
Come and see me to-morrow,	Venez me voir demain.

REMARK 1. When of two imperatives connected together in English, the second expresses the purpose of the first, it is rendered in French by the infinitive.

Let him come and do my work,	Qu' il vienne faire mon ouvrage,
Let them go and see their friends,	Qu' ils aillent voir leurs amis.

REMARK 2. The infinitive mood, when its use would be attended with no ambiguity, is to be preferred to the indicative and subjunctive as more concise and elegant. Hence verbs which govern the subjunctive with a change of subject in the second verb, generally take the infinitive when the subject remains the same.

He desires that you may succeed,	Il désire que vous réussissiez,*
He desires that he may succeed,	Il désire réussir,*
To approach. Bring the table near,	*Approcher.* Approchez la table,
To draw near. Draw near the fire,	*S' approcher.* Approchez-vous du feu,
To withdraw. Withdraw from the fire,	*S' éloigner.* Éloignez-vous du feu,

* In the former of these phrases, as the subject of the second verb (*vous*) is different from that of the first, (*il*,) the infinitive can not be used; but, in the second where there is no subject but *il*, it is preferred. It would be inelegant and often equivocal to say, *Il désire qu' il réussisse.*

He approaches it, I withdraw from it,	Il s' en approche, je m' en éloigne,
To dance. She dances with *grace*,	*Danser.* Elle danse avec *grâce*,
To cease. He ceases to speak,	*Cesser*, (*de* bef. inf.) Il cesse de parler

REMARK 3. *Cesser*, *oser*, *pouvoir* and *savoir*, when negative, sometimes omit *pas*

The fever has not ceased,	La fièvre n' est pas cessée,
I can not do that,	Je ne saurais faire cela,
Above. He is up stairs,	*En haut.* Il est en haut,
Below. She is down stairs,	*En bas.* Elle est en bas,
As usual. Usually,	*Comme à l' ordinaire. D' ordinaire*,
Earlier than usual,	De meilleure heure qu' à l' ordinaire,
To recollect,	*Se rappeler*, (*de* before infinitive,)
I recollect the facts,	Je me rappelle les faits,
He has recalled them,	Il se les est rappelés,
To take into one's head, to think of,	*S' aviser de*,
He plans nothing,	Il ne s' avise de rien,
He took it into his head to rob me,	Il s' est avisé de me voler,
The *toilet.* He has made his toilet,	La *toilette.* Il a fait sa toilette,
He *frightens* the boy,	Il *fait peur* à ce garçon,
He frightens him,	Il lui fait peur,
The *class.* The first class,	La *classe.* La première classe,
The *nation.* The nation is powerful,	La *nation.* La nation est puissante,
To talk. They talk of business,	*Causer.* Ils causent d' affaires,
The *voice. Aloud*,	La *voix. Haut, à haute voix*,
It is necessary to speak aloud,	Il faut parler haut, (or à haute voix,)
The *diameter.* One foot in diameter,	Le *diamètre.* Un pied de diamètre.

REMARK 4. In the compound tenses of *s' en aller*, *en* must precede the auxiliary.

He has gone away,	Il s' en est allé,
They have gone away,	Ils s' en sont allés,
You had gone away,	Vous vous en étiez allés,
We shall have gone away,	Nous nous en serons allés,
Does he hope that I have gone away?	Espère-t-il que je m' en sois allé?
He hopes that you have gone away,	Il espère que vous vous en êtes allé,
Go (thou) away. Go (you) away,	Va-t' en. Allez-vous-en,
A *fly.* A common fly,	Une *mouche.* Une mouche commune,
A *needle.* A *pin*,	Une *aiguille.* Une *épingle*,
Similar,	*Semblable*,
He is quite similar to his brother,	Il est tout-à-fait semblable à son frère.

REMARK 5. The past participle annexed to the infinitive of the auxiliary forms the past infinitive.

After having finished,	Après *avoir fini*,
Before having gone there,	Avant *d' être allé* là.

What (will it be necessary) must I do to-morrow? To-morrow morning thou wilt go first to the house of the principal of the college, (*principal du collège,*) to carry to him an invitation (*invitation*) to the ball which will take place next week; and then thou wilt return home for (*pour prendre*) my little niece, and thou wilt conduct her to the dentist's; in the afternoon thou wilt mount on horseback, and accompany (*accompagneras*) my sister as far as the city. Is that all, sir? It is all Very well, your orders shall be executed (*exécutés.*) Thou wilt not forget to take the best horses, in order that you may be able to be back (*de retour*) at six. Draw near the fire; are you not cold? No, sir; I am too warm; I like better to withdraw from it. Why did you withdraw from the company last night? I withdrew from it because it did not please me. Do you like to dance better than to talk? Sometimes I like to talk better than to dance. Is your brother up stairs? No, sir; he is in the room below. Where can I find your cousin? Go (*montez*) up stairs and knock at the first door to the left. Do you wish me to go to the market this morning as usual? Yes; and I wish you to return earlier than usual. Do you recollect your visit to Mr. White's in London? I recollect all the circumstances (*circonstances*) perfectly, and my stay at his house.

Where will you go after having made your toilet? How many times a day does that lady make her toilet? What has frightened the cat? Does not the dog frighten that little girl? How many classes are there in your school? Is yours the first class? Is England a more powerful nation than France? Is Russia the most powerful nation of Europe? That young lady has danced all the evening; is she not fatigued? Will not that man cease to talk of his affairs? Has he not talked all the evening without ceasing? That tree is six feet in diameter and almost twenty in circumference; is it not? What is the diameter of that globe? Are there more flies in autumn than in summer? Have not some flies four wings? Does that tailor use more pins than needles? I wish for ten dozen pins and two dozen needles; have you so many? Is your house similar to mine? Is it quite similar? That man does not cease to work from morning to night; what is he doing? I wish for the servant; is he above or below? Does that scholar recite well as usual? Do you recollect

all that he has said? In order to learn French, is it necessary to speak it aloud? Are those children playing pins? (*Less.* 90, *Rem.* 2.) Had we not better pay the man for his carriage?

After having breakfasted did you not go to the post-office? No, sir; the mail had not arrived. Do you always put your money in your trunk? No, sir; I often put it in my pocket. Are you tired? Yes, sir; I wish to breathe here a moment. Do you take a walk every morning? Yes, sir; and I take a ride on horseback every evening. That man flatters himself that he knows French; do you believe that he knows it perfectly? He knows how to write and speak it a little. Do you wish for a coat in the English fashion? No, sir; I wish one in the French fashion.

A doctor very avaricious was called to attend (*pour soigner*) the sick wife of a poor man; the latter believing that he perceived (*Rem.* 2) that the doctor was afraid that he would not be (*Rem.* 2) paid for (*de*) his trouble, said to him: "I have ten pounds sterling; (*sterlings ;*) and if you kill or cure my wife, I will give them to you." The woman died. Some days after the doctor went to claim (*réclamer*) the ten pounds sterling. The poor widower (*veuf*) asked him if he had killed his wife. "No," answered the doctor. "Have you cured her?" "No." "Then you have no right (*droit*) to that sum, and I think it (*trouve*) very astonishing that you should come to claim it."

96. QUATRE-VINGT-SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

PAST PARTICIPLE, ETC.

The learner is now familiar with the rule, that the past participle forming part of a transitive verb agrees with its direct object, if that object precede; but if the object do not precede, it remains unvaried. This rule requires further explanation.

Remark 1. The past participle of impersonal verbs is never varied, as:

The rain which has been,	La pluie qu' il a *fait*, (not *faite*,)
The heats which there have been,	Les chaleurs qu' il y a *eu*, (not *eues*.)

Remark 2. Sometimes the infinitive mood is the real object of the participle, when the English learner is apt to regard it as the noun or pronoun.

That song is beautiful; have you heard it sung?	Cette chanson est belle; l' avez-vous *entendu* (not entendue) chanter?*
I have heard it read,	Je l' ai *entendu* (not entendue) lire,
He made them run,	Il les a fait (not faits) courir.

Remark 3. Sometimes also the close of the sentence preceded by *que* is the object of the participle, when the learner is apt to regard it as the pronoun.

The letters which I knew that you received,	Les lettres que j' ai *su* † que vous receviez,
The friends which I heard that you had,	Les amis que j' ai *entendu* † dire que vous aviez.

Remark 4. *In* and *on*, equivalent to *of* possessive, are rendered in French by *de*.

The inhabitants in our village,	Les habitants *de* notre village,
The greatest man in England,	Le plus grand homme *d'* Angleterre,
To measure. He measures this *field*,	*Mesurer.* Il mesure ce *champ*,
An excuse. He makes excuses,	Une *excuse.* Il fait des excuses,
To melt. Butter melts quick,	*Fondre.* Le beurre se fond vite,
To load, to *charge*,	*Charger*, (*de* before noun and infinitive,)
A *vessel* loaded with salt,	Un *navire* chargé de sel,
A *pane of glass.* That pane is broken,	Une *vitre.* Cette vitre est cassée,
A *wall.* A wall two feet thick,	Un *mur.* Un mur épais de deux pieds,
He enjoys a good *reputation*,	Il jouit d' une bonne *réputation*,
To explain. To instruct.	*Expliquer. Instruire*, (*à* before inf.)
I can not explain that,	Je ne peux expliquer cela,
Ice-cream,	La *crème glacée*, la *crème à la glace*,
The *government. Science.*	Le *gouvernement.* La *science*,
He instructs the prince in the science of government,	Il instruit le prince dans la science du gouvernement,
To express. To instruct,	*Exprimer. Enseigner*, (*à* before inf.)
He teaches his pupils to express their *ideas*,	Il enseigne à ses élèves à exprimer leurs *idées*,
To threaten,	*Menacer*, (*de* before infinitive and noun,)
He threatens me,	Il me menace,

* The literal rendering of these phrases according to their grammatical relations, is: *Have you heard sing it? I have heard read it. He has made run them.* We may ask in the first sentence; *heard what?* Not the song, but *the singing* of it. In the second, *I have heard what?* Not the song, but *the reading* of it. In the third, *he made what?* Not them, but *their running*. The infinitive, therefore, in such sentences is the object, and the participle remains unchanged.

† To ascertain the object in the former of these sentences, we ask the question: *I knew what?* Not the letters; but *that you received* them; and, in the latter, *I heard what?* Not the friends; but, *that you had* them. The close of the sentence is the object in each, and the participle is unvaried.

Remark 5. The learner will perceive from the meaning of the following verbs and conjunctions that they govern the subjunctive.

Approuver. To approve,	*Mériter. To deserve,*
S' étonner. To wonder,	*Prier. To pray,*
Encore que. Though,	*Nonobstant que. Notwithstanding that,*
Loin que. Far from,	*Pour peu que. However little,*
Non que, non pas que. Not that,	*Sans que. Without,*
Soit que. Whether,	*Supposé que. Suppose that,*
Do you approve of his making excuses?	Est-ce que vous approuvez qu' il *fasse* des excuses?
He deserved that we should instruct him,	Il méritait que nous l'*instruisissions*,
He wonders that you have taught that child the sciences,	Il s' étonne que vous *ayez enseigné* les sciences à cet enfant,
I prayed him to load his vessel soon,	Je l' ai prié de charger bientôt son navire,
He prayed that I would explain to him our government,	Il pria que je lui *expliquasse* notre gouvernement,
Although he is young, he is wise,	Encore qu' il *soit* jeune, il est sage,
Far from being rich, he is poor,	Loin qu 'il *soit* riche, il est pauvre,
Not that we feared that,	Non que nous *ayons craint* cela,
Notwithstanding he is well instructed, he can not express his ideas,	Nonobstant qu' il *soit* bien instruit, il ne peut exprimer ses idées,
Without studying much will you have much science?	Sans que vous *étudiez* beaucoup aurez-vous beaucoup de savoir?
Whether you are right or wrong,	Soit que vous *ayez* raison ou tort,
However little I drink it hurts me,	Pour peu que je *boive* cela me fait mal,
He is under constraint,	*Il est à la gêne,*
I was at my ease,	*J' étais sans gêne.*

Good morning, sir; I have the honor to salute you; how have you been since I saw you? (*Less.* 93, *Rem.* 3.) Very well, I thank you. And you? The best in the world. How did you sleep last night? So so (*Comme ça.*) The thunder disturbed (*dérangé*) me a little in (*de*) my sleep. How! Did it then thunder? I heard nothing. You sleep then very soundly (*profondément.*) Yes; above all in my first sleep. Is your brother the best scholar in Mr. B.'s school? His master thinks that he is one of the best. Has the distance from here to your house been measured? No, sir; but it will be measured soon. Has the snow melted at the north? It has not all melted yet. Does the snow melt at the south as soon as it has fallen? At New Orleans it hardly ever snows, and when it does, the snow usually (*ordinairement*) melts as soon as it has fallen. What are those sailors doing?

They are loading that vessel. With what do they load it? They load it with sugar, flour, and hams. Did the servant break those panes of glass? Yes, sir; he broke them in washing them. Is that wall more than two feet thick? It is two feet and a half thick, and ten feet high. Is doctor Brown the best physician in your village? He has the best reputation, but I prefer doctor Smith.

Are there not some passages (*passages*) of Milton difficult to explain? Does your master explain all that you wish? Are the Americans well instructed in the science of government? Do they teach all the dumb (*muets*) to express their ideas with their fingers? What do they teach your brother? Do they teach him French and Spanish? Did your father approve of the mason's having built that wall? Was he not astonished that we had broken so many panes of glass? How does the master explain this passage of Virgil (*Virgile?*) Do most men desire to instruct themselves? Did you write that letter? Did you see it written? Did you hear it read? Did you see it carried to the post-office? Did you break those panes of glass? Did you see them broken? I have come to borrow the books which I knew that you had; are you willing to lend them to me? Have the heats that there have been, injured the cotton? Although one had threatened that boy with blows of a stick he did not obey; did he? Far from the master's threatening to punish that boy, he praised him; did he not? We shall do our duty whether you threaten us or not; is it (*Less.* 40, *Rem.* 2) not just? Take good care of your books, and be always attentive to what the master says are you always attentive?

The sacred (*saintes*) writings of the Jews (*Juifs*) relate (*racontent*) that the prophet Elijah, (*prophète Elie,*) in the deserts of mount (*mont*) Sinai, asked God to appear to him. Immediately the earth shook, (*s' ébranla,*) but God was not in the earthquake; (*tremblement de terre;*) a hurricane (un *ouragan,*) arose, but the hurricane did not mark (*marqua*) the approach (*approche*) of God; finally a gentle zephyr (*zéphir*) was felt, (*se fit sentir,*) and God manifested (*manifesta*) himself in the zephyr; such, also, did he manifest himself in Jesus.

Voltaire and Piron had been invited to pass some weeks in a cast (*un château.*) These two celebrated writers (*célèbres écrivains*

amused themselves sometimes in composing little epigrams (*épigrammes*) against each other. (*Less.* 76.) One day Piron wrote on the door of Voltaire, *Rogue* (*Coquin.*) The author (*auteur*) of the Henriade, thinking that Piron was the inventor (*inventeur*) of this new kind (*genre*) of epigram, went to his room (*chez lui.*) "What happy chance (*hasard*) procures (*procure*) me the pleasure and the honor of seeing you?" said Piron to him. "Sir," answered Voltaire, "I saw your name on my door, and come to return you my visit."

An Englishman, on his first visit in France, met in the streets of Calais a very young child who spoke the French fluently. "Good heavens! (*Mon Dieu!*) is it possible," cried he, "that even the children here speak French with purity" (*pureté!*)

97. QUATRE-VINGT-DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

ADVERBS, NEGATIVES, ETC.

REMARK 1. The pupil, no doubt, has already observed that adverbs are often formed by adding *ment* to the adjective, with such other changes as the sound may require. Most English adverbs in *ly*, formed from adjectives, have corresponding adverbs in French in *ment* formed also from adjectives. Thus:

Quiet. Quietly,	*Tranquille. Tranquillement,*
Honest. *Honestly,*	Honnête. *Honnêtement,*
Entire. *Entirely,*	Entier. *Entièrement,*
Equal. Equally,	*Égal. Également,*
Ordinary. *Ordinarily,*	Ordinaire. *Ordinairement,*
Polite. Politely,	*Poli. Poliment.*

REMARK 2. Prepositions, compounded with *a*, are generally followed by *de*; as,

Around. Beside. Even with,	*Autour de. À côté de. À fleur de,*
Beyond. Above. Unknown to,	*Au-delà de. Au-dessus de. À l' insu de.*

REMARK 3. In interrogations and exclamations, where the subjunctive is used according to *Rem.* 2, *Less.* 72; that is, after a relative, with an antecedent implying comparison, *pas* or *point* may be omitted.

Is there a man who knows not that?	Y a-t-il un homme qui ne sache cela?
Have you a friend who is not mine?	Avez-vous un ami que ne soit des miens?

In answering a question, *point* may be used alone; *pas* can not.

Do you wish for some? No,	Est-ce que vous en voulez? Point,
Are you angry? No,	Est-ce que vous êtes fâché? Point.

And I also. And they also,	*Et moi aussi. Et eux aussi,*
And he also. And she also,	Et lui aussi. Et elle aussi,
An *herb, grass.* Dry grass,	Une *herbe.* L' herbe seche,
To awake. To arouse,	*Éveiller. Réveiller,*
To awake,	*S' éveiller, se réveiller,*
The least noise wakes him,	Le moindre bruit l' éveille,
I awoke at five o'clock,	Je me suis éveillé à cinq heures,
A *verb.* A *substantive,*	Un *verbe.* Un *substantif,*
To prepare. He prepares the dinner,	*Préparer.* Il prépare le dîner,
Masculine. Feminine,	*Masculin. Féminin,*
Tolerably. To dream,	*Passablement. Rêver,* (*à* before noun,)
He dreams all night,	Il rêve toute la nuit,
He goes to the *dancing-school,*	Il va à l' *école de danse,*
The *strawberry.* The *cherry,*	La *fraise.* La *cerise,*
The *author.* The *poet,*	L' *auteur,* (masculine,) Le *poëte,*
That author is a poet,	Cet auteur est poëte,
A *marriage. To delay,*	Un *mariage. Tarder,* (*à* bef. infinitive,)
He has delayed too long to come,	Il a trop tardé à venir,
To pour. Pour me some water,	*Verser.* Versez-moi de l' eau,
To confess. He confesses his crime,	*Confesser.* Il confesse son crime,
The *mistress.* The schoolmistress,	*La maîtresse.* La maîtresse d' école.
A *story.* A *wheel,*	Un *étage.* Une *roue,*
A two-story house,	Une maison à deux étages,
A four-wheel carriage,	Une voiture à quatre roues,
Between. Between us,	*Entre.* Entre nous,
Beer. A beer-glass,	*De la bière.* Un verre à bière,
A wine-glass,	Un verre à vin,
To employ to advantage. He employs his talents to advantage,	*Faire valoir.* Il fait valoir ses talents.

Sir, your servant; where are you going at such a rate (*donc ainsi?*) you look as if you were very much hurried. Not exactly; (*précisément;*) I am going to the house of my cousin, Mr. Cook. Is not his lady sick? She has been sick, but she feels herself much better now (*maintenant.*) I am delighted at it. What is the news? Have you read the newspaper? Yes, but there is nothing interesting. Apropos, I have a piece of news (*une nouvelle*) to inform (*apprendre*) you of. Mr. Brown marries Miss Hewes. Is it possible! I should never have thought of (*à*) such a marriage. Nor I either, (*moi non plus,*) I assure you; and it is a thing very strange. Excuse me, (*pardon,*) sir; I am obliged to leave (*quitter*) you; they are waiting for me at

home. Good evening, sir. Good night. Is the sick man quiet? Yes, sir; he has slept quietly all night. Are these two scholars equal in merit? No, sir; this one is a little better than that; but they are esteemed equally by the master. Have your cousins begun to study Spanish? They have begun, and I also. Do you like the language? I like it much, and they also. Is the grass high? It is not yet high; it is thick and short.

At what hour did they wake you this morning? Did not your father forbid that one should wake him (rouse him up?) I awoke three or four times last night; did you sleep well? I awake every day at six o'clock; do you always wake at a certain (*certaine*) hour? Are there many irregular (*irréguliers*) verbs in French? Do you understand all the verbs perfectly? Is that substantive masculine or feminine? Are there more masculine than feminine substantives in French? What is the physician preparing? Is he not preparing a medicine for the sick man? Have you prepared every thing to receive our friends? This wine is tolerably good; do you wish for some? I recited my lesson tolerably well; how did you recite yours? I have done nothing but dream all night; do you often dream? Yes, sir; I am subject (*sujet*) to dreaming every night. What did you dream? I dreamed that I was traveling in France. Do you go to the dancing-school on Monday? I go to the writing (*d'écriture*) school Monday, and to the dancing-school Tuesday. I have bought some strawberries and cherries; do you wish for some? Do you like strawberries better than cherries? Is that author a poet? (*Less.* 94, *Rem.* 4.) Are the ancient (*anciens*) poets greater than the modern (*modernes?*) Does not the marriage of your friend take place this evening? Why do you delay to learn your lesson? Do not delay; have you not delayed too long (*trop?*) Please to pour some water on my hands; have you poured some in the glass?

Has the thief confessed his crime? He has confessed all. What has the mistress of that house to sell? She wishes to sell this three story house, and a new four-wheel carriage. Do you drink beer? I hardly ever drink any, and my brother, who is a member of the temperance society, (*la société de tempérance,*) does not drink any at all. What have you bought? I have just bought six beer-

glasses and a dozen wine-glasses. Where is my seat (*siège* ?) It is here between your brother and me. Does that house suit your brother ? Certainly ; can one find a house that does not suit him ? (*Rem.* 3.)

There were seen (*on vit*) on the plains (*plaines*) of Zama the two greatest generals of their time, to engage in (*donner*) a battle which was to decide (*décider*) the fate (*du sort*) of Rome and of Carthage. Scipio (*Scipion*) opposed (*opposa*) the flower of his army (*armée*) to the weakest part (*la plus faible partie*) of the army of the enemy. Hannibal (*Annibal*) intended to break (*rompre*) the Roman lines (*lignes*) by means (*au moyen*) of his elephants, (*éléphants,*) and to attack (*attaquer*) afterward (*ensuite*) upon all points (*points*) at once. Scipio perceived his intention, (*intention,*) and placed (*plaça*) his light infantry (*infanterie légère*) opposite to the (*vis-à-vis des*) elephants. At the moment when these terrible animals took their start, (*élan,*) the infantry of Scipio opened to the right and left ; the elephants, which their conductors (*conducteurs*) could not stop, passed the openings (*les intervalles*) which Scipio had provided (*ménagés*) for them, and which closed again (*refermèrent*) immediately ; then the Roman general executed (*exécuta*) his plan (*plan*) with much presence (*présence*) of mind. It was five hundred and fifty years after the founding (*la fondation*) of Rome, that P. Cornelius Scipio conquered at Zama the only republic which could struggle (*lutter*) against the rising (*naissante*) greatness of Rome.

98. QUATRE-VINGT-DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

PROPER NAMES, ETC.

REMARK 1. Latin and Greek proper names, which in English terminate in *al* or *is*, those of two syllables in *us*, and masculine in *a*, are commonly the same in both languages ; as *Juvenal*, *Vénus*, *Caligula*.

Feminines in *a*, names in *as* and *es*, and those of more than two syllables in *us*, generally change these terminations in French into *e* mute ; as, Diana, *Diane ;* Orpheus, *Orphée ;* Socrates, *Socrate*.

Terminations in *ander* are changed into *andre*, and those in *o* into *on ;* as Alexander *Alexandre ;* Cicero, *Cicéron*.

Proper names of places ending in *a*, change *a* into *e* mute, and those in *burg* change it into *bourg ;* as, Arabia, *l' Arabie ;* Hamburg, *Hambourg*.

I have no money, nor you either,	Je n' ai pas d' argent, *ni vous non plus*,
He has none, nor I either,	Il n' en a pas, ni moi non plus,
Free. He was born free,	*Libre*, (*de* bef. inf. and noun.) Il est né libre,
Amusing. A *pity*,	*Amusant. Dommage*, (*de* before inf.)
It is a pity to lose that,	C' est dommage de perdre cela,
It is a pity that he is sick,	C' est dommage qu' il soit malade,
To preserve. He preserves his fruit,	*Conserver.* Il conserve son fruit,
To attack. He attacked the enemy,	*Attaquer.* Il attaqua l' ennemi,
Is playing cards amusing?	Est-il amusant de jouer aux cartes?
A *part.* He has his part,	Une *part.* Il a sa part,
The *throat.* My throat is sore,	La *gorge.* J' ai mal à la gorge,
That *food.* The food is good,	Cet *aliment.* L' aliment est bon,
Christ. The religion of Christ,	Le *Christ.* La religion du Christ,
The *memory.* His memory is good,	La *mémoire.* Sa mémoire est bonne,
The *creator.* God is the creator,	Le *créateur.* Dieu est le créateur,
To create. God created the heavens,	*Créer.* Dieu créa le ciel,
A *mustard-pot.* A *coffee-cup*,	Un *pot à moutarde.* Une *tasse à cafe.*

Remark 2. The preposition *à* is thus used to denote what a cup or vessel is intended to contain. It takes the article only with those which sometimes mean both the vessel and its contents.*

A *milk-pot.* A *pepper-box*,	Un *pot au lait.* Une *boîte au poivre*,
A *line.* A right (or straight) line,	Une *ligne.* Une ligne droite,
A *catholic.* He is a catholic,	Un *catholique.* Il est catholique,
Go away. Let us go away,	Allez-vous-en. Allons-nous-en,
A *bridge.* The bridge is *broken*,	Un *pont.* Le pont est *rompu*,
Across, through. Through the woods,	*À travers.* À travers les bois,
The *page.* That page is small,	La *page.* Cette page est petite,
A *pail.* A pail of water,	Un *seau.* Un seau d' eau,
The *shovel.* The *tongs*,	La *pelle.* Les *pincettes*, (feminine,)
The *hearth.* On the hearth,	Le *foyer.* Sur le foyer,
He desires us to go away,	Il a envie que nous nous en allions,
A *railroad*,	Un *chemin de fer*,
He goes by the railroad,	Il va par le chemin de fer,
You pronounce French well,	Vous prononcez bien le français,
I ask your pardon,	Je vous demande pardon,
There is no occasion for it,	Il n' y a pas de quoi.

* We sometimes say, *Give me the vinegar-bottle*, when we wish only for the vinegar; *Give me the pepper-box*, when we wish only for the pepper. But we do not use tea-cup or wine-glass to denote their contents. Accordingly we say in French, *la bouteille* AU *vinaigre*, *le pot* AU *lait*; but without the article, *la tasse* À *thé*, *le verre* À *vin*.

Good morning, sir; I am very glad to meet you at last; (*enfin;*) it is an age since I saw you. I was in the country; I have passed there the beautiful season, and now I come again to town, (*rentre en ville,*) to pass here the winter. I hope that I shall have the pleasure of seeing you sometimes. Oh, yes, certainly; come and see (*Less.* 95, *Rem.* 1) me next week; we will dine together. Can I count on you? Yes; you are very good; I shall not fail. Do you pronounce French well? I do not pronounce it well, nor my brother either; do you pronounce it well? I pronounce it better than I speak it. Are there any people who are entirely (*tout-à-fait*) free? There are very few; I am not entirely free, nor you either. Have you and your brothers read this amusing book? No, sir; I have not read it, nor they either. It is a pity that you have not preserved your letters; do you preserve mine? I preserve them all. Did not the Irishman attack that workman? He attacked him in the street with (*à*) blows of a stick. Where are the shovel and tongs? They are on the hearth; do you need (have you need of) them? Give me the tongs, and put the shovel in the other room on the hearth. What is the matter with you? I have taken a little cold, and I have a sore throat. How many parts have they made of that inheritance (*héritage?*) They have made three; each one has his part. Do you like simple (*simples*) food? I always prefer simple food, because it is the most healthy. Will you accept this fruit? I thank you, sir. There is no occasion for it.

Has not Christ commanded us to do good to our enemies? Does not our memory sometimes deceive us? God is the creator of heaven and earth; did he create them in six days? Did he create all things from nothing? Is he not always creating something new? You set out for Charleston to-morrow; do you go by railroad or by steamboat? Will you return by the railroad? I wish to buy some tea-cups and some wine-glasses; are there some in this store? Have you bought also a mustard-pot and a pepper-box? Do you wish for the vinegar-bottle or the pepper-box? Is that line entirely straight? Can you make a line which is perfectly straight? Are not the Irish generally catholics? How many bridges are there in London? Is the largest one of stone or of wood? Can you see the sun through

this fog? Does one go to the mountain through these woods? At what page of this book do you begin to recite? Do you begin at the tenth line on the hundred and fiftieth page? Is there water in that pail? Tell the servant to bring a pail of water; is he not in the yard? Is your friend a catholic? Does he who has a good memory always have judgment? If one desired that his son should be learned, that he should know history and several sciences, that he should read the ancient languages, and that he should speak some of the modern, would it not be proper that he should grant him much time?

A man loaded with debts, being at the point of death, (*sur le point de mourir,*) said to his confessor, (*confesseur,*) "that the only favor (*la faveur*) which he asked of heaven, was to preserve his life, in order that he might be able to pay his creditors." "Very well," replied the priest, "since (*puisque*) your motive for desiring life is so just, I desire that your prayers (*prières*) may be heard." "Ah! my father, could (*puissent*) they be so! for I am sure that if I live until I pay my debts, I shall never die."

Hannibal could (*sut*) escape from an ignominious captivity (*ignominieuse captivité*) by swallowing (*en avalant*) the poison (*poison*) which he carried always about (*sur*) him. Such was the end which fortune reserved (*réservait*) to this great man for the price of the passage of the Alps, (*Alpes,*) and of the victories (*victoires*) of Trebia, of the lake of Thrasimenus, and of Cannæ (*Cannes.*) At the same epoch, (*époque,* fem.) the conqueror (*vainqueur*) of Hannibal left (*quitta*) Rome which he had saved, (*sauvée,*) and went to live at his country-seat (*campagne*) near Linternum, carrying into his retreat (*retraite*) only that which envy could not take from (*enlever*) him, his personal dignity (*dignité personnelle.*) There he died. The inhabitants of the place, persuaded (*persuadés*) that he had been admitted (*admis*) to the rank (*rang*) of the gods whom he had served, affirmed (*assuraient*) that a miraculous serpent (*serpent miraculeux*) defended the approach to his tomb, (*défendait l' accès de son tombeau,*) placed (*placé*) under a myrtle (*myrthe*) which he had planted (*planté*) himself, and under the shade of which he came often to repose (*se reposer.*)

99. QUATRE-VINGT-DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

ADJECTIVES, PARTICIPLES, ETC.

REMARK 1. Some French adjectives vary their signification as they are placed before or after their substantives. The following are a few:

A great man. *Un grand homme*,	A tall man. *Un homme grand*,
A weak or pitiable man. *Un pauvre homme*,	A poor man. *Un homme pauvre*,
A good man. *Un brave homme*,	A brave man. *Un homme brave*,
An honest man. *Un honnête homme*,	A polite man. *Un homme honnête*,
A worthy man. *Un galant homme*,	A lady's man. *Un homme galant*,
He had better learn French, (than Spanish,)	Il fera mieux d' apprendre le français. (que l' espagnol,)
He had better learn French,	Il fera bien d' apprendre le français

REMARK 2. In such sentences, *mieux* is used when there is comparison; *bien* when there is not.*

What a pity!	*Quel dommage!*
What a beautiful day!	Quelle belle journée!
A *flight of stairs.* A *fireman*,	Un *escalier.* Un *pompier*,
The fireman ascends the stairs,	Le pompier monte l' escalier,
I long. He longs,	*Il me tarde*, (*de* bef. inf.) *Il lui tarde*,
A *library.* The *parlor*,	Une *bibliothèque.* Le *salon*,
To get drunk. The *day before; eve*,	*S' enivrer.* La *veille*,
He gets drunk on brandy,	Il s' enivre d' eau de vie,
To aim at, (with a gun,)	*Coucher en joue*,
I aim at the bird,	Je couche l' oiseau en joue,
To be familiar with some thing,	*Être au fait de quelque chose*,
I am familiar with that,	Je suis au fait de cela,
They take that boy's hat,	On prend à ce garçon son chapeau, / On prend le chapeau de ce garçon.

REMARK 3. The former construction is used when the attention is directed more to the possessor.

According to circumstances,	*Selon* les circonstances,
A *priest.* A *preacher*,	Un *prêtre.* Un *prédicateur*,
To preach. He preaches well,	*Prêcher.* Il prêche bien,
Presbyterian. Episcopal,	*Presbytérien. Anglican*,

* When the question is between French and some other branch of study, we say: *Il fera mieux d' apprendre le français;* but when we recommend it without comparison, we say: *Il fera bien d' apprendre le français.*

Methodist. Unitarian,	*Méthodiste. Unitairien,*
Of course—that is understood,	*Cela va sans dire,*
What is that?	*Qu' est-ce que c' est que cela?* or, *Qu' est-ce que cela?* or, *Qu' est cela?*
I do not know what that is,	Je ne sais pas ce que c' est que cela,
What is it?	Qu' est-ce que c' est? or, Qu' est-ce?
I do not know what it is,	Je ne sais pas ce que c' est.

REMARK 4. *C' est*, with *à* before the infinitive, denotes *turn;* with *de*, *duty.*

It is your turn to begin,	C' est à vous à commencer,
It belongs to the master to teach,	C' est au maître d' enseigner,
A *romance*, *novel.* A moral novel,	Un *roman.* Un roman moral,
Christmas. Christmas *eve*, the day before Christmas,	La *Noël.* La *veille* de Noël,
A *chill*,	Un *frisson*,
The chill has attacked him,	Le frisson l' a pris.

REMARK 5. *What*, with an infinitive, is translated by *que*, and if the sentence be negative, *pas* is omitted.

I do not know what to do,	Je ne sais que faire,
He does not know what to say,	Il ne sait que dire,
Is this stick yours?	Ce bâton est-il à vous?
It is mine,	Il est à moi,
Whose knife is this?	À qui est ce couteau?
It is my brothers,	Il est à mon frère,
Is it his?	Est-il à lui?
Do these gloves belong to the boys?	Ces gants sont-ils aux garçons?
Are they theirs?	Sont-ils à eux?
They are theirs,	Ils sont à eux,
You do not know me?	Vous ne me connaissez pas?
Yes, indeed; I know you well,	Si fait; je vous connais bien.

Si fait is used familiarly to affirm what another denies or doubts; and sometimes in affirmative answers to negative questions.

I believe that he is not there,	Je crois qu' il n' est pas là,
Yes, indeed; he is there,	Si fait; il y est.

What a beautiful day? Yes, the weather is superb. It is long since we have had a time so beautiful and so healthy. Did you go to the play last evening? Yes, and I staid there until eleven; I amused myself much; the piece was very comic (*comique.*) And you; how did you pass the evening? I heard Jenny Lind. How did you find

her? Oh! I assure you that she merits well the name of *Queen of song.* You know that she has excited a rage (*fait fureur*) in New York. Do you wish us to study German or Italian? You had better study German. Had I not better take a walk every morning? Yes, sir; and you had better take a ride on horseback every evening. Did not the firemen go up those stairs? They ascended them, but they have come down again. Is that man a priest? No, sir; hē is a doctor. What did he wish for? He wished to borrow the most amusing book that there was in my library. How many books are there in your library? There are more than three thousand volumes. Have you not a library in the parlor? There are a few books there. Are there not two parlors in this house? There is a large one and a small one. Does that man get drunk often? He gets drunk every day on brandy, wine, or beer. Why do they take away that man's cloak? It is not his; he has stolen it.

They have taken the fruit from that boy; is it not his? Does the master pay the workmen according to their work? Does he praise each one according to his merit? Does that Catholic priest preach well? Is the Presbyterian preacher eloquent? Does he preach twice on Sunday? There are six churches in our village, two Presbyterian, one Episcopal, one Unitarian, one Methodist, and one Catholic; how many are there in yours? Have you been to church to-day? What preacher did you hear? Did he preach well? Will he preach this afternoon? It is your turn to recite your lesson; is it not? It is my turn to begin; is it not? It belongs to the master to teach and to the pupils to learn; does it not? Had I better read this novel? Have those who read many novels correct taste? Will you come and see me the day before Christmas? That man is sick, and knows not what to do; has not the fever attacked him? Has not the chill attacked him? Is that horse your father's? Is he not his? Is he yours? Are these gloves yours? Are they the ladies'? Are they not theirs? You have not seen my friend? Yes, indeed; I have seen him often. Have you not read this book? Yes, indeed; I have just read it.

Good remedies (*remèdes.*) For drunkenness, (*ivresse,*) drink pure water; for health, rise early; to be happy, be good; to please all, attend to (*mêlez-vous de*) your own (*propres*) affaires.

Man takes away (*dérobe*) the lightning (*la foudre*) from heaven; he rescues continents (*arrache des continents*) from the sea; he raises himself in the air; he measures the space which separates (*sépare*) the stars (*astres*) from the earth; he directs (*dirige*) the opinions of nations and decides (*décide de*) their fate; he embraces (*embrasse*) by a glance of the eye, the events of past ages, and acts upon the future; but he can not solve the great problem (*problème*) of his existence (*existence.*) Who are we? Whence come we? Whither are we going? Does the same destiny (*destinée*) await Cato the just, the good Titus, the virtuous Marcus Aurelius, (*Marc-Aurèle,*) and the sanguinary (*sanguinaire*) Nero? Nothing here below answers to our dreams of perfection. The hope (*espoir*) of a future without limits, (*bornes*) raises us above (*au-dessus du*) the visible (*visible*) world, and lets us have a glimpse of (*entrevoir*) an immense perspective (*immense perspective*) of progress toward perfection.

100. CENTIÈME LEÇON.

NOUNS, IDIOMS, ETC.

It lacks, it wants,	***Il s' en faut,*** (gov. subjunctive,)

Remark 1. *Il s' en faut*, accompanied by an interrogation, a negative, or words having the force of a negative, as, *guère, peu, presque rien*, etc., takes *ne* before the subjunctive.

It wants much for me to be rich,	Il s' en faut beaucoup que je sois riche,
It does not want much for him to be rich,	Il ne s' en faut pas beaucoup qu' il *ne* soit riche,
It wants little for us to be young,	Il ne s' en faut guère que nous *ne* soyons jeunes,
To have a grudge against some one,	***En vouloir à quelqu' un,***
He has a grudge against that man,	Il en veut à cet homme,
To call one thou and thee,	***Tutoyer,***
They call each other thou and thee,	Ils se tutolent.

Thee and *thou* sometimes denote familiarity and endearment. (*Less.* 15, *Rem.* 1.)

To lay blame on, to find fault with,	***S' en prendre à,***
He lays blame on me,	Il s' en prend à moi,

To marry. They will marry,	*Se marier.* Ils se marieront,
Your sister marries my brother,	Votre sœur se marie avec mon frère,
To find fault with, to blame,	*Trouver à redire à,*
He finds fault with what I do,	Il trouve à redire à ce que je fais,
To manage. He manages badly,	*S' y prendre.* Il s' y prend mal,
The strife is who,	*C' est à qui,*
The strife is who shall play,	C' est à qui jouera.

REMARK 2. When nouns of different genders are qualified by a following adjective, not common gender, the sound requires the masculine noun to be placed last.

A white handkerchief and cravat,	Une cravate et un mouchoir blancs,*
To fight. He fights with his cousin,	*Se battre.* Il se bat avec son cousin,
To be at stake. His life is at stake,	*Y aller de.* Il y va de sa vie,
It is all over with us,	*C' est fait de nous,*
How! How tall you are!	*Que!* Que vous êtes grands!
How good she is! How foolish he is!	Qu' elle est bonne! Qu' il est sot!
Since. Since he wishes it I will go there,	*Puisque.* Puisqu' il le veut j' irai là.

REMARK 3. A noun in the predicate (as in *Less.* 94, *Rem.* 4) takes the indefinite article, if *ce* or *cela* be the subject, or if it be limited by other words.

He is a soldier,	Il est soldat, or, c' est un soldat,
He is a doctor. He is a good doctor,	Il est docteur. C' est un bon docteur,
To be in vain,	*Avoir beau,*
It is in vain for him to study,	Il a beau étudier,
It is in vain for that man to work,	Cet homme a beau travailler.

REMARK 4. The imperfect of *venir*, followed by *de* and an infinitive, denotes that something had just been done.

I had just arrived,	Je venais d' arriver,
He had just gone away,	Il venait de s' en aller,
At all events, however it may be,	*Quoi qu' il en soit,*
He may be sick, at all events he will not come,	Il se peut qu' il soit malade, quoi qu' il en soit il ne viendra pas,
To get angry. He gets angry with me,	*Se fâcher.* Il se fâche contre moi,
To overlook, to command a view of,	*Donner sur,*
The window overlooks the garden,	La fenêtre donne sur le jardin,
At what point?	*Où en?*
At what point did we stop?	Où est-ce que nous en sommes restés?
There is where we stopped,	Voilà où nous en sommes restés,
To leave it to,	*S' en rapporter à,*

* To say *un mouchoir et une cravate blancs*, would be placing the feminine noun next to a masculine adjective, which offends the ear. *Un homme et une femme aimables.* This does not offend the ear, because *aimable* is common gender, and may stand by a noun feminine

I leave it to yourself,	Je m' en rapporte à vous-même,
To fail of satisfying,	*Laisser à désirer*,
He fails much of satisfying,	Il laisse beaucoup à désirer,
She is defective in nothing,	Elle ne laisse rien à désirer.

Remark 5. A collective noun followed by another noun in the plural, generally takes a plural verb. If, however, it be limited so as to give unity to the idea, the singular is to be used.

A dozen men have come,	Une douzaine d' hommes sont venus,
That dozen of apples is on the table,	Cette douzaine de pommes est sur la table.

I believe that the captain will not come here to-morrow because the rain which has been has rendered the roads too bad; do you think that he will come? I think that he will come, for I know the captain: he loves to see his friends, and he will do all that he has said. My professor has given me an exercise very long to write, and four lessons to learn by heart; all that for to-morrow at half-past two of the afternoon; it is too much, I shall never be able to do it; and if he thinks that I can, he deceives himself much. Do you believe that that is possible? No, you can not do all that, nor I either. Do you want much of having finished that lesson? I want little of having finished this one, but I have not begun to study the others. Does it want much of your being as tall as I? No, sir; it wants an inch (*un pouce*) of your being as tall as I. Have you not a grudge against that man? No, sir; I have no grudge against any one. Against whom has he a grudge? He has a grudge against us. Will that gentleman and lady marry? Yes, sir; they will marry the day before Christmas.

Will your sister marry my cousin? That man has lost his money, and he lays blame on me; is it not very unjust? That scholar lays the blame on me, as if I had torn his book; did he not tear it himself? I have found nothing to blame in that work; is it not very good? My friend conducts himself well; do you find fault with what he has done? The mistress of that house is very able; how does she manage to gain so much money? Does she not manage very well? That young lady is charming; the strife is who shall dance with her; are you acquainted with her? The strife is who shall hear Jenny Lind sing; have you heard her? I have lost some black gloves and cravats; have you seen them? My friend has amiable

brothers and sisters; are you acquainted with them? Those boys behave themselves badly; have they not fought several times? Does not the Irishman fight with his friend? Do all that you can; is not this man's life at stake? Is not his fortune at stake? That man is in his last moments; it is all over with him; is it not? How good that man is! are you not much obliged to him? How beautiful that child is! is he your brother? Since you have sufficient money will you not travel? Since the master desires it, shall we not learn German?

Is that man a priest? Yes, sir; he is a Catholic priest. Is he a preacher? He is a very good preacher. Are you acquainted with that man with the white hat? Yes, sir; he is a German. Is he a poet? He is a German poet. It is in vain for that man to study; he will never learn French; will he? No, sir; he has no memory. It is vain for you to gain money; you will lose it immediately; will you not? No, sir; I shall keep it all. Had you not just arisen when I saw you this morning? No, sir; I had been up more than two hours. Had you breakfasted? I had just breakfasted. With whom does your neighbor get angry? He often gets angry with me. Do your windows overlook the garden? The one overlooks the garden and the other the street. At what point did you stop in the book which you were reading? Here is where I stopped, at the first line of the tenth page. Have you been long acquainted with that man? No, sir; I have never seen him before; (*auparavant;*) but he is very familiar; (*familier;*) he calls every body thou and thee. John, why dost thou not call me thou and thee as your brother does? old (*anciens*) school companions, like thee and me, ought to call each other thou and thee; be not so cold in future as thou art at present.

II. M. de B. is always in love with (*amoureux de*) his wife, who does not partake (*partage*) at all (of) this sentiment. One day, after having reproached (*reproché*) her with (to her) the cold tone (*ton*) and the ceremonious (*cérémonieuses*) manners which she constantly has with him, he besought (*conjurait*) her to call him thou and thee: "Well!" replied madame de B., "*go thou away.*"

My Dear Sir, Washington, Jan. 8th, 1851.

I have been in this city two weeks. Congress is in session, and I have given some attention to its proceedings (*sa marche.*) The gov-

ernment of the United States is divided into three departments; (*départements;*) *the executive*, (*exécutif,*) *the legislative*, (*législatif,*) and the *judicial* (*judiciaire.*) The executive consists of (*consiste en*) a president and his advisers, called the cabinet; the legislative consists of a senate and house of representatives; the judicial is composed (*composé*) of nine judges of the supreme (*suprême*) court, with several judges of the inferior (*inférieures*) courts.

The senate is composed of two members furnished (*fournis*) by each state. The number of senators is accordingly (*donc*) sixty-two. The vice-president of the United States is president of the senate. The house of representatives is composed of representatives sent by each state, in the proportion, (*à raison,*) at present, of one for seventy thousand six hundred and eighty inhabitants, but the proportion is changed every ten years. The number of the members is now two hundred and thirty-three. The salary of the members is eight dollars a day during the session. The vice-president receives five thousand, and the president, twenty-five thousand dollars a year. The expenses per minute of the administration of Washington were three dollars eighty-two cents; of the elder (*aîné*) Adams, two dollars fifty-eight cents; of Jefferson, nine dollars ninety-five cents; of Madison, thirty-four dollars eighty-eight cents; of Monroe, twenty-five dollars eighteen cents; of the younger (*cadet*) Adams, twenty-four dollars thirty-five cents; of Jackson, thirty-five dollars fifteen cents; of Van Buren, sixty-five dollars seventy-eight cents; of Tyler, forty-three dollars ninety-five cents; of Polk, a hundred and forty-five dollars and eighty-eight cents. I will write you more soon. Your very humble servant,

CHARLES BRUIN.

An officer having become blind of one eye in war, carried an eye ot glass, which he took care to take out when he went to bed. Happening to be in a tavern, (*une auberge,*) he calls the maid and gives her that eye, in order that she may lay (*pose*) it on the table. The maid, however, did not stir (*bougeait.*) The officer, losing patience, said to her: "Well! what are you waiting for there?" "Sir," answered she, "I am waiting for you to give me the other."

The winters of Siberia are subject to storms. Often at the moment when the sky appears the most serene, (*serein,*) terrible hurricanes come

suddenly to obscure it (*l' obscurcir.*) Issuing (*partis*) from two opposite points of the horizon, the one comes loaded with the ices (*glaces*) of the north sea, and the other with the stormy whirlwinds (*tourbillons orageux*) of the Caspian (*mer Caspienne.*) If they meet, if they strike each other, (*se choquent,*) the fir-trees (*sapins*) oppose (*opposent*) in vain to their fury (*furie*) their robust trunks (*troncs robustes*) and their long pyramids; (*pyramides ;*) in vain the birches (*bouleaux*) bend (*ploient*) even to the earth their flexible branches (*flexibles rameaux*) and their trembling foliage; (*mobile feuillage ;*) every thing is broken, (*rompu,*) every thing is overthrown, and immense spaces are covered with the ruins (*ruines*) of nature.

A countryman having learned that another, his debtor, was at the point of death, (*à l' agonie,*) ran to his house to get paid (*se faire payer.*) The insolvent (*insolvable*) debtor said to him with a voice almost extinguished, (*éteinte,*) "Let me die in peace." "By the powers, no;" replied the countryman, "you shall not die unless I be paid."

Politeness, says president Witherspoon, is real (*une réelle*) goodness expressed with goodness; an admirable definition, (*définition admirable,*) and so brief (*brève*) that all can easily retain (*retenir*) it. Put it in practice, (*pratique,*) and every body will be charmed with your manners.

A good old man, being very sick, had his wife called, who was still very young, and said to her: "My dear, you see that my last hour approaches, and that I am forced (*forcé*) to leave you. Therefore, (*c' est pourquoi*) if you wish me to die in peace, it is necessary that you do me a favor (*une grâce.*) You are still young, and without doubt you will marry again, I know it; but I pray you not to take Mr. Lewis, for I confess that I have always been very jealous (*jaloux*) of him, and that I am so still. I should die then in despair (*désespéré*) if you did not promise me that." The wife answered: "My dear, I intreat (*supplie*) you, let not that hinder you from dying in peace, for I assure you, that even though I wished to espouse him, I could not, being already promised to another."

The mayor (*maire*) of a small village of France, being obliged to give a passport (*passe-port*) to a distinguished personage (*personnage distingué*) who was blind of one eye, was afraid of offending him by mentioning his deformity, when he wished to describe (*dépeindre*) his

person. To avoid this, and to fulfill at the same time the rigorous (*rigoureuses*) obligations of his charge, he employed (*employa*) the following expedient (*expédient.*) He wrote on the passport: "Large and beautiful black eyes, one of which is absent."

A lion of the grand duke (*duc*) of Tuscany, (*Toscane,*) having got out of the menagerie, (*la ménagerie,*) entered into the city of Florence, and spread there much panic (*épouvante.*) Among the fugitives (*fugitifs*) there happened to be a woman who was carrying a child in her arms, and who let him fall. The lion seized him (*s' en saisit*) and appeared ready to devour (*dévorer*) him, when the mother, transported (*transportée*) by the most tender (*tendre*) impulse (*mouvement*) of nature, returned upon her steps, threw herself at the feet of the lion, and asked of him her child. He looked at her fixedly; (*fixement;*) her cries (*cris*) and her weeping (*pleurs*) seemed to touch him; at last (*enfin*) he put the child upon the ground, without having done him the least harm. Unhappiness and despair (*désespoir*) have then an expression which makes itself understood by monsters (*monstres*) the most fierce (*farouches.*) But what is, without doubt, the most admirable, is that blind and sublime impulse which precipitates (*précipite*) the mother on the steps of the ferocious (*féroce*) animal, before which all fly (*fuit.*)

Mahomet desired to bring back his countrymen (*compatriotes*) to their ancient manners (*mœurs.*) He was acquainted with the doctrine of Moses, (*Moïse,*) and that of the Christians. He knew that the Jews (*Juifs*) flattered themselves to see appear at last, the Saviour (*Sauveur*) of Israel, and that Jesus Christ had promised to his disciples to send them the *spirit of truth which would conduct them into all truth.* His exalted (*exaltée*) imagination persuaded him (*lui persuada*) that he was destined (*destiné*) to accomplish (*accomplir*) the hopes (*espérances*) of the Jews and of the Christians. At the age of forty years, he saw in a dream (*en songe*) the archangel (*archange*) Gabriel, who called him to be the prophet of the Most High (*Très-Haut.*) He communicated (*communiqua*) that vision to his wife and to his cousin; and whether he deceived himself, (or) whether he wished to impose on them, (*leur en imposer,*) he spoke to them with the fire of inspiration.

SYNOPSIS OF GRAMMAR:

WITH

RECAPITULATIONS, ADDITIONS, AND REFERENCES.

ARTICLES.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Le, (mas.) *La*, (fem.) *L'* bef. a vow. and silent *h*,	The,	*Les*, (masc. and feminine.)	The,
Du, (comp. of *de*, *le*.)	Of the,	*Des*, (comp. of *de les*.)	Of the,
Au, (comp. of *à*, *le*.)	To the,	*Aux*, (comp. of *à les*.)	To the.

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

Un, (mas.) *Une*, (fem.) A, one, *Uns*, (mas.) *Unes*, (fem.) Ones.

1. Articles agree with their nouns in gender and number, (p. 69 and 129.)

2. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE IS USED with nouns in a general sense; as, *Le sucre est doux. Aimez-vous le café?* (p. 98.)

3. It is also used with nouns in a definite sense, as in English; as, *Aimez-vous le café que je vous donne?*

4. This article together with *de*, is used also with nouns in a partitive sense; as, *Il a* DU *papier. Nous avons* DES *amis*, (p. 103.)

To this last rule there are two exceptions.

1. When the partitive is accompanied by a negative, it takes *de* without the article; as, *Je n' ai pas* DE *biscuit.*

2. When it is immediately preceded by an adjective, it takes *de* without the article; as, *Vous avez* DE *bons livres*, (p. 103.)

If, however, an adjective preceding a partitive noun be compounded with it, making essentially but one word, as *bon mot*, the article is used; as, *Je ne connais rien de désagréable comme* DES *petits-maîtres.* So also is the article employed with a negative partitive, where the idea is essentially affirmative;* as, *Cet homme est riche; n' a-t-il pas* DE *l' argent?*

* The question, *N' avez-vous point* DE *pain?* is simply an inquiry whether you have bread. *N' avez-vous pas* DU *pain?* expresses that the speaker supposes you to have bread. The article is to be inserted or omitted, according as the affirmative or negative sense is intended.

(p. 125.) Also, with one which is followed by an adjective, relative pronoun, or clause which effectually limits its meaning; as, *Je ne vous ferai pas* DES *reproches frivoles*,*—*On ne soulage pas* DES *douleurs qu' on méprise*, (p. 214–15.)

5. The definite article is used in preference to the possessive adjectives, *mon*, *son*, etc., when the possessor is otherwise sufficiently denoted; as, *J' ai mal à* LA *tête*, (p. 127.) But otherwise, the adjective is to be used; as, *Je vois que ma jambe s' enfle.*†

The possessive adjective is sometimes used instead of the article, to denote something permanent, SA *goutte le tourmente.* MA *tête me fait mal.* Here it is meant that the evil is continuous or returns periodically.

6. The definite article is used with titles and epithets prefixed to proper names, as, *Le docteur Smith*, *Le général Taylor*, (p. 89.)

It is sometimes used to denote what is habitual; as, *Je prends* LE *thé*, *Il va à l' église* LE *dimanche.*

7. It is generally used with names of countries; as, *La France est plus grande que la Suisse*, (p. 176.)

Except countries having the same name as their capital, which omit the article, *Naples et Corfou sont des pays délicieux.*

Except also those preceded by *en* and *de*, and *France* preceded by *pour*; as, *Il va en Espagne*, *Nous venons d' Angleterre*, *Je pars pour France.*

The following, however, are seldom used without the article, *Le Canada*, *le Brésil*, *la Guadeloupe*, *la Guyane*, *la Jamaïque*, *le Pérou*, *la Louisiane*, *l' Abyssinie*, *la Guinée*, *les Moluques*; also, very remote countries generally, and names of mountains; as, *l' empire* DU *Brésil*, *les mines* DU *Pérou.*

8. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE IS OMITTED with the names of cities, except those formed from common nouns; *Il va à Londres et au Hâvre.*‡

9. It is omitted with a noun forming one idea with a verb; as, *J' ai* BESOIN, *Il prend* GARDE, *Ils ont* FROID.

10. With a noun which with a preposition qualifies another noun; as, *une maison* DE PIERRE, *Un bateau* À VAPEUR.

11. With a noun which with a preposition forms an adverbial phrase; as, *en vérité*, *par cœur*, *avec courage.*

12. With a noun which follows *de* after an adverb or noun of quantity; as, *Beaucoup* D' ARGENT, *Peu* D' AMIS, *Une douzaine* D' HOMMES.

Except *bien* and *la plupart*; as, *Bien de l' argent*, *La plupart des hommes.*

---

* If the speaker means to say, I will make you no reproaches, frivolous things that they are, he would employ *de reproches frivoles*, because the adjective does not limit effectually the noun; but if he mean, I will make you no frivolous reproaches, but some of importance, the adjective limits the noun, and he would employ *des reproches frivoles.*

† In the first of these sentences, the possessor is sufficiently indicated. I can have a pain in no one's head but my own, hence *la* is used: but I can see another's leg swell as well as my own, and hence *ma* is used in the second sentence.

‡ *Hâvre* signifies haven; and being formed from a common noun, it takes the article

13. The articles are omitted in French, though not in English, before nouns in apposition with a preceding noun or sentence; as, *Ulysse*, PÈRE *de Télémaque; Tous les peuples de la terre ont une idée d' un Être suprême*, PREUVE EVIDENTE *que le péché originel n' a pas tout-à-fait obscurci l' entendement.*

They are sometimes omitted to give energy or rapidity to discourse; as, *Pauvreté n' est pas vice.*

14. THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE is omitted before a noun predicate qualifying the subject; as, *Je suis* SOLDAT. But, when *ce* or *cela* is the subject, or when the noun predicate is qualified by some word or phrase, the article is used; as, *C' est* UN SOLDAT, *Je suis* UN SOLDAT *du roi.*

15. The articles are repeated before each noun in the same construction, and before each adjective which refers to a separate noun; as, LE *cœur*, L' *esprit*, LES *mœurs, tout gagne à la culture.* LE *vieux et* LE *jeune soldat*, (referring to different persons;) LE *vieux et brave soldat*, (referring to the same person.)

NOUNS.

All nouns in French are either masculine or feminine. The names of males are masculine, and those of females, feminine. In regard to inanimate objects, their genders can not be reduced to rules;* but it may be useful to bear in mind, that nouns ending in *ion* are generally feminine, and those ending in *ment* masculine. *Au, an, in, lon,* and *ron,* may also be taken, with few exceptions, as masculine terminations. The names of countries, with some exceptions, are feminine, (p. 176.)

PLURAL OF NOUNS.

I. THE PLURAL OF FRENCH NOUNS, as we have seen in the preceding lessons, is generally formed by adding an *s* the singular, (p. 69.) Nouns terminating in *s, x, z,* are unchanged in the plural, (p. 71.) Those in *al* are changed to *aux*, and those in *au, eu,* take an *x* for the plural, (p. 74.)

The following exceptions have, many of them, been given in the lessons:

1. Seven in *ou* take *x; bijou*, a jewel; *caillou*, a flint; *chou*, a cabbage; *genou*, the knee; *joujou*, a toy; *hibou*, an owl; and *pou*, a louse. Also, *landau* makes *landaus.*

* The impossibility of reducing the genders of French nouns to rules, is the less to be regretted, as genders are always best learned by practice. The learner who has said *le magasin, la maison, mon livre, ma plume*, a few times, will not be likely to misapply to these words the article or pronoun, and would rely more on practice than on rules, were they much more simple and complete than those of the French genders can possibly be. Hence especial care has been taken to give the gender of each noun in the preceding lessons.

2. The following in *al* take *s* in the plural: *aval*, an indorsement; *bal*, a ball; *cal*, a callosity; *cantal*, a kind of cheese; *carnaval*, a carnival; *cérémonial*, ceremonial; *nopal*, a kind of plant; *pal*, a pale; *régal*, an entertainment; *sandal*, sandal wood; and names of animals, except *cheval*.

3. The following in *ail* have *aux* in the plural: *bail*, lease; *corail*, coral; *émail*, enamel; *plumail*, a feather-brush; *soupirail*, vent; *ventail*, leaf of a door; *vitraux*, large panes of glass for churches, is seldom used in the singular, *vitrail*. *Travail*, labor, has plural *travaux*; *travail*, a machine in which horses are shod, also the accounts rendered by a public minister, has plural *travails*.

Ciel, heaven, has plural *cieux*; *ciel*, tester of a bed, also sky in painting, has plural *ciels*.

Œil, the organ of vision, plural *yeux*; *œil*, a term of art, plural *œils*.

Aïeul, ancestor, plural *aïeux*; *aïeul*, grandfather, and grandmother, *aïeuls*.

Ail, garlic, has its plural *aulx*.

Bétail and *bestiaux* have the same signification; the former has no plural, and the latter no singular.

In words of more than one syllable, ending in *ent* or *ant*, the final *t* may be either retained or dropped in the plural; as, *enfants* or *enfans*, *présents* or *présens*.* With monosyllables it must always be retained, except in *gent*, which always has plural *gens*.

4. Proper names are generally unchanged in the plural; as, *Les deux Sénèque*, *Les deux Corneille*.

Proper names, however, take the plural termination when used, like common nouns, to denote classes rather than individuals; as, *les Bourbons*, *les Condés*, *les Guises*, *les Stuarts*, *la France a eu ses Césars*.

II. 1. When a noun and an adjective together form a compound noun, both words vary their terminations, for the plural; as, *Une fausse-clé*, *des fausses-clés*. Except *des terre-pleins*, where the sense does not admit *terre* in the plural, *des grand' mères*, *des grand' messes*, which are so written for euphony, and *des chevau-légers*.

2. When two nouns form a compound, also, both vary their terminations for the plural; as, *Chien-loup*, *chiens-loups*. Except *Des bec-figues*, *des appuis-main*, *des Hôtels-Dieu*, *des brêche-dents*, *des bains-Marie*, where the unaltered words express the idea of unity.

3. When two nouns united by a preposition make a compound, the first is varied to form the plural; as, *Un chef-d' œuvre*, *des chefs-d' œuvre*. Except *des coq-à-l' âne*, *des pied-à-terre*, *des tête-à-tête*, where the sense does not admit the plural nouns.

4. When a noun joined to a verb, preposition, or adverb, forms a compound, the noun is varied to form the plural; as, *Des contre-coups*, *des avant-coureurs*. But the following take no *s*, because there is unity in the idea: *Des serre-tête des réveille-matin*, *des contre-poison*; and the following take *s* both in the singular and plural, because there is always plurality in the idea: *un* or *des essuie-mains*, *un* or *des porte-mouchettes*, *cure-dents*, *porte-clefs*.

* The best authorities now follow the general rule, and always retain the final *t*.

Nouns compounded of invariable words are not varied to form the plural; as, *des pour-boire*, *des pince-sans-rire*, *des passe-partout*.

There are some eighty or more nouns in the French language which are masculine in one sense, and feminine in another. The detail of these may properly be left to the dictionary, but the following are among the most common:

	Masculine.	*Feminine.*
Aide,	helper,	assistance.
Couple,	two animated beings intimately united,	two things or animals of a sort.
Livre,	a book,	a pound.
Manche,	a handle of an instrument,	a sleeve.
Mémoire,	a memoir,	memory.
Mode,	mood,	fashion.
Page,	page of a prince,	page of a book.
Poêle,	a stove,	a frying-pan.
Poste,	a military station,	a post for letters.
Souris,	a smile,	a mouse.
Tour,	a turn,	a tower.
Voile,	a veil,	a sail.

Amour, signifying sexual passion, is sometimes feminine in the singular in poetry, and almost always feminine in the plural. In other senses it is masculine.

Automne is either masculine or feminine.

Chose is feminine; but *quelque chose*, meaning *something*, is masculine; as, *Il a fait quelque chose qui mérite d' être blâmé. Quelque chose*, meaning *whatever thing*, is feminine; as, *Quelque chose que je lui aie dite, je n' ai pu le convaincre.*

Couleur, which is commonly feminine, becomes masculine when followed by *de* and a noun to denote the kind of color; as, LE *couleur de feu*, LE *couleur de rose*, LE *couleur de chair*, etc.

Délice, singular, is masculine; in the plural, feminine.

Enfant, a boy, masculine; a girl, feminine, is always masculine in the plural.

Foudre, usually feminine, in elevated style is masculine.

Gens has the adjectives and participles preceding it feminine, and those following it masculine; as, *De fines gens—Des gens bien fins—De fort dangereuses gens—Des gens fort dangereux. Tous*, however, is used before *gens*, when it is followed by a limiting word or phrase; as, *Tous les gens sensés, tous ces gens-ci;* and, also, before an adjective of the common gender; as, *Tous les honnêtes gens.* Before other adjectives it is *toutes;* as, *Toutes les vieilles gens.* In *Gens de lettres, gens d' affaires, gens de robe, gens de bien, gens de cœur, gens de guerre*, and *jeunes gens*, it is always masculine.

Hymne, for the church, is feminine; all others masculine.

Orgue, singular, is masculine; in the plural, feminine.

ADJECTIVES.

The adjectives generally placed before the noun are the numerals, the adjective pronouns, and the following, when taken in their common meaning: *beau, bon, brave, cher, chétif, digne, grand, gros, jeune, joli, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre, petit, saint, sot, vieux, vrai,* (p. 83.)

When the numerals are used as titles or quotations, and without the article, they come after the noun; as do, also, those above named, when connected with others whose place is after the noun, and when they are qualified by adverbs, (p. 186.)

Some adjectives which change their signification, as they are placed before or after their substantives, have been given, (p. 351.) To those may be added the following:

A small man, *un petit homme.*	A mean man, *un homme petit.*
A big woman, *une grosse femme.*	A pregnant woman, *une femme grosse.*
A particular piece of news, *une certaine nouvelle.*	Sure news, *une nouvelle certaine.*
The grand style of living, *le grand air.*	The grand look, *l' air grand.*
A nobleman, *un gentilhomme.*	A genteel man, *un homme gentil.*
A ridiculous man, *un plaisant homme.*	A facetious man, *un homme plaisant.*
A midwife, *une sage femme.*	A wise woman, *une femme sage.*
A simple man, *bon homme.*	A good man, *homme bon.*
An insupportable man, *un cruel homme.*	A cruel man, *un homme cruel.*
An ignoble look, *un mauvais air.*	A look to be feared, *un air mauvais.*
Worthless wood, *du mort bois.*	Dead wood, *du bois mort.*
Unanimously, *d' une commune voix.*	A general opinion, *une voix commune*
A wrong note, *une fausse corde.*	A discordant string, *une corde fausse.*
A false key, *une fausse clef.*	A wrong key, *une clef fausse.*
A wrong light, *un faux jour.*	Wrong shading, *un jour faux.*
A secret door, *une fausse porte.*	A sham door, *une porte fausse.*
Low tide, *une morte eau.*	Standing water, *une eau morte.*
The last week, year, etc., of a particular time, *la dernière semaine, année,* etc.	Last week, year, etc., in general, *la semaine dernière, année,* etc.
A mischievous spirit, *un esprit malin.*	The devil, *le malin esprit.*
A different coat, *un nouvel habit.*	A new-fashion coat, *un habit nouveau.*
A language without merit, *une pauvre langue.*	A barren language, *une langue pauvre.*
A bad comedy, *une plaisante comédie.*	An amusing comedy, *une comédie plaisante.*
A proud tone, *un haut ton.*	A high tone, *un ton haut.*
A bad doer, *un méchant homme.*	A wicked man, *un homme méchant.*
A poor epigram, *une méchante épigramme.*	A malicious epigram, *une épigramme méchante.*
A newly-obtained book, *un nouveau livre.*	A newly-published book, *un livre nouveau.*
A prodigious liar, *un furieux menteur.*	A furious lion, *un lion furieux.*
Two large volumes, *deux mortels volumes.*	Mortal poison, *poison mortel.*
One only man, *un seul homme.*	A man alone, *un homme seul.*

FEMININE FORMED.

I. We have seen in the lessons, that the FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES is generally formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine; that masculines in *e* mute are un-

changed in the feminine; that those in *el*, *eil*, *ien*, *on*, and *et*, double their final letter before *e* mute; that those in *x* make the feminine in *se*, and those in *f* in *ve*, (p. 133.)

The following are exceptions, many of which have been previously given:

1. *Complet* makes in the feminine *complète; concret, concrète; discret, discrète; inquiet, inquiète; replet, replète; secret, secrète.*

Aigu,	*aiguë,*	Mou,	*molle,*	Frais,	*fraîche,*	Préfix,	*préfixe,*
Ambigu,	*ambiguë,*	Nouveau,	*nouvelle,*	Favori,	*favorite,*	Public,	*publique,*
Ammoniac,	*ammoniaque,*	Contigu,	*contiguë,*	Frank,	*franche,*	Roux,	*rousse,*
Beau,*	*belle,*	Devin,	*devineresse,*	Grec,	*grecque,*	Sec,	*sèche,*
Bénin,	*bénigne,*	Doux,	*douce,*	Jumeau,	*jumelle,*	Tiers,	*tierce,*
Blanc,	*blanche,*	Exigu,	*exiguë,*	Long,	*longue,*	Turc,	*turque,*
Caduc,	*caduque,*	Faux,	*fausse,*	Malin,	*maligne,*	Vieux,	*vieille.*
Coi,	*coite,*	Fou,	*folle,*	Oblong,	*oblongue,*		

2. The following also double the final letter before *e* mute, for the feminine:

Bas,	*basse,*	Gentil,	*gentille,*	Las,	*lasse,*	Profès,	*professe,*
Épais,	*épaisse,*	Gras,	*grasse,*	Nul,	*nulle,*	Vieillot,	*vieillotte,*
Exprès,	*expresse,*	Gros,	*grosse,*	Paysan,	*paysanne,*	Sot,	*sotte.*

II. Adjectives formed from present participles by changing *ant* into *eur*† have the feminine in *euse;* so, *bâilleur, chasseur, danseur, demandeur, devineur, pêcheur, trompeur,* and *vendeur,* makes the feminines *bâilleuse, chasseuse, danseuse,* etc.

1. But *bailleur,* a lessor; *demandeur,* a plaintiff; *défendeur,* a defendant at law; *vendeur,* (a law term;) *pécheur,* a sinner; *enchanteur,* and *chasseur,* (in style poetic,) change *ur* into *resse,* and make *bailleresse, demanderesse, défenderesse,* etc.

2. And *débiteur,* a debtor, *exécuteur, inspecteur, inventeur, prosécuteur,* have the feminine in *trice,* and thus make *débitrice, exécutrice, inspectrice,* etc.

Adjectives in *teur,* not formed from present participles, have the feminine in *trice;* as, *Accusateur, accusatrice,* etc.

Those in *érieur* conform to the general rule; as, *Extérieur, extérieure.*

THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES

Is formed in the same way as the plural of nouns, (p. 363.)

1. The following, however, in *al* have the plural in *s: fatal, final, glacial, matinal, nasal, naval, pascal, théâtral;* as, *des effets fatals, des vents glacials,* etc.

2. The plural of the following may be either in *als* or *aux: austral, colossal, doctoral, ducal, frugal,* and *natal.*

Tout drops *t* in the plural, and forms *tous.*

---

* *Bel* is used for *beau, nouvel* for *nouveau, fol* for *fou, mol* for *mou,* and often *vieil* for *vieux,* before a vowel or silent *h.*

† Adjectives in *eur* and *teur* are more generally used as substantives.

For comparison of adjectives, see *Less.* 50, p. 180.

I. We have previously seen that ADJECTIVES AGREE with their nouns in gender and number, (p. 129, and p. 69;) that adjectives which qualify nouns of different genders must be plural and masculine, (p. 218;) that an adjective qualifying nouns which are connected by *ou*, as also those which are synonymous, agrees with the last; as, *Un courage* ou *une prudence* étonnante—*Toute sa vie n' a été qu' un travail, qu' une occupation* CONTINUELLE.*

1. When nouns of different genders are qualified by a following adjective, the masculine noun is best placed immediately before the adjective, and the adjective made plural; as, *Il a montré une prudence et un courage étonnants*, rather than *un courage et une prudence étonnants*, (p. 355, *Rem.* 2.)

2. *Nu* before the substantives *cou*, *tête*, *bras*, *pieds*, *jambes*, forms a kind of adverbial phrase, and remains always invariable; as, *nu-pieds*, *nu-tête*, *nu-bras*. In other cases it agrees with the substantive; as, *La nue propriété*, *les jambes nues*, *une épée nue*, (p. 221.)

3. *Demi* is invariable when placed before its noun; as, *une demi-heure*, *une demi-livre :* when placed after its noun it agrees with it in gender, and is always singular; as, *une heure et demie*, *trois mètres et demi*, (p. 205.)

4. The adjective *feu*, late, when immediately preceding the noun, agrees with it; but when separated by the article or possessive pronoun, is unchanged; as, *La feue reine*, *feu la reine—Votre feue mère*, *feu votre mère.*

II. Two adjectives forming a compound one are both varied to agree with the noun. Such are, *aveugle-né*, *premier-né*, *mort-né*, *ivre-mort*, *sourd-muet ;* as, *des hommes ivres-morts*, *des femmes sourdes-muettes.*

1. If the first of such adjectives, however, be *mi*, *demi*, *semi*, or be used adverbially, the second only is changed. Such are, *mi-parti*, *demi-barbare*, *semi-double*, *nouveau-né*, *clair-semé*, *aigre-doux*, *court-vêtu*, *court-jointé*, *long-jointé ;* as, *des peuples demi-civilisés*, *une fille nouveau-née*, i. e. newly-born.

Frais-cueilli and *tout-puissant*, for euphony, change both in the feminine. Thus, sing., *fraîche-cueillie*, *toute-puissante :* plu. *fraîches-cueillies*, *toutes-puissantes.*

2. In such phrases as *des cheveux châtain-clair*, *des étoffes rose-tendre*, the compound is not varied because used substantively, as if, *d' un châtain clair*, *d' un rose tendre.*

3. Adjectives used as adverbs are of course not varied; as, *Ces fleurs sentent bon.*

4. *Vingt* and *cent* take no *s* when they belong to a substantive singular; as, *Chapitre quatre-vingt*, page *deux cent*, *en l' an mil-sept-cent-quatre-vingt.*

5. *Mille*, in the computation of years, is abbreviated into *mil.*

Mille takes *s* in the plural only when it signifies miles; as, *Cinq mille prisonniers—Trois milles font une lieue.*

6. For adjectives following *l'air* see *Less.* 64, *Rem.* 1, p. 224.

7. *Quelque* followed by a verb is written as two words, *quel* agreeing with the subject of the verb; as, QUELS QUE *soient les humaines*, *il faut vivre avec eux :* followed by a substantive, it is written as one word, agreeing with the substantive; as, QUELQUES *raisons :* followed by a qualifying term, it is written as one word, and is invariable; as, QUELQUE *puissants qu' ils soient.*

* But, when such an agreement presents some ambiguity, the adjective must be plural; as, *Le frère* ou la *sœur* AÎNÉS. *On demande un homme* ou *une femme* AGÉS.

PRONOUNS.

Pronouns agree with their antecedents in gender and number, and relatives also in person, and the antecedent should be definite and unequivocal.

A substantive employed in a vague sense, i. e., used without an article or demonstrative adjective, and expressing a single idea with the verb or preposition before it, must not be the antecedent of a pronoun. Of this kind are the substantives in such phrases as these: *Faire grâce, faire réponse, faire peur, demander conseil, mettre en mer, être en santé,* etc., where the nouns may be considered as forming parts of compound verbs or adverbs. The following sentences, therefore, are not correct: *Quand on est en* santé, *il faut tout faire pour* LA *conserver. Il m' a reçu avec* POLITESSE *qui m' a charmé.* These phrases may be corrected thus: *Quand on jouit de* LA *santé, il faut tout faire pour la conserver. Il m' a reçu avec* UNE *politesse qui m' a charmé.*

Care should be taken, also, not to repeat the same pronoun in the same sentence, relating to different antecedents; as, also, not to have the relative of the pronoun equivocal, as in these sentences: *Samuel offrit son holocauste à Dieu, et* IL *lui fut si agréable qu'* IL *lança au même instant la foudre contre les Philistins. Virgile a imité Homère dans tout ce qu'* IL *a de beau.* The former of these sentences is faulty because *il* is repeated with reference to different antecedents; and the latter, because the antecedent of *il* is equivocal. They may be corrected thus: *Samuel offrit son holocauste, et Dieu le trouva si agréable qu' il lança,* etc. *Virgile a imité Homère dans tout ce que* CELUI-CI *a de beau;* or, *Virgile, dans tout ce qu' il a de beau, a imité Homère.* In the following sentences, the relation of the relative is equivocal: *On trouve des maximes dans ces discours qui sont contraires à la morale. Il y a des lettres dans Pline dont le style est admirable.* These may be corrected thus: *On trouve, dans ces discours, des maximes qui sont contraires à la morale. Il y a dans Pline des lettres dont le style est admirable.*

These examples show that the relation of the pronoun to its antecedent requires especial attention in the writer. This belongs, however, more to the general construction of sentences than to grammatical rules, and need not be longer dwelt upon here.

THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS are the following:

NOMINATIVE OR SUBJECT: *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles.*
ACCUSATIVE OR DIRECT OBJECT: *me, moi, te, toi, le, la, nous, vous, les, se.*
DATIVE OR INDIRECT OBJECT: *me, moi, te, toi, lui, nous, vous, leur, se, en, y.*
OBJECT OF A PREPOSITION: *moi, toi, lui, elle, eux, elles, soi.*

Moi, toi, lui, and *eux,* are also used as nominatives, in apposition with others, in the nominative predicate, or standing alone. LUI *et* MOI *nous partirons. Qui parle? Ce sont* EUX, OR *eux.*

The objective pronouns *moi, toi, elle, eux, elles,* always follow the verb; *me, te, se,* always precede it; *le, la, lui, les, leur, nous, vous, y, en,* sometimes precede and sometimes follow it.

When the direct and indirect objects come together, they take the following order:

Le lui, la lui, les lui;	Je *le lui* ai dit.
Me le, me la, me les;	Tu *me la* donnes.
Te le, te la, te les;	Nous *te les* avons donnés.
Se le, se la, se les;	Il ne *se le* permit pas.
Le leur, la leur, les leur;	Vous *le leur* avez donné.
Nous le, nous la, nous les;	Ils ne *nous la* donnent pas.

Vous le, vous la, vous les; Je *vous les* ai permis.
Y is placed after all these; *Me les y* portera-t-on?
En is always last of all; On *leur y en* enverra.

With the imperative affirmative they are placed after the verb, the object direct preceding the indirect. But *me, te*, are changed to *moi, toi*, and both these as also *le, la*, are placed after *y*.

Donnez-les-moi. *Envoyez-nous-y-en.*
Envoyez-le-leur. *Envoyez-y-moi.*
Conduis-y-toi bien. *Menez-y-le.**

I. When two pronouns of different persons are used as nominatives, the second person is placed first, and the first person last, and the pronoun representing both employed before the verb; as, *Vous et moi nous partirons demain. Vous et lui vous partirez demain. Lui et moi nous sommes frères.*

II. The subject pronouns which the learner has seen commonly precede the verb, except in interrogatives, are placed after it:

1. In some exclamations; as, *Est-il cruel! Parle-t-il!*
2. When the verb is in the subjunctive, without a conjunction expressed:

Puissé-je de mes yeux y voir tomber la foudre!
Dussé-je, après dix ans, voir mon palais en cendre.

3. In reporting what another says; as, *Je ne serai heureux, disait-il, que*, etc.
4. They more elegantly follow the verb when it is preceded by one of these words: *Aussi, peut-être, encore, toujours, en vain, du moins, au moins;* as, *Aussi est-il votre ami. Peut-être avez-vous raison.*

III. When two imperatives are connected together by *et* or *ou*, the objective pronoun of the last imperative can precede it; as, *Laissez-moi cette chaîne, ou* M' *arrachez le jour. Polissez-le sans cesse, et* LE *repolissez.*

IV. The pronoun subject is to be repeated before each verb, connected by any other conjunction but *et* or *ni;* as, *Il est bon* MAIS *il est faible:* and also when the preceding verb has an object; as, *Vous aimerez Dieu et vous l' adorerez.* In other cases the repetition is governed by euphony or perspicuity, and corresponds nearly with the English.

V. The objective pronoun must always be repeated after each verb, except in compound tenses where the auxiliary is omitted; as, *Nous les avons attaqués, et les avons vaincus; Nous les avons attaqués, et vaincus.*

VI. When *le* in French is used like *so* in English, if it represent an adjective or a substantive used adjectively, it is invariable; as, *Madame, êtes-vous malade? Je* LE *suis. Messieurs, êtes-vous mariés? Nous* LE *sommes.*

But when it represents a noun, or an adjective taken as a nonn, it conforms to that antecedent in gender and number; as,

* When one of the pronouns *moi, toi, le, la*, is construed with the pronoun *y*, it is better to change the construction: for *envoyez-y-moi* put *envoyez-moi-là;* for *promènes-t'-y* put *promène-toi dans ce lieu*, etc,

Êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant? Je LA *suis.*
Êtes-vous les ministres du roi? Nous LES *sommes.*

In the predicate after *c' est*, *lui*, *elle*, *eux*, *elles* are used for persons, and *le*, *la*, *les*, for things. (See p. 142.)

VII. *Soi* is of both genders and the singular number, and applies to both persons and things. When used of persons, it refers, in general, only to an indeterminate subject, or is used with an infinitive; as, *On doit parler rarement de soi. Chacun travaille pour soi. Ne vivre que pour soi, c' est être déjà mort.* When used of things, it refers to a particular subject: *Un bienfait porte sa récompense avec soi.*

To avoid ambiguity, *soi* is sometimes used of persons in reference to a particular subject; as, *En remplissant les volontés de son père, ce jeune homme travaille pour soi.* Only in the phrase *être soi*, to preserve one's own character, is *soi* used without a preposition; as, *Il faut toujours être soi.*

VIII. *En* in a partitive sense, some or any, refers alike to persons and things; as, *Avez-vous des amis? J' en ai. Avez-vous de l' argent? J' en ai.* In other cases, it refers more particularly to things, and *de lui*, *d' elle*, *d' eux*, *d' elles*, to persons; as, *Ce garçon est malade; avez-vous soin* DE LUI? *J' ai un couteau, et je m'* EN *sers. En* may be used, however, for persons, but is less definite and emphatic; and on the other hand, *de lui*, etc., are sometimes used for things, but then they receive a kind of personification. *Le jeu est un vice affreux;* DE LUI *provient la ruine de bien des familles.*

2. *En* is not to be used when reference is made to the subject of the governing verb, but *its*, *of it*, etc., are to be rendered by *son*, *sa*, *ses*, *leur* or *leurs*. These adjective pronouns are also to be used when persons are referred to. But when the reference is to things which precede the subject, *en* with the definite article must be employed: *Chaque travail a* SA *fatigue.* Here *sa* is used because the reference is to *travail*, the subject. *Ces ouvrages ont* LEUR *mérite, chacun* EN *apprécie* LA *valeur.* Here, again, *leur* is used because it refers to *ouvrages*, the subject of its governing verb; and *en* with the article in the second clause, because it does not refer to the subject of its governing verb, *chacun*, but to *ouvrages*, which precedes. *Cet homme est fort aimable; chacun recherche* SA *société.* Here *sa* is used because it refers to a person.

3. The adjective pronoun is used, also, in agreement with the object of a preposition; as, *Paris est une ville remarquable; les étrangers admirent la beauté de* SES *édifices;* or, EN *admirent* LA *beauté.*

IX. *Y*, like *en*, is commonly used in reference to things. *Lui* and *leur*, however, may be used in reference to things instead of *y*, by a kind of personification; as, *Le travail est mon sauveur, je* LUI *dois la vie. Y* may also be applied to persons, but then they are alluded to in the character of things, or designated vaguely: *C' est un honnête homme; fiez-vous-*Y. That is, *fiez-vous à cela, à ce que je vous dis.* Usage, also, sanctions *y* in a few other cases; as, *Pensez-vous à moi? J' y pense.*

Nous in French, like *we* and *us* in English, is sometimes used in reference to a single person, and the adjective and participle belonging to it must then be singular; as, *Soyons prudent, se dit-il.* A writer says of himself, *Nous sommes forcé de nous arrêter ici.*

The Possessive Adjectives used with a noun, are:

MASCULINE.	FEMININE.	PLURAL.	
Mon,	*ma,*	*mes,*	*My.*
Ton,	*ta,*	*tes,*	*Thy.*
Son,	*sa,*	*ses,*	*His, her, its.*
Notre,	*notre,*	*nos,*	*Our.*
Votre,	*votre,*	*vos,*	*Your.*
Leur,	*leur,*	*leurs,*	*Their.*

Ma, ta, sa, become *mon, ton, son,* before a vowel or a silent *h,* (*Less.* 34, p. 89.)

These adjectives, like the definite article, are repeated before each noun in the same construction, and before each adjective which refers to a separate noun.

Mon *père,* ma *mère et* mes *frères sont venus.*
Je lui ai montré mes *beaux et* mes *vilains habits.*
Je lui ai montré mes beaux et riches habits.

The Possessive Pronouns used without a noun are:

SING. MASC.	FEMININE.	PLUR. MASC.	FEMININE.	
Le mien,	*la mienne,*	*les miens,*	*les miennes,*	*Mine,*
Le tien,	*la tienne,*	*les tiens,*	*les tiennes,*	*Thine,*
Le sien,	*la sienne,*	*les siens,*	*les siennes,*	*His, hers, its,*
Le nôtre,	*la nôtre,*	*les nôtres,*	*les nôtres,*	*Ours,*
Le vôtre,	*la vôtre,*	*les vôtres,*	*les vôtres,*	*Yours,*
Le leur,	*la leur,*	*les leurs,*	*les leurs,*	*Theirs.*

The Relative Pronouns are the following:

Qui,	*Who, whom, that, which,*
Que,	*Whom, that, what?*
Quoi,	*Which, what! what?*
Dont,	*Whose, of whom, of which,*
Lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles,	*Who, which, that, whom.*

Où used for *lequel* with a preposition.

I. *Qui* is of both genders and numbers. Used absolutely, that is, without an antecedent and in a general sense, it may be either the subject or the object of the verb, but it applies only to persons or things personified; as, *Lâche* qui *veut mourir.* Qui *aimez-vous? De* qui *parlez-vous? Aimez* qui *vous aime.*

Qui used relatively, that is, with a particular antecedent, must, except in a few peculiar forms, be either the subject of the verb, or the object of a preposition. As a subject, it may relate either to persons or things. As an object, it relates only to persons, or to things personified; as, *L' homme* qui *raisonne. Le livre* qui *traite de cette matière. Celui à* qui *je parle.*

II. *Que* refers both to persons and things. It is always used as an object, and commonly of the verb; as, *Celui* que *vous avez vu. Les livres* qu' *il a lus.*

III. When the relative is immediately preceded by an adjective, if this adjective have the article with it, it is the antecedent of the relative, otherwise it is not; as, *Vous êtes le seul qui ait réussi* (not *ayez.*) *Nous étions deux qui étions du même avis.*

IV. *De qui* is used only of persons and things personified, *dont* of both persons and things. It is preferred to *de qui*, when followed by a personal pronoun and standing for one, unless some transfer be expressed; as, *C' est lui* DONT *vous parlez. Celui* DE QUI *je tiens cette nouvelle.* When it is preceded by a noun and followed by one, *de qui* may be used; as, *L' homme* DE QUI *votre père parle.*

V. *Lequel*, *duquel*, are used instead of *qui*, *que*, *dont*, to avoid an ambiguity; as, *J' ai vu le mari de votre sœur*, LEQUEL *viendra me voir. Je dois recevoir une lettre de mes enfants*, LAQUELLE *j' attends avec impatience. La bonté de Dieu de* LAQUELLE *je connais la grandeur. Qui*, *que*, and *dont*, in these sentences, would cause ambiguity; when they would not, they are to be used. *Duquel* is used for *dont*, also, when its antecedent is followed by a preposition; as, *l' homme à la réputation* DUQUEL *vous voulez nuire;* and not *l' homme à la réputation* DONT *vous voulez nuire.*

VI. *Quoi* is used instead of *lequel* with a preposition, and relates only to things. It is used for *lequel* when its antecedent is *ce* or *rien;* as, *C' est* DE QUOI *je m' occupe sans cesse. Il n' y a rien* SUR QUOI *l' on ait autant disputé.* It is sometimes used absolutely; as, À QUOI *pensez-vous?*

VII. *Où*, *d' où*, *par où*, carry with them some idea of motion and locality; as, *Le peril* d' où *il est sorti. La ville* d' où *je viens.* When extraction of race is spoken of, *dont* is employed:

The house from which I go out,	*La maison* D' OÙ *je sors*,
The house from which I am sprung,	*La maison* DONT *je sors.*

THE DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES are:

Ce, cet,	*cette,*	*This, that,*	*Ces,*		*These, those,*
Celui,	*celle,*	*He, she, the one,*	*ceux,*	*celles,*	*They, the ones.*

(These last four take the terminating particles *ci*, *là*.)

Ceci,	*This, this thing,*	*Cela,*	*That, that thing.*

I. When *ce*, followed by a relative pronoun, begins a sentence, it is to be repeated in the second member, if that member begin with the verb *être;* as, *Ce qui importe à l' homme, c' est de remplir ses devoirs. Ce qui est certain, c' est que le monde est de travers.*

1. *Ce* can be omitted with *être* of the second clause when it is followed by a noun singular; as; CE *qui mérite le plus notre admiration, est* (or *c' est*) *la vertu.*

2. When *ce* does not begin the first clause, it is to be used with *être* in the second, if preceded by an attribute clause of some length; as, *Le plus beau présent qui ait été fait aux hommes après la sagesse, c' est l' amitié.*

3. When two or more infinitives precede *est*, and when it stands between two infinitives, *ce* is used; as, *Boire, manger, dormir, c' est toute sa vie. Épargner les plaisirs, c' est les multiplier.*

II. *Il est* is generally to be preferred to *c' est* when followed by an adjective, adverb, or noun used adjectively; as, *Il est nécessaire que nous fassions notre devoir. Il n' est pas homme de parole. Il est bien d' être généreux.*

1. But in answering a question or drawing a conclusion, *c' est* is used before an adjective instead of *il est;* as, *Est-il nécessaire que nous fassions notre ouvrage? Oui, M.; c' est nécessaire. Nous devons faire cela, c' est indispensable.*

2. When followed by a noun, pronoun, adjective used as a noun, or any preposition except *de*, *c' est* is to be used; as, *Fiez-vous à lui,* C' EST L' HOMME *que j' estime.* C' EST MOI *qui viens.* C' EST VOUS *qui parlez.* C' EST PAR *votre faute que vous êtes ruiné.* IL EST DE *mon devoir de vous dire la vérité.*

THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS are:

On,	*One, they.*
Quiconque,	*Whoever.*
Quelqu' un, quelqu' une,	*Some one.*
Quelques-uns, quelques-unes,	*Some ones.*
Chacun, chacune,	*Each.*
Autrui,	*Others.*
L' un l' autre,	*Each other.*
Les uns les autres,	*Each other.*
L' un et l' autre,	*Both.*
Les uns et les autres,	*Both. The ones and the others.*
Personne,	*Any body.*
Ne personne.	*Nobody.*

The following are sometimes used with the adjective:

Aucun, aucune,	*No one, any one.*
Nul, nulle,	*No, none.*
Certain, certaine.	*Certain, some.*
Certains, certaines,	*Certain, some.*
Plusieurs,	*Many, several.*
Tel, telle, tels, telles,	*Such.*
Pas un, etc.,	*Not one.*
Autre,	*Other.*
Même,	*Same.*
Tout,	*Every thing.*

On and *quiconque*, though essentially masculine singular, have a feminine adjective when applied expressly to females; as, *On n' est pas toujours* JEUNE *et* BELLE. *Mesdames, quiconque de vous sera assez* HARDIE *pour médire de moi, je l' en ferai repentir. On* is employed in like manner with the plural; as, ON *n' est pas des esclaves pour essuyer de si mauvais traitements.*

For *L' on*, see *Less.* 39, p. 152.

On should be repeated before every verb to which it is subject; as, *On* L' *aime et on* LE *loue.*

Quiconque relates only to persons, and is never plural.

This pronoun, employed in the first member of a sentence, has the peculiarity of requiring no pronoun in the second; as, *Quiconque est riche est tout.*

Quelqu' un, used absolutely, refers only to persons, and takes the feminine and plural only when it is the subject of the verb; as, *Je connais quelqu' un* (never *quelqu' une*, etc.) When used relatively, it may refer to both persons and things, and can take either gender or number. It is then followed by *de* with a noun or pronoun, or preceded by *en*, except where the reference is sufficiently understood without them; as, *Connaissez-vous quelques-unes de ces dames? J' en connais quelques-unes. Ces fleurs sont belles; mais quelques-unes ont des épines.*

Chacun, like *quelqu' un*, when used absolutely, refers only to persons. It is used relatively of persons and things.

Chacun takes after it *son, sa, ses*, when it is preceded by the object of the verb, and when the verb has no object; but it takes *leur, leurs*, after it when followed by the object of the verb; as, *Ils ont opiné*, chacun à son *tour. Ils ont apporté leurs offrandes*, CHACUN *selon* SES *moyens. Ils ont donné* CHACUN LEUR *avis.*

Autrui has no variation of gender or number, and is always the object of a preposition.

Son, sa, ses, leur, leurs, are not to be used in reference to *autrui*, except when the noun to which they belong is preceded by a preposition, but *en* is used in their place. *En épousant les intérêts d' autrui, nous ne devons pas* EN *épouser les passions. Nous reprenons les défauts d' autrui, sans faire attention à leurs bonnes qualités.*

L' un et l' autre denotes simple plurality, or both; *l' un l' autre* denotes reciprocity; as, L' UN ET L' AUTRE *furent deux grands poëtes, ils s' estimaient* L' UN L' AUTRE. Speaking of two only, the singular is to be used; of more than two, the plural; as, *Nous nous aimons l' un l' autre. Nous nous aimons les uns les autres. Ils parlent l' un de l' autre. Ils parlent les uns des autres.*

Personne as a pronoun is always masculine. Without a negative, it is generally employed in phrases which express uncertainty, and as the subject of the verb; as, *Je doute que* PERSONNE *ait mieux peint la nature*, etc. PERSONNE *a-t-il jamais raconté plus naïvement*, etc.

Aucun as a pronoun with a negative signifies *no one*, and takes either gender; as an adjective, it takes either gender and either number; as, *J' ai cherché mes amis; mais je n' en ai trouvé* AUCUN. *Je ne le veux en* AUCUNE *manière. Elle ne m' a rendu* AUCUN *soin.* It is sometimes employed without a negative in phrases which express interrogation or doubt; as, *Je doute qu' il y ait* AUCUN *auteur sans défaut.*

Nul as an adjective is of both genders and numbers. Used absolutely, in the

masculine singular, and as subject of the verb, it has the same meaning as *personne;* as, NUL *n' est content de sa fortune.* Employed in the plural without a noun, it signifies things of little value; as, *Ces effets sont* NULS.

Pas un expresses a more general exclusion than *aucun*, and is hardly used as a pronoun except in the familiar style and as subject; as, *Pas un ne le croit.* As an adjective, it takes the feminine, but no plural; as, *Il n' y a pas* UNE SEULE *personne qui*, etc.

Plusieurs is used as a pronoun and as an adjective, and is never varied. *Plusieurs ont cru le monde éternel. Il est arrivé plusieurs bâtiments. Avoir plusieurs affaires.*

Tel as a pronoun is used sometimes to indicate persons and places vaguely; as, *Il est tantôt chez un tel, tantôt chez une telle.* It is sometimes used instead of *celui;* as, TEL *croit prendre qui est pris.*

Tout as a pronoun is always masculine singular. As the object of the verb, it is placed after it, in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and participle, in compound tenses; as, *Il avoue* TOUT. *Il a* TOUT *avoué.*

For *Tout*, an adverb, see *Less.* 62, p. 217.

VERBS.

I. That every finite verb must have a subject; that the verb must agree with this subject in number and person; that when several nouns or pronouns joined together form the subject, unless they are connected by *ou*, the verb must be plural; and that of different persons, the verb agrees with the first in preference to the second, and with the second in preference to the third, has been sufficiently seen.

1. When, however, several nouns singular forming the subject are synonymous, the verb is singular; as, *Son courage, son intrépidité* étonne *les plus braves.*

2. When the words of the subject connected by *ou* are of different persons, the verb is plural, and of that person which has the preference; as, *Vous ou moi* PARLERONS. *Vous ou votre frère* VIENDREZ.

3. When the words composing the subject are placed as a climax, or contain an expression uniting in it all the preceding words, as *tout, rien, personne*, the verb is singular; as, *Ce sacrifice, votre intérêt, votre honneur, Dieu l' exige. Le temps, les biens, la vie, tout est à la patrie.*

4. When two subjects are connected by one of the conjunctions, *comme, de même que, ainsi que, aussi bien que*, the verb agrees with the first, the second belonging to a verb understood; as, *La vertu, ainsi que le savoir, a son prix.*

5. *L' un et l' autre, ni l' un ni l' autre*, as, also, all subjects connected by *ni*, take a plural verb, unless only one of the subjects connected by *ni* can perform

the action of the verb; as, *J' ai lu vos deux discours; ni l' un ni l' autre ne* SONT BONS.* *Ni l' un ni l' autre n'* OBTIENDRA *le prix.**

6. After two or more infinitives employed as subjects, the verb is plural, except it be the verb *être* preceded by *ce;* as, *Bien dire et bien penser ne* SONT *rien sans bien faire. Boire, manger, dormir,* C' EST *toute son occupation.*

7. The verb *être* preceded by *ce* is plural only when followed by the third person plural; as, *Ce* SONT LES VICES *qui dégradent l' homme; ce* SONT EUX *qui le rendent malheureux. C' est nous. C' est vous. C' est le travail et l' application,* etc.

8. When a collective noun is followed by *de* and another noun plural, as in *Less.* 100, p. 308, the agreement of the verb is sometimes determined by the fitness of the noun to perform the action; as, *Une* nuée *de* barbares désolèrent *le pays.*† *Une* FOULE D' ENFANTS ENCOMBRAIT *la rue.*†

9. From this illustration it may be easily understood that when there are two verbs in such sentences, one of them can have more especial reference to the collective noun, and the other to the following plural; as, *La* moitié *des* troupes *qui* firent *la guerre* périt *de misère. Le* tiers *des* livres *qui* parurent *ne* fut *pas* vendu.

10. When the noun following *beaucoup, peu, la plupart,* is understood, the verb agrees with it, the same as if expressed; as, *La plupart* SONT *sujets à des infirmités. Beaucoup* AIMENT *le jeu. Peu* TRAVAILLENT *avec ardeur.*

11. As the relative takes the gender, number, and person of its antecedent, of course in all these cases which have now been specified, the relative which represents these subjects will take the verb in the same number and person as the subjects themselves; as,

Cette réserve, cette retenue QUI *nous* CHARME.
C' est vous ou moi qui répondrons.
C' est votre intérêt, votre honneur, Dieu QUI EXIGE, etc.
C' est l' un et l' autre *qui méritent des éloges.*
Ce n' est ni la fortune ni le rang QUI FONT *le bonheur.*
Ce n' est ni l' un ni l' autre QUI EST *mon père.*
Une foule de soldats QUI COMBATTENT *vaillamment.*

---

* In the former of these sentences, the verb is plural, because both discourses might be good; in the latter it is singular, because two competitors can not both obtain the prize. The same distinction may be seen in the following sentences: *Ni l' or ni la grandeur ne nous* RENDENT *heureux. Ni mon ami ni le vôtre ne* SERA NOMMÉ *ambassadeur à Saint-Pétersbourg.*

† In the former of these sentences, the verb is plural, because the act of desolating is more fitly referred to barbarians than to cloud; in the latter it is singular, because the act of encumbering is more fitly referred to crowd than to children. The like is illustrated in these sentences: *Un* DÉLUGE *de* PLEURS INONDAIT *son visage. Une* QUANTITÉ *de* PLEURS COUVRAIENT *son visage.*

MOODS AND TENSES.

We have seen that French verbs have five moods, the *indicative*, *imperative*, *subjunctive*, *conditional* and *infinitive*.

The INDICATIVE MOOD has nine tenses, which represent the action of the verb, under the following conditions of time.

The *present* represents it as unfinished in present time.

The *imperfect*, as unfinished in past time, (p. 182–3.)

The *past indefinite*, as finished in present time, (p. 143.)

The *past definite*, as finished in past time, (p. 220, 236.)

The *pluperfect*, as finished prior to some other past time specified, (p. 207.)

The *past anterior*, as finished immediately prior to some other past time excluding the present day, (p. 313.)

The *past anterior indefinite*, as finished immediately prior to some other past time not excluding the present day, (p. 317.)

The *future*, as going to take place in future time, (p. 284.)

The *second future*, as going to take place prior to some other future time specified, (p. 287.)

The SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD represents a thing not as existing in reality, but as merely regarded by the mind of the speaker.

The following govern the subjunctive, according to Rule I, p. 243.

Aimer,	Avoir envie,	Être surpris,	Risquer,
Aimer mieux,	Être au désespoir,	Empêcher,	S' étonner,
Admettre,	Être bien aise,	Entendre,	Se plaindre,
Admirer,	" chagrin,	Exiger,	Se réjouir,
Approuver,	" charmé,	Juger,	Se soucier,
Appréhender,	" content,	Mériter,	Souffrir,
Attendre,	" enchanté,	Nier,	Supplier,
Avoir peur,	" mortifié,	Ordonner,	Supposer,
Commander,	" étonné,	Permettre,	Trembler,
Consentir,	S' étonner,	Préférer,	Souhaiter,
Craindre,	Être fâché,	Prendre garde,	Trouver bon,
Défendre,	" joyeux,	Prétendre (to wish,)	Trouver mauvais,
Demander,	" peiné,	Prier,	Voir avec plaisir,
Désapprouver,	" ravi,	Redouter,	" peine,
Désirer,	" réjoui,	Regretter,	Vouloir.
Douter,	" satisfait,		

The following govern the subjunctive, according to Rule II., p. 247.

Il convient,	Il est dommage,	Il importe,	Il suffit,
Il est à désirer,	Il est temps,	Il plaît,	Il vaut mieux,
Il est à souhaiter,	Il faut,	Il se peut,	
Il est bien,	Il s' en faut,	Il semble, (*pres.*)	

Affligeant,	Curieux,	Ennuyeux,	Honteux,	Mortifiant,
Agréable,	Dangereux,	Étonnant,	Important,	Nécessaire,
À propos,	Difficile,	Expédient,	Impossible,	Plaisant,
Beau,	Disgracieux,	Extraordinaire,	Indifférent,	Possible,
Bienséant,	Divertissant,	Fâcheux,	Indispensable,	Sensible,
Bon,	Douloureux,	Glorieux,	Injuste,	Surprenant.
Chagrinant,	Doux,	Gracieux,	Juste,	
Cruel,	Dur,	Heureux,	Malheureux,	

3. The subjunctive is used after the following conjunctions, according to Rule III, p. 250.

À condition que,	Ce n' est pas que,	Jusqu' à ce que,	Pour que,
À Dieu ne plaise que,	De crainte que,	Loin que,	Pourvu que,
À ce que,	De peur que,	Malgré que,	Quelque,
Afin que,	Dieu veuille que,	Moyennant que,	Quel que,
À la bonne heure que,	Excepté que,	Nonobstant que,	Quoi que,
À moins que,	Encore que,	Non pas que,	Quoique,
Au cas que,	En cas que,	Non que,	Sans que,
Avant que,	En attendant que,	Plaise à Dieu que,	Si peu que,
Bien entendu que,	Fasse le Ciel que,	Plût à Dieu que,	Soit que,
Bien loin que,	Hormis que,	Posé le cas que,	Si tant est que,
Bien que,	Hors que,	Pour peu que,	Supposé que.

Also *que* used for any of the above conjunctions, or a second *si*.

The following, like the relatives, sometimes govern the subjunctive and sometimes the indicative, according to Remark 2, p. 255.

De façon que,	De sorte que,	Tellement que,	Sinon que.
De manière que,	En sorte que,	Si ce n' est que,	

That the subjunctive mood expresses, not what the speaker states as a fact, but only as a conception of the mind, is shown in the following sentences, illustrating each of the four general rules.

I say that he goes to church,	Je dis qu'il *va* à l' église,	Rule I.
I wish that he go to church,	Je veux qu' il *aille* à l' église,	
I affirm that we study,	J' affirme que nous *étudions*,	Rule II.
It is necessary that we study,	Il faut que nous *étudiions*,	
I know a man who is honest,	Je connais un homme qui *est* honnête,	Rule III.
I seek a man who is honest,	Je cherche un homme qui *soit* honnête,	
Do you believe that there is a God?	Croyez-vous qu' il y *a* un Dieu?	Rule IV.
Do you believe that there are ghosts?	Croyez-vous qu' il y *ait* des revenants?	

In the first of the above sentences, the speaker represents going to church as a fact, and uses the indicative mood. In the second, he speaks of it only as his wish, and uses the subjunctive. In the third, he speaks of studying as a fact, and uses the indicative. In the fourth, only as something necessary, and uses the subjunctive. In the fifth, he speaks of a man that he knows, and uses the indicative. In the sixth, only of one he conceives of, and uses the subjunctive. In the seventh, he speaks of God, whom he believes to exist, and uses the indicative. In the eighth, of ghosts, whom he regards as mere creatures of the fancy, and uses the subjunctive.

The subjunctive mood has four tenses, which are used as follows:

The *present*, after a phrase of present time, to denote something present or future, (p. 329.)

The *perfect*, after the same, to denote something past, (*Less.* 91.)

The *imperfect*, after a past or conditional, to denote a present or a future in regard to it, (*Less.* 92.)

The *pluperfect*, after the same, to denote a past in regard to it, (*Less.* 93.)

For the IMPERATIVE MOOD, see *Less.* 54 and 55, pp. 192 and 337.

For the CONDITIONAL MOOD, see *Less.* 85 and 87, pp. 299–305.

The past of this mood has also another form, which is the same as the pluperfect of the subjunctive; as, *Il eût acheté des livres, s' il avait eu de l' argent.* The same form is sometimes used, also, for the pluperfect of the indicative, preceded by *si;* as, *Il aurait acheté des livres, s' il eût eu de l' argent.*

The INFINITIVE MOOD, when its use is attended with no ambiguity, is preferred to the other moods, (*Less.* 95, p. 337.)

The following verbs govern the infinitive without a preposition:

Affirmer,	Croire,	Falloir,	Pouvoir,	Soutenir,
Aimer mieux,	Daigner,	S' imaginer,	Publier,	Témoigner,
Aller,	Déclarer,	Laisser,	Rapporter,	Se Trouver,
Apercevoir,	Déposer,	Mener,	Reconnaître,	Valoir mieux,
Assurer,	Désirer,	Nier,	Regarder,	Venir,
Avoir beau,	Devoir,	Observer,	Retourner,	Voir,
Avouer,	Écouter,	Oser,	Revenir,	Vouloir.
Compter,	Entendre,	Ouïr,	Savoir,	
Confesser,	Envoyer,	Paraître,	Sembler,	
Considérer,	Espérer,	Penser,	Sentir,	
Courir,	Faire,	Prétendre,	Souhaiter,	

The following verbs, many of which have been given in the previous lessons, take *à* before the following infinitive:

Abaisser,	S' accoutumer,	Aider,	Apprendre,
Aboutir,	S' acharner,	Aimer,	Apprêter,
Accéder,	Adhérer,	Amuser,	S' apprêter,
S' accorder,	Admettre,	S' amuser,	S' arrêter,
Accoutumer, (or *de*,)	S' aguerrir,	S' appliquer,	Arriver,

Aspirer,
Assigner,
S' assujétir,
S' astreindre,
S' attacher,
Attendre,
S' attendre,
Autoriser,
S' avilir,
Avoir,
Avoir quelque chose,
N' avoir rien,
Balancer,
Borner,
Se borner,
Chercher,
Commencer, (or *de*,)
Se complaire,
Concourir,
Condamner,
Condescendre,
Consentir, (or *de*,)
Consister,
Conspirer,
Continuer, (or *de*,)
Contraindre, (or *de*,)
Contribuer,
Convier, (or *de*,)
Coûter,
Décider, (or *de*,)
Se décider,
Défier, (or *de*,)
Demander, (or *de*,)
Demeurer,
Dépenser,
Déplaire,
Se déplaire,
Désapprendre,
Désobéir,
Destiner,
Déterminer, (or *de*,)
Se déterminer,
Disposer,
Se disposer,
Donner,
Dresser,
Éclairer,
S' efforcer, (or *de*,)
Embarrasser,
Employer,
S' empresser, (or *de*,)
Encourager,
S' endurcir,
Engager,
S' engager,
Enhardir,
Enseigner,
S' entendre,
Essayer, (or *de*,)
Être, (or *de*,)
S' étudier,
Exceller,
Exciter,
Exercer,
S' exercer,
Exhorter,
S' exposer,
Faillir, (or *de*,)
Se fatiguer,
Se fier,
Forcer, (or *de*,)
Gagner,
Habituer,
S' habituer,
Haïr,
Se hasarder,
Hésiter,
Inciter,
Incliner,
Instruire,
S' intéresser,
Inviter,
Lasser, (or *de*,)
Se lasser,
Limiter,
Se livrer,
Manquer, (or *de*,)
Mettre,
Se mettre,
Montrer,
Nuire,
Obéir,
Obliger, (or *de*,)
S' obstiner,
Obvier,
S' occuper, (or *de*,)
S' offrir,
S' opiniâtrer,
Parvenir,
Passer son temps,
Avoir peine,
Pencher,
Penser,
Perdre,
Persévérer,
Persister,
Plaire, (or *de*,)
Se plaire,
Se plier,
Porter,
Pourvoir,
Pousser,
Prendre plaisir,
Préparer,
Se préparer,
Présenter,
Prétendre,
Se prêter,
Procéder,
Provoquer,
Réduire,
Se réduire,
Renoncer,
Répugner, (or *de*,)
Se résigner,
Résister,
Rester,
Se résoudre,
Retrancher,
Réussir,
Rêver, (or *de*,)
Risquer, (or *de*,)
Servir, (or *de*,)
Songer,
Subvenir,
Suffire, (or *de*,)
Surprendre,
Tâcher, (or *de*,)
Tarder, (or *de*,)
Tendre,
Tenir,
Travailler,
Trembler,
Trouver,
Venir, (or *de*,)
Revenir,
Viser.

THE PREPOSITION *à* stands before the infinitive after adjectives and participles which express inclination, fitness, determination, preparation or custom; as, Adroit, Ardent, Assidu, Attentif, Disposé, Enclin, Exact, Exposé, Fondé, Habile, Intéressé, Opiniâtre, Ponctuel, Porté, Prêt, Prompt, Propre, Sujet.

The preposition *à* stands before infinitives used in a passive sense; as, *c' est une chose à désirer;* It is a thing to be desired; before those which follow adjectives in the superlative, or having a superlative meaning; as, *le dernier à faire son devoir;* and generally when the question, *to* or *for what?* may be asked; as, *bon à manger.*

THE PREPOSITION *de*, on the other hand, is used before the infinitive when the question *what?* rather than *to* or *for what?* may be asked; as, *Je vous permets d' avoir cela;* when the infinitive stands as the direct object of a verb; as, *Je vous ordonne de sortir;* when it supplies the place of *of* with a noun or present participle; as, *au lieu de faire;* and when *il est* (imp.) is followed by an adjective; as, *Il est bon de savoir cela.*

The following verbs and phrases, many of which have been given in the previous lessons, take *de* after them before the following infinitive:

Abstenir,
S' abstenir,
Abuser,
Accoutumer, (or *d*,)
S' accommoder,
Accuser,
Être accusé,
S' accuser,
Achever,
S' acquitter,
Affecter,
Affliger,
S' affliger,
Être alarmé,
Ambitionner,
À moins, (que,)
S' amouracher,
Appartenir,
S' apercevoir,
S' applaudir,
Approuver,
Appréhender,
À propos,
Arrêter,
Attendre, (or *d*,)
Attendrir,
Attrister,
S' attrister,
Avant,
Avantage,
Avertir,
S' aviser,
Avoir bien à cœur,
Avoir coutume,
Avoir dessein,
Avoir honte,
Avoir l' air,
Avoir la liberté,
Avoir peur,
Avoir pitié,
Avoir sujet,
Blâmer,
Besoin,
Bien,
Bien aise,
Bonheur,
Bonté,
Brûler,
Censurer,
Cesser,
Chagrin,
Chagriner,
Se chagriner,
Charger,
Se charger,
Choisir,
Commander,
Commencer, (or *d*,)
Commode,
Complaisance,
Conclure,
Conjurer,
Conseiller,
Consentir, (or *d*,)
Consoler,
Se contenter,
Continuer, (or *d*,)
Contraindre, (or *d*,)
Convaincre,
Convier, (or *d*,)
Convenir,
Courage,
Craindre,
Décharger,
Décider, (or *d*,)
Décourager,
Dédaigner,
Défendre,
Défier, (or *d*,)
Se défier,
Dégoûter,
Délibérer,
Demander, (or *d*,)
Se démettre,
Se dépêcher
Dépendre, (imp.,)
Déplaire,
Désaccoutumer,
Désespérer,
Se désespérer,
Se déshabituer,
Le désir,
Désirer, (or without,)
Se désister,
Désoler,
Se désoler,
Déterminer, (or *d*,)
Détourner,
Se devoir,
Différer,
Dire,
Discontinuer,
Disconvenir,
Se disculper,
Dispenser,
Se dispenser,
Disposer,
Dissuader,
Divertir,
Dommage,
Donner lieu,
Donner ordre,
Droit,
Écrire,
Édifier
S' édifier,
S' efforcer, (or *d*,)
Effrayer,
S' effrayer,
S' émanciper,
S' emparer,
Empêcher,
S' empresser, (or *d*,)
Enjoindre,
S' ennuyer,
S' enorgueillir,
Enrager,
Entreprendre,
Envie,
Épouvanter,
Espérer, (or *without*,)
Esprit,
Essayer, (or *d*,)
S' étonner,
Être, (or *d*,)
Être accusé,
Être alarmé,
Être charmé,
Être consterné,
Convenable,
Être effrayé,
Être embarrassé,
Être en droit,
Être en état,
Être fâché,
Être étonné,
Être frappé,
Être joyeux,
Être pressé,
Être surpris, (or *d*,)
Être triste,
Éviter,
Excuser,
S' excuser,
Exempter,
S' exempter,
Exiger,
Se fâcher,
Faiblesse,
Faillir, (or *d*,)
Faire bien,
Faire mine,
Faire plaisir,
Faire signe,
Faire semblant,
Feindre,
Féliciter,
Se féliciter,
Finir,
Se flatter,
À force,
Forcer, (or *d*,)
Se garder,
Avoir garde,
Prendre garde,
Gémir,
Générosité,
Gêner,
Se glorifier,
Rendre grâce,
Gronder,
Se hasarder, (or *d*,
Se hâter,
Honnêteté,
Honneur,
Impossible,
Imprudence,
Imputer,
S' indigner,
S' informer,
S' ingérer,
Injustice,
S' inquiéter,
Inspirer,
Intention,
Interdire,
Inutile,
Jouir,
Jurer,
Justifier,
Juste,
Justifier,
Laisser, (or *d*,)
Louer,

Mander,
Faire mal,
Malheur,
Manquer, (or *à*,)
Médire,
Méditer,
Se Mêler,
Menacer,
Mériter,
Mettre hors d' état,
Mieux,
Se moquer,
Moyen,
Négliger,
Nier,
Notifier,
Obliger, (or *à*,)
S' occuper, (or *à*,)
Offrir,
Omettre,
Ordonner,
Oublier,
Pardonner,
Parler,
Se passer,
Patience,
Permettre,
Persuader,
Se piquer,
Plaindre,
Se plaindre,
Plaisir,
Plaire, (or *à*,)
Politesse,
Possible,
Plutôt que,
Le pouvoir,
Précaution,
Préférer, (or *without*,)
Prendre sur soi,
Prescrire,
Presser,
Se presser,
Présumer,
Prier,
Priver,
Professer,
Profiter,
Promettre,
Se promettre,
Proposer,
Se proposer,
Protester,
Punir,
Que, (than,)
Raison,
Raisonnable,
Se rappeler,
Être rassasié,
Être ravi,
Se rebuter,
Recommander,
Refuser, (or *à*,)
Regret,
Regretter,
Réjouir,
Se réjouir,
Remercier,
Se repentir,
Reprendre,
Réprimander,
Reprocher,
Se reprocher,
Répugner, (or *à*,)
Résoudre,
Se ressouvenir,
Retenir,
Ridicule,
Rire,
Risquer, (or *à*,)
Rougir,
Se saisir,
Satisfaction,
Savoir bon gré,
Se scandaliser,
Servir, (or *à*,)
Avoir soin,
Prendre soin,
Sommer,
Se soucier,
Souffrir,
Souhaiter, (or *without*,)
Soupçonner,
Se souvenir,
Suffire, (or *à*,)
Suggérer,
Supplier,
Tâcher, (or *à*,)
Prendre à tâche,
Tarder, (or *à*,)
Temps,
Tenter,
Être tenté,
Tort,
Trembler,
Se trouver,
User,
Valoir la peine,
Se vanter,
Venir, (or *à*,)
Venir à bout.

Several of the above verbs may take either *à* or *de* before the infinitive; but for the most part, not without some difference in their signification.

Accoutumer used actively, takes *à*; when neuter, *de*.
Je l' ai accoutumé à *travailler*. *Il avait accoutumé* d' *aller*.

Commencer with *à*, means to begin something progressive; with *de* something not progressive.
Cet écolier commence à *parler le français*. *Il commence* de *manger*.

Consentir with *à*, means to consent freely; with *de*, not to oppose.
Je consens à *vous suivre*. *Je consens* de *le voir*.

Continuer with *à*, means to continue with interruption; with *de*, at intervals.
Il continuait à *le frapper*. *Il continuait* de *le voir*.

Contraindre with *à*, means to constrain to some action; with *de*, from action.
On le contraignit à *marcher*. *On le contraignit* de *se taire*.

Convier with *à*, means to invite; with *de*, to beg, intreat. This distinction is not always observed.
Je l' ai convié à *dîner*. *Je l' ai convié* de *faire sa tâche*.

Décider takes *à*, as an active or passive verb; *de*, as a neuter verb.
Cette raison m' a décidé à *partir*. *Nous décidâmes* de *partir*.

Défier with *à*, means to challenge to something; with *de*, to defy.
Je vous défie à *boire*. *Je vous défie* de *m' en donner la moindre preuve*.

Demander with *à*, means to demand something active or positive; with *de*, something passive.
Il demande à *boire. Il demande* d' *être écouté.*

Déterminer takes *à*, with a direct object; *de*, without such an object.
Je le déterminai à *partir. Il a déterminé* de *rebâtir sa maison.*

S' efforcer with *à*, means to attempt what depends wholly on our will; with *de*, what does not depend wholly on our will.
Il s' efforce à *parler. Elle s' efforce* de *plaire.*

S' empresser takes *à*, when the action passes to an object; otherwise *de*.
Il s' est empressé à *vous rendre service. Il s' est empressé* de *rendre service.*

Essayer takes *à*, with reference to the efforts; *de*, with reference to the object.
Ce malade a essayé à *marcher. J' ai essayé* de *le persuader.*

Être with *à*, denotes turn; with *de*, right or duty.
C' est à vous à *jouer. C' est au fils* d' *obéir au père.*

Faillir takes *à*, when the action passes to an object; otherwise *de*. This distinction is not much observed.
Il a failli à *me tuer. Il a failli* de *tomber.*

Forcer takes *à*, when the action has an object; *de* when it has not. This distinction, also, is not much observed.
Il le force à *faire sa tâche. Il le force* de *partir.*

Se hasarder de, when the second verb indicates an action, the cause and effect of which are confined to the agent; *à*, when the second verb denotes an action that constitutes the object of the verb.
Il se hasarde de *me répondre. Je me hasarde* à *vous faire une proposition.*

Laisser with *à*, means to leave, to allow; with *de*, to fail, used in negations.
Cela laisse beaucoup à *penser. Il ne laisse pas* d' *être honnête.*

Manquer with *à*, means to fail of some duty; with *de*, of what is not a duty.
Il manque à *remplir ses devoirs. Il manque* de *vous trouver. Il a manqué* d' *être tué*

Obliger, meaning to impose necessity, *à* or *de*; meaning to confer obligation or favor, it takes *de* only.
Je l' oblige à *étudier. Vous m' obligerez beaucoup* de *faire cela. Être obligé* takes *de.*

S' occuper with *à*, means to labor at; with *de*, to occupy one's thoughts with.
Il s' occupe à *lire. Il s' occupe* de *détruire les abus.*

Plaire takes *à*, as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.
Il se plaît à *lire. Il ne me plaît pas* de *vous obéir.*

Répugner takes *à*, as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.
Je répugne à *faire cela. Il me répugne* de *faire cela.*

Risquer takes *à*, as an active verb; *de*, as a neuter verb.
Vous risquez tout à *prendre ce parti. Vous risquez* de *tomber.*

Servir takes *à*, as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.
Ce bateau sert à *passer la rivière. Que sert-il* de *s' emporter.*

Suffire takes *à*, or *pour*, as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.
Ce domestique ne saurait suffire à *servir tant de personnes. Il suffit* de *vous dire*

Tâcher takes *à*, when the action passes from the subject; *de*, when it does not.
Il tâche à *me nuire. Il tâche* de *se débarrasser de ses dettes*

Tarder takes *à*, when the object is without; *de*, when it is within, and with a dative.
Il tarde à vous punir. Il tarde de *se repentir. Il me tarde* de *vous voir.*

Venir with *à*, means to happen, to begin; with *de*, to have just; with neither, to come.
S' il vient à mourir. Il vient de *partir. Je viens adorer l' Éternel.*

Refuser takes *à*, before *dîner*, *manger*, *déjeuner*, etc.; *de quoi* being understood. It takes *de*, before other infinitives.
Il lui refuse à manger. Il refuse de *venir.*

Désirer takes *de*, when there is any obstacle to the desire. When there is no obstacle it governs the infinitive without a preposition.

Espérer takes *de*, when uncertainty is implied; otherwise no preposition.
J' espère bien le revoir. Peut-on espérer de *vous revoir?*

Préférer takes *de*, before an infinitive with an accessory; otherwise no preposition.
Je préfère mourir. Je préfère de *mourir avec vous, plutôt que de vous trahir.*

Souhaiter takes or omits *de*, when the action is confined to the subject; otherwise it requires the subjunctive. Je souhaiterais pouvoir; or, *de* pouvoir vous obliger. Je souhaite qu' il vienne.

POUR is used before the infinitive to denote the end, design, or cause for which any thing is done.

PARTICIPLES used as adjectives become such in all respects.

The *present participle* not used as an adjective is invariable.

The *past participle* accompanied by *être*, in verbs not reflective, agrees with the subject of the verb. When accompanied by *avoir*, or by *être* in reflective verbs, it agrees with its direct object when that object precedes it, but remains invariable when the object follows it.

1. The past participle sometimes has the infinitive mood for its object,* and sometimes the close of the sentence preceded by *que*. (*See Less.* 96, p. 340–1.)

2. When an infinitive is understood after the participles *dû*, *pu*, *voulu*, they are not varied, because their object is the infinitive understood; as, *Je lui ai rendu tous les services que j' ai* dû, or pu, or voulu, *lui rendre* being understood. *Il m' a payé les sommes qu' il m' a* DUES. *Il veut fortement les choses qu' il a une fois* VOULUES. In these last sentences, no infinitive being understood, the participle has the preceding pronoun for its object.

3. The past participle following *le peu*, when it signifies a small quantity, agrees with the noun following *le peu;* but when *le peu* signifies lack or destitution, the participle is not varied; as, *Le peu d' affection que vous lui avez* témoignée *lui a rendu le courage. Le peu d' affection que vous lui avez* témoigné *l' a décour-*

* The preceding noun or pronoun may be known to be the object of the participle, if the infinitive can be changed to the present participle and preserve the sense: *Je les ai* vus *repousser les ennemis.* Here we can say, *Je les ai vus* REPOUSSANT *les ennemis*, and *les* is the object of *vus. Je les ai vu repousser par les ennemis.* Here we can not say, *Je les ai vus repoussant par les ennemis;* and accordingly *repousser*, not *les*, is the object of the participle.

agé. In the former of these sentences, *le peu d' affection* denotes some affection, though but little; in the latter it denotes lack or destitution of affection.

It may be taken as a general rule, that when the sense allows the suppression of *le peu*, as in the former of these sentences,* the participle is varied, otherwise not.

4. The participles *excepté*, *supposé*, *passé*, and *vu*, employed without an auxiliary, are variable only when they are placed after the words which they qualify; as, *Mes amis* exceptés, *ces projets* supposés—*cette heure* passée, *des faits* vus. But when these participles precede their nouns, they are written unvaried; as, Excepté *mes amis*, supposé *ces projets*, passé *cette heure*—vu *ces faits.*

After these examples, the learner will generally find it easy, on reflection, to determine the object of this participle.

Les dix ans qu' il a vécu, *il les a* vécu *heureux.* Here the participle is not varied because the verb is neuter, and the object is governed by *pendant*, or some preposition understood. *L' affaire fut moins sérieuse que je ne l' avais* pensé. Here *l'* is equivalent to *cela*, and is not feminine; hence the participle is unvaried. *Les livres qu' il nous a* priés *de lui prêter.* Here *livres* is the object of *prêter*, and *que* of the participle. When *eu* and *donné* are followed by a preposition and infinitive, the object may belong either to the participle, or to the infinitive; as, *Les obstacles que j' ai* eus *à surmonter;* or, *que j' ai* eu *à surmonter:* both are admissible.

NEGATIVES.

The negatives in French are *ne*, *ne pas*, *ne point.* *Ne* is the weakest, and *ne point* the strongest, (see pp. 62 and 344.)

1. *Pas* and *point* differ in interrogations. (*Less.* 29, p. 126.)

2. *À moins que*, *si* in the sense of *à moins que*, *de crainte que*, *de peur que*, and *empêcher*, take *ne* before the following verb, (pp. 251, 271.) Also the following when not negative: *autre*, *autrement*, *comparatives of superiority or inferiority;* verbs of *fear* and *apprehension*, and *prendre garde que*, when neither negative nor interrogative, (pp. 244, 245, 174.)

3. *Désespérer*, *disconvenir*, *douter*, and *nier*, when negative, take *ne* before the following verb, (p. 259.)

4. *Pas* is omitted after *ne*, when attended by a word having the force of a negative; as, *jamais*, *rien*, etc., with a subjunctive of interrogation used according to *Rem.* 1, *Less.* 72, (p. 344;) with *que* used for *depuis que* after *il y a*, (p. 282;) and more frequently after *cesser*, *oser*, *pouvoir*, and *savoir*, (p. 338;) also with an infinitive preceded by *que*, (p. 352.)

---

* We can say, *L' affection que vous lui avez témoignée lui a rendu le courage;* but we could not with propriety say, *L' affection que vous lui avez témoignée l' a découragé.*

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *AVOIR*, TO HAVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Avoir,	*to have.*	Avoir eu,	*to have had*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Ayant,	*having.*	Ayant eu,	*having had.*
PAST.			
Eu, *m.*; eue, *f.*	*had.*		

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
J' ai,	*I have.*	J' ai eu,	*I have had.*
Tu as,	*thou hast.*	Tu as eu,	*thou hast had.*
Il a,	*he has.*	Il a eu,	*he has had.*
Nous avons,	*we have.*	Nous avons eu,	*we have had.*
Vous avez,	*you have.*	Vous avez eu,	*you have had.*
Ils ont,	*they have.*	Ils ont eu,	*they have had.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
J' avais,	*I had.*	J' avais eu,	*I had had.*
Tu avais,	*thou hadst.*	Tu avais eu,	*thou hadst had.*
Il avait,	*he had.*	Il avait eu,	*he had had.*
Nous avions,	*we had.*	Nous avions eu,	*we had had.*
Vous aviez,	*you had.*	Vous aviez eu,	*you had had.*
Ils avaient,	*they had.*	Ils avaient eu,	*they had had.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
J' eus,	*I had.*	J' eus eu,	*I had had.*
Tu eus,	*thou hadst.*	Tu eus eu,	*thou hadst had.*
Il eut,	*he had.*	Il eut eu,	*he had had.*
Nous eûmes,	*we had.*	Nous eûmes eu,	*we had had.*
Vous eûtes,	*you had.*	Vous eûtes eu,	*you had had.*
Ils eurent,	*they had.*	Ils eurent eu,	*they had had.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
J' aurai,	*I shall have.*	J' aurai eu,	*I shall have had.*
Tu auras,	*thou wilt have.*	Tu auras eu,	*thou wilt have had.*
Il aura,	*he will have.*	Il aura eu,	*he will have had.*
Nous aurons,	*we shall have.*	Nous aurons eu,	*we shall have had.*
Vous aurez,	*you will have.*	Vous aurez eu,	*you will have had.*
Ils auront,	*they will have.*	Ils auront eu,	*they will have had.*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
J' aurais,	*I should have.*	J' aurais eu,	*I should have had.*
Tu aurais,	*thou wouldst have.*	Tu aurais eu,	*thou wouldst have had.*
Il aurait,	*he would have.*	Il aurait eu,	*he would have had.*
Nous aurions,	*we should have.*	Nous aurions eu,	*we should have had.*
Vous auriez,	*you would have.*	Vous auriez eu,	*you would have had.*
Ils auraient,	*they would have.*	Ils auraient eu,	*they would have had.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Aie, *have (thou.)* | Ayons, *let us (have.)* | Ayez, *have (you.)*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que j' aie,	*that I may have.*	Que j'aie eu,	*that I may have had.*
Que tu aies,	*that thou mayst have.*	Que tu aies eu,	*that thou mayst have had.*
Qu' il ait,	*that he may have.*	Qu' il ait eu,	*that he may have had.*
Que nous ayons,	*that we may have.*	Que nous ayons eu,	*that we may have had.*
Que vous ayez,	*that you may have.*	Que vous ayez eu,	*that you may have had.*
Qu' ils aient,	*that they may have.*	Qu' ils aient eu,	*that they may have had.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que j' eusse,	*that I might have.*	Que j' eusse eu,	*that I might have had.*
Que tu eusses,	*that thou mightst have.*	Que tu eusses eu,	*that thou mightst have had.*
Qu' il eût,	*that he might have.*	Qu' il eût eu,	*that he might have had.*
Que nous eussions,	*that we might have.*	Que nous eussions eu,	*that we might have had.*
Que vous eussiez,	*that you might have.*	Que vous eussiez eu,	*that you might have had.*
Qu' ils eussent,	*that they might have.*	Qu' ils eussent eu,	*that they might have had.*

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *ÊTRE*, TO BE.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Être,	*to be.*	Avoir été,	*to have been.*

Participles.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Étant,	*being.*	Ayant été,	*having been*
PAST.			
Été,	*been.*		

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je suis,	*I am.*	J' ai été,	*I have been.*
Tu es,	*thou art.*	Tu as été,	*thou hast been.*
Il est,	*he is.*	Il a été,	*he has been.*
Nous sommes,	*we are.*	Nous avons été,	*we have been.*
Vous êtes,	*you are.*	Vous avez été,	*you have been.*
Ils sont,	*they are.*	Ils ont été,	*they have been.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
J' étais,	*I was.*	J' avais été,	*I had been.*
Tu étais,	*thou wast.*	Tu avais été,	*thou hadst been.*
Il était,	*he was.*	Il avait été,	*he had been.*
Nous étions,	*we were.*	Nous avions été,	*we had been.*
Vous étiez,	*you were.*	Vous aviez été,	*you had been.*
Ils étaient,	*they were.*	Ils avaient été,	*they had been.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je fus,	*I was.*	J' eus été,	*I had been.*
Tu fus,	*thou wast.*	Tu eus été,	*thou hadst been.*
Il fut,	*he was.*	Il eut été,	*he had been.*
Nous fûmes,	*we were.*	Nous eûmes été,	*we had been.*
Vous fûtes,	*you were.*	Vous eûtes été,	*you had been.*
Ils furent,	*they were.*	Ils eurent été,	*they had been.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
Je serai,	*I shall be.*	J' aurai été,	*I shall have been.*
Tu seras,	*thou wilt be.*	Tu auras été,	*thou wilt have been.*
Il sera,	*he will be.*	Il aura été,	*he will have been.*
Nous serons,	*we shall be.*	Nous aurons été,	*we shall have been.*
Vous serez,	*you will be.*	Vous aurez été,	*you will have been.*
Ils seront,	*they will be.*	Ils auront été,	*they will have been.*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
Je serais,	*I should be.*	J' aurais été,	*I should have been.*
Tu serais,	*thou wouldst be.*	Tu aurais été,	*thou wouldst have been.*
Il serait,	*he would be.*	Il aurait été,	*he would have been.*
Nous serions,	*we should be.*	Nous aurions été,	*we should have been.*
Vous seriez,	*you would be.*	Vous auriez été,	*you would have been.*
Ils seraient,	*they would be.*	Ils auraient été,	*they would have been.*

Imperative Mood.

Sois, *be (thou.)* | Soyons, *let us be.* | Soyez, *be (you.)*

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je sois,	*that I may be.*	Que j' aie été,	*that I may have been.*
Que tu sois,	*that thou mayst be.*	Que tu aies été,	*that thou mayst have been.*
Qu' il soit,	*that he may be.*	Qu' il ait été,	*that he may have been.*
Que nous soyons,	*that we may be.*	Que nous ayons été,	*that we may have been.*
Que vous soyez,	*that you may be.*	Que vous ayez été,	*that you may have been.*
Qu' ils soient,	*that they may be.*	Qu' ils aient été,	*that they may have been.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je fusse,	*that I might be.*	Que j' eusse été,	*that I might have been.*
Que tu fusses,	*that thou mightst be.*	Que tu eusses été,	*that thou mightst have been.*
Qu' il fût,	*that he might be.*	Qu' il eût été,	*that he might have been.*
Que nous fussions,	*that we might be.*	Que nous eussions été,	*that we might have been.*
Que vous fussiez,	*that you might be.*	Que vous eussiez été,	*that you might have been.*
Qu' ils fussent,	*that they might be.*	Qu' ils eussent été,	*that they might have been.*

FIRST CONJUGATION—*IN ER.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Parler,	*to speak.*	Avoir parlé,	*to have spoken.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Parlant,	*speaking.*	Ayant parlé,	*having spoken*
PAST.			
Parlé,	*spoken.*		

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je parle,	*I speak.*	J' ai parlé,	*I have spoken.*
Tu parles,	*thou speakest.*	Tu as parlé,	*thou hast spoken.*
Il parle,	*he speaks.*	Il a parlé,	*he has spoken.*
Nous parlons,	*we speak.*	Nous avons parlé,	*we have spoken.*
Vous parlez,	*you speak.*	Vous avez parlé,	*you have spoken.*
Ils parlent,	*they speak.*	Ils ont parlé,	*they have spoken.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je parlais,	*I was speaking.*	J' avais parlé,	*I had spoken.*
Tu parlais,	*thou wast speaking.*	Tu avais parlé,	*thou hadst spoken.*
Il parlait,	*he was speaking.*	Il avait parlé,	*he had spoken.*
Nous parlions,	*we were speaking.*	Nous avions parlé,	*we had spoken.*
Vous parliez,	*you were speaking.*	Vous aviez parlé,	*you had spoken.*
Ils parlaient,	*they were speaking.*	Ils avaient parlé,	*they had spoken.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je parlai,	*I spoke.*	J' eus parlé,	*I had spoken.*
Tu parlas,	*thou spokest.*	Tu eus parlé,	*thou hadst spoken.*
Il parla,	*he spoke.*	Il eut parlé,	*he had spoken.*
Nous parlâmes,	*we spoke.*	Nous eûmes parlé,	*we had spoken.*
Vous parlâtes,	*you spoke.*	Vous eûtes parlé,	*you had spoken.*
Ils parlèrent,	*they spoke.*	Ils eurent parlé,	*they had spoken.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
Je parlerai,	*I shall speak.*	J' aurai parlé,	*I shall have spoken.*
Tu parleras,	*thou wilt speak.*	Tu auras parlé,	*thou wilt have spoken.*
Il parlera,	*he will speak.*	Il aura parlé,	*he will have spoken.*
Nous parlerons,	*we shall speak.*	Nous aurons parlé,	*we shall have spoken.*
Vous parlerez,	*you will speak.*	Vous aurez parlé,	*you will have spoken.*
Ils parleront,	*they will speak.*	Ils auront parlé,	*they will have spoken.*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
Je parlerais,	*I should speak.*	J' aurais parlé,	*I should have spoken.*
Tu parlerais,	*thou wouldst speak.*	Tu aurais parlé,	*thou wouldst have spoken.*
Il parlerait,	*he would speak.*	Il aurait parlé,	*he would have spoken.*
Nous parlerions,	*we should speak.*	Nous aurions parlé,	*we should have spoken.*
Vous parleriez,	*you would speak.*	Vous auriez parlé,	*you would have spoken.*
Ils parleraient,	*they would speak.*	Ils auraient parlé,	*they would have spoken*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Parle, *speak* or *do speak (thou.)* | Parlons, *let us speak.* | Parlez, *speak* or *do speak (you.)*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je parle,	*that I may speak.*	Que j' aie parlé,	*that I may* } *have spoken.*
Que tu parles,	*that thou mayst speak.*	Que tu aies parlé,	*that thou mayst* } *have spoken.*
Qu' il parle,	*that he may speak.*	Qu' il ait parlé,	*that he may* } *have spoken.*
Que nous parlions,	*that we may speak.*	Que nous ayons parlé,	*that we may* } *have spoken.*
Que vous parliez,	*that you may speak.*	Que vous ayez parlé,	*that you may* } *have spoken.*
Qu' ils parlent,	*that they may speak.*	Qu' ils aient parlé,	*that they may* } *have spoken.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je parlasse,	*that I might speak.*	Que j' eusse parlé,	*that I might* } *have spoken.*
Que tu parlasses,	*that thou mightst speak.*	Que tu eusses parlé,	*that thou mightst* } *have spoken.*
Qu' il parlât,	*that he might speak.*	Qu' il eût parlé,	*that he might* } *have spoken.*
Que nous parlassions,	*that we might speak.*	Que nous eussions parlé,	*that we might* } *have spoken.*
Que vous parlassiez,	*that you might speak.*	Que vous eussiez parlé,	*that you might* } *have spoken.*
Qu' ils parlassent,	*that they might speak.*	Qu' ils eussent parlé,	*that they might* } *have spoken.*

SECOND CONJUGATION—IN *IR*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Finir,	*to finish.*	Avoir fini,	*to have finished.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Finissant,	*finishing.*	Ayant fini,	*having finished.*
PAST.			
Fini,	*finished.*		

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je finis,	*I finish.*	J' ai fini,	*I have finished*
Tu finis,	*thou finishest.*	Tu as fini,	*thou hast finished.*
Il finit,	*he finishes.*	Il a fini,	*he has finished*
Nous finissons,	*we finish.*	Nous avons fini,	*we have finished*
Vous finissez,	*you finish.*	Vous avez fini,	*you have finished.*
Ils finissent,	*they finish.*	Ils ont fini,	*they have finished*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je finissais,	*I was finishing.*	J' avais fini,	*I had finished.*
Tu finissais,	*thou wast finishing.*	Tu avais fini,	*thou hadst finished.*
Il finissait,	*he was finishing.*	Il avait fini,	*he had finished*
Nous finissions,	*we were finishing.*	Nous avions fini,	*we had finished*
Vous finissiez,	*you were finishing.*	Vous aviez fini,	*you had finished.*
Ils finissaient,	*they were finishing.*	Ils avaient fini,	*they had finished.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je finis,	*I finished.*	J' eus fini,	*I had finished.*
Tu finis,	*thou finishedst.*	Tu eus fini,	*thou hadst finished.*
Il finit,	*he finished.*	Il eut fini,	*he had finished.*
Nous finîmes,	*we finished.*	Nous eûmes fini,	*we had finished.*
Vous finîtes,	*you finished.*	Vous eûtes fini,	*you had finished.*
Ils finirent,	*they finished.*	Ils eurent fini,	*they had finished.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
Je finirai,	*I shall finish.*	J' aurai fini,	*I shall have finished.*
Tu finiras,	*thou wilt finish.*	Tu auras fini,	*thou wilt have finished.*
Il finira,	*he will finish.*	Il aura fini,	*he will have finished.*
Nous finirons,	*we shall finish.*	Nous aurons fini,	*we shall have finished.*
Vous finirez,	*you will finish.*	Vous aurez fini,	*you will have finished.*
Ils finiront,	*they will finish.*	Ils auront fini,	*they will have finished.*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
Je finirais,	*I should finish.*	J' aurais fini,	*I should have finished.*
Tu finirais,	*thou wouldst finish.*	Tu aurais fini,	*thou wouldst have finished.*
Il finirait,	*he should finish.*	Il aurait fini,	*he would have finished.*
Nous finirions,	*we would finish.*	Nous aurions fini,	*we should have finished.*
Vous finiriez,	*you would finish.*	Vous auriez fini,	*you would have finished.*
Ils finiraient,	*they would finish.*	Ils auraient fini,	*they would have finished.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Finis, *finish (thou.)* | Finissons, *let us finish.* | Finissez, *finish (you.)*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je finisse,	*that I may finish.*	Que j' aie fini,	*that I may have finished*
Que tu finisses,	*that thou mayst finish.*	Que tu aies fini,	*that thou mayst have finished.*
Qu' il finisse,	*that he may finish.*	Qu' il ait fini,	*that he may have finished.*
Que nous finissions,	*that we may finish.*	Que nous ayons fini,	*that we may have finished.*
Que vous finissiez,	*that you may finish.*	Que vous ayez fini,	*that you may have finished.*
Qu' ils finissent,	*that they may finish.*	Qu' ils aient fini,	*that they may have finished.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je finisse,	*that I might finish.*	Que j' eusse fini,	*that I might*
Que tu finisses,	*that thou mightst finish.*	Que tu eusses fini,	*that thou mightst*
Qu' il finît,	*that he might finish.*	Qu' il eût fini,	*that he might*
Que nous finissions,	*that we might finish.*	Que nous eussions fini,	*that we might*
Que vous finissiez,	*that you might finish.*	Que vous eussiez fini,	*that you might*
Qu' ils finissent,	*that they might finish.*	Qu' ils eussent fini,	*that they might*

have finished.

THIRD CONJUGATION—IN *OIR*.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Recevoir,	*to receive.*	Avoir reçu,	*to have received.*

Participles.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Recevant,	*receiving.*	Ayant reçu,	*having received.*
PAST.			
Reçu,	*received.*		

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je reçois,	*I receive.*	J' ai reçu,	*I have received.*
Tu reçois,	*thou receivest.*	Tu as reçu,	*thou hast received.*
Il reçoit,	*he receives.*	Il a reçu,	*he has received.*
Nous recevons,	*we receive.*	Nous avons reçu,	*we have received.*
Vous recevez,	*you receive.*	Vous avez reçu,	*you have received.*
Ils reçoivent,	*they receive.*	Ils ont reçu,	*they have received.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je recevais,	*I was receiving.*	J' avais reçu,	*I had received.*
Tu recevais,	*thou wast receiving.*	Tu avais reçu,	*thou hadst received.*
Il recevait,	*he was receiving.*	Il avait reçu,	*he had received.*
Nous recevions,	*we were receiving.*	Nous avions reçu,	*we had received.*
Vous receviez,	*you were receiving.*	Vous aviez reçu,	*you had received.*
Ils recevaient,	*they were receiving.*	Ils avaient reçu,	*they had received.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je reçus,	*I received.*	J' eus reçu,	*I had received.*
Tu reçus,	*thou receivedst.*	Tu eus reçu,	*thou hadst received.*
Il reçut,	*he received.*	Il eut reçu,	*he had received.*
Nous reçûmes,	*we received.*	Nous eûmes reçu,	*we had received.*
Vous reçûtes,	*you received.*	Vous eûtes reçu,	*you had received.*
Ils reçurent,	*they received.*	Ils eurent reçu,	*they had received.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
Je recevrai,	*I shall receive.*	J' aurai reçu,	*I shall have received.*
Tu recevras,	*thou wilt receive.*	Tu auras reçu,	*thou wilt have received.*
Il recevra,	*he will receive.*	Il aura reçu,	*he will have received*
Nous recevrons,	*we shall receive.*	Nous aurons reçu,	*we shall have received.*
Vous recevrez,	*you will receive.*	Vous aurez reçu,	*you will have received.*
Ils recevront,	*they will receive.*	Ils auront reçu,	*they will have received.*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
Je recevrais,	*I should receive.*	J' aurais reçu,	*I should have received.*
Tu recevrais,	*thou wouldst receive.*	Tu aurais reçu,	*thou wouldst have received.*
Il recevrait,	*he would receive.*	Il aurait reçu,	*he would have received.*
Nous recevrions,	*we should receive.*	Nous aurions reçu,	*we should have received.*
Vous recevriez,	*you would receive.*	Vous auriez reçu,	*you would have received.*
Ils recevraient,	*they would receive.*	Ils auraient reçu,	*they would have received.*

Imperative Mood.

Reçois, *receive (thou.)* | Recevons, *let us receive.* | Recevez, *receive (you.)*

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je reçoive,	*that I may receive.*	Que j' aie reçu,	*that I may have*
Que tu reçoives,	*that thou mayst receive.*	Que tu aies reçu,	*that thou mayst have*
Qu' il reçoive,	*that he may receive.*	Qu' il ait reçu,	*that he may have*
Que nous recevions,	*that we may receive.*	Que nous ayons reçu,	*that we may have*
Que vous receviez,	*that you may receive.*	Que vous ayez reçu,	*that you may have*
Qu' ils reçoivent,	*that they may receive.*	Qu' ils aient reçu,	*that they may have*
			received.
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je reçusse,	*that I might receive.*	Que j' eusse reçu,	*that I might*
Que tu reçusses,	*that thou mightst receive.*	Que tu eusses reçu,	*that thou mightst*
Qu' il reçût,	*that he might receive.*	Qu' il eût reçu,	*that he might*
Que nous reçussions,	*that we might receive.*	Que nous eussions reçu,	*that we might*
Que vous reçussiez,	*that you might receive.*	Que vous eussiez reçu,	*that you might*
Qu' ils reçussent,	*that they might receive.*	Qu' ils eussent reçu,	*that they might*
			have received.

FOURTH CONJUGATION—IN *RE*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Vendre,	*to sell.*	Avoir vendu,	*to have sold.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Vendant,	*selling.*	Ayant vendu,	*having sold.*
PAST.			
Vendu,	*sold.*		

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je vends,	*I sell.*	J' ai vendu,	*I have sold.*
Tu vends,	*thou sellest.*	Tu as vendu,	*thou hast sold.*
Il vend,	*he sells.*	Il a vendu,	*he has sold.*
Nous vendons,	*we sell.*	Nous avons vendu,	*we have sold.*
Vous vendez,	*you sell.*	Vous avez vendu,	*you have sold.*
Ils vendent,	*they sell.*	Ils ont vendu,	*they have sold.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je vendais,	*I was selling.*	J' avais vendu,	*I had sold.*
Tu vendais,	*thou wast selling.*	Tu avais vendu,	*thou hadst sold.*
Il vendait,	*he was selling.*	Il avait vendu,	*he had sold.*
Nous vendions,	*we were selling.*	Nous avions vendu	*we had sold.*
Vous vendiez,	*you were selling.*	Vous aviez vendu,	*you had sold.*
Ils vendaient,	*they were selling.*	Ils avaient vendu,	*they had sold.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je vendis,	*I sold.*	J' eus vendu,	*I had sold.*
Tu vendis,	*thou soldest.*	Tu eus vendu,	*thou hadst sold.*
Il vendit,	*he sold.*	Il eut vendu,	*he had sold.*
Nous vendîmes,	*we sold.*	Nous eûmes vendu,	*we had sold.*
Vous vendîtes,	*you sold.*	Vous eûtes vendu,	*you had sold.*
Ils vendirent,	*they sold.*	Ils eurent vendu,	*they had sold.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
Je vendrai,	*I shall sell.*	J' aurai vendu,	*I shall have sold.*
Tu vendras,	*thou wilt sell.*	Tu auras vendu,	*thou wilt have sold.*
Il vendra,	*he will sell.*	Il aura vendu,	*he will have sold.*
Nous vendrons,	*we shall sell.*	Nous aurons vendu,	*we shall have sold.*
Vous vendrez,	*you will sell.*	Vous aurez vendu,	*you will have sold.*
Ils vendront,	*they will sell.*	Ils auront vendu,	*they will have sold*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
Je vendrais,	*I should sell.*	J' aurais vendu,	*I should have sold.*
Tu vendrais,	*thou wouldst sell.*	Tu aurais vendu,	*thou wouldst have sold*
Il vendrait,	*he would sell.*	Il aurait vendu,	*he would have sold.*
Nous vendrions,	*we should sell.*	Nous aurions vendu,	*we should have sold*
Vous vendriez,	*you would sell.*	Vous auriez vendu,	*you would have sold.*
Ils vendraient,	*they would sell.*	Ils auraient vendu,	*they would have sold*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Vends, *sell (thou.)* | Vendons, *let us sell.* | Vendez, *sell (you.)*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je vende,	*that I may sell.*	Que j' aie vendu,	*that I may have sold.*
Que tu vendes,	*that thou mayst sell.*	Que tu aies vendu,	*that thou mayst have sold.*
Qu' il vende,	*that he may sell.*	Qu' il ait vendu,	*that he may have sold.*
Que nous vendions,	*that we may sell.*	Que nous ayons vendu,	*that we may have sold.*
Que vous vendiez,	*that you may sell.*	Que vous ayez vendu,	*that you may have sold.*
Qu' ils vendent,	*that they may sell.*	Qu' ils aient vendu,	*that they may have sold.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je vendisse,	*that I might sell.*	Que j' eusse vendu,	*that I might*
Que tu vendisses,	*that thou mightst sell.*	Que tu eusses vendu,	*that thou mightst*
Qu' il vendît,	*that he might sell.*	Qu' il eût vendu,	*that he might*
Que nous vendissions,	*that we might sell.*	Que nous eussions vendu,	*that we might*
Que vous vendissiez,	*that you might sell.*	Que vous eussiez vendu,	*that you might*
Qu' ils vendissent,	*that they might sell.*	Qu' ils eussent vendu,	*that they might*

have sold.

CONJUGATION OF A REFLECTED VERB.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Se lever,	*to rise.*	S' être levé,	*to have risen.*

Participles.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Se levant,	*rising.*	S' étant levé,	*having risen.*
PAST.			
Levé,	*risen.*		

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je me lève,	*I rise.*	Je me suis levé,	*I have risen.*
Tu te lèves,	*thou risest.*	Tu t' es levé,	*thou hast risen.*
Il se lève,	*he rises.*	Il s' est levé,	*he has risen.*
Nous nous levons,	*we rise.*	Nous nous sommes levés,	*we have risen.*
Vous vous levez,	*you rise.*	Vous vous êtes levés,	*you have risen.*
Ils se lèvent,	*they rise.*	Ils se sont levés,	*they have risen.*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je me levais,	*I was rising.*	Je m' étais levé,	*I had risen.*
Tu te levais,	*thou wast rising.*	Tu t' étais levé,	*thou hadst risen.*
Il se levait,	*he was rising.*	Il s' était levé,	*he had risen.*
Nous nous levions,	*we were rising.*	Nous nous étions levés,	*we had risen.*
Vous vous leviez,	*you were rising.*	Vous vous étiez levés,	*you had risen.*
Ils se levaient,	*they were rising.*	Ils s' étaient levés,	*they had risen.*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je me levai,	*I rose.*	Je me fus levé,	*I had risen.*
Tu te levas,	*thou rosest.*	Tu te fus levé,	*thou hadst risen.*
Il se leva,	*he rose.*	Il se fut levé,	*he had risen.*
Nous nous levâmes,	*we rose.*	Nous nous fûmes levés,	*we had risen.*
Vous vous levâtes,	*you rose.*	Vous vous fûtes levés,	*you had risen.*
Ils se levèrent,	*they rose.*	Ils se furent levés,	*they had risen.*
FUTURE.		SECOND FUTURE.	
Je me lèverai,	*I shall rise.*	Je me serai levé,	*I shall have risen.*
Tu te lèveras,	*thou wilt rise.*	Tu te seras levé,	*thou wilt have risen.*
Il se lèvera,	*he will rise.*	Il se sera levé,	*he will have risen.*
Nous nous lèverons,	*we shall rise.*	Nous nous serons levés,	*we shall have risen.*
Vous vous lèverez,	*you will rise.*	Vous vous serez levés,	*you will have risen.*
Ils se lèveront,	*they will rise.*	Ils se seront levés,	*they will have risen.*
CONDITIONAL PRESENT.		CONDITIONAL PAST.	
Je me lèverais,	*I should rise.*	Je me serais levé,	*I should have risen.*
Tu te lèverais,	*thou wouldst rise.*	Tu te serais levé,	*thou wouldst have risen.*
Il se lèverait,	*he would rise.*	Il se serait levé,	*he would have risen.*
Nous nous lèverions,	*we should rise.*	Nous nous serions levés,	*we should have risen.*
Vous vous lèveriez,	*you would rise.*	Vous vous seriez levés,	*you would have risen.*
Ils se lèveraient,	*they would rise.*	Ils se seraient levés,	*they would have risen.*

Imperative Mood.

Lève-toi, *rise (thou.)* | Levons-nous, *let us rise.* | Levez-vous, *rise (you.)*

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je me lève,	*that I may rise.*	Que je me sois levé,	*that I may*
Que tu te lèves,	*that thou mayst rise.*	Que tu te sois levé,	*that thou mayst*
Qu' il se lève,	*that he may rise.*	Qu' il se soit levé,	*that he may*
Que nous nous levions,	*that we may rise.*	Que nous nous soyons levés,	*that we may*
Que vous vous leviez,	*that you may rise.*	Que vous vous soyez levés,	*that you may*
Qu' ils se lèvent,	*that they may rise.*	Qu' ils se soient levés,	*that they may*
			have risen.
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je me levasse,	*that I might rise.*	Que je me fusse levé,	*that I*
Que tu te levasses,	*that thou mightst rise.*	Que tu te fusses levé,	*that thou*
Qu' il se levât,	*that he might rise.*	Qu' il se fût levé,	*that he*
Que nous nous levassions,	*that we might rise.*	Que nous nous fussions levés,	*that we*
Que vous vous levassiez,	*that you might rise.*	Que vous vous fussiez levés,	*that you*
Qu' ils se levassent,	*that they might rise.*	Qu' ils se fussent levés,	*that they*
			might have risen.

CONJUGATION OF

FIRST

Infinitive *present.*	Participle *present.*	Participle *past.*	Indicative *present.*		Indicative *imperfect.*
Aller, to go.	Allant,	Allé,	Je vais, tu vas, il va,	nous allons, vous allez, ils vont.	J' allais, etc.,
Envoyer, to send.	Envoyant,	Envoyé,	J' envoie, tu envoies, il envoie,	nous envoyons, vous envoyez, ils envoient,	J' envoyais, etc.,

SECOND

Acquérir, to acquire.	Acquérant,	Acquis,	J' acquiers, tu acquiers, il acquiert,	nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils acquièrent,	J' acquérais, etc.
Assaillir, to assail.	Assaillant,	Assailli,	J' assaille, tu assailles, il assaille,	nous assaillons, vous assaillez, ils assaillent,	J' assaillais, etc.,
Bouillir, to boil.	Bouillant,	Bouilli,	Je bous, tu bous, il bout,	nous bouillons, vous bouillez, ils bouillent,	Je bouillais, etc.,
Courir, to run.	Courant,	Couru,	Je cours, tu cours, il court,	nous courons, vous courez, ils courent,	Je courais, etc.,
Cueillir, to gather.	Cueillant,	Cueilli,	Je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille,	nous cueillons, vous cueillez, ils cueillent,	Je cueillais, etc.,
Dormir, to sleep.	Dormant,	Dormi,	Je dors, tu dors, il dort,	nous dormons, vous dormez, ils dorment,	Je dormais, etc.,
Fuir, to fly.	Fuyant,	Fui,	Je fuis, tu fuis, il fuit,	nous fuyons, vous fuyez, ils fuient,	Je fuyais, etc.,
Mentir, to lie.	Mentant,	Menti,	Je mens, tu mens, il ment,	nous mentons, vous mentez, ils mentent,	Je mentais, etc.,

* The third person of both numbers in the imperative

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

CONJUGATION.

Past *definite.*	Future and Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive *present.*		Subjunctive *imperfect.*
J' allai, etc.,	J' irai, etc., J' irais, etc.,	Va, allons, allez,*	J' aille, tu ailles, il aille,	nous allions, vous alliez, ils aillent,	J' allasse, etc.
J' envoyai, etc.,	J' enverrai, etc., J' enverrais, etc.,	Envoie, envoyons, envoyez,	J' envoie, tu envoies, il envoie,	nous envoyions, vous envoyiez, ils envoient,	J' envoyasse. etc.

CONJUGATION.

J' acquis, etc.,	J' acquerrai, etc., J' acquerrais, etc.,	Acquiers, acquérons, acquérez,	J' acquière, tu acquières, il acquière,	nous acquérions, vous acquériez, ils acquièrent,	J' acquisse, etc.
J' assaillis, etc.,	Assaillerai, etc., Assaillerais, etc.,	Assaille, assaillons, assaillez,	J' assaille, tu assailles, il assaille,	nous assaillions, vous assailliez, ils assaillent,	J' assaillisse etc.
Je bouillis, etc.,	Je bouillirai, etc., Je bouillirais, etc.,	Bous, bouillons, bouillez,	Je bouille, tu bouilles, il bouille,	nous bouillions, vous bouilliez, ils bouillent,	Je bouillisse etc.
Je courus, etc.,	Je courrai, etc., Je courrais, etc.,	Cours, courons, courez,	Je coure, tu coures, il coure,	nous courions, vous couriez, il courent,	Je courusse, etc.
Je cueillis, etc.,	Je cueillerai, etc., Je cueillerais, etc.,	Cueille, cueillons, cueillez,	Je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille,	nous cueillions, vous cueilliez, ils cueillent,	Je cueillisse, etc.
Je dormis, etc.,	Je dormirai, etc., Je dormirais, etc.,	Dors, dormons, dormez,	Je dorme, tu dormes, il dorme,	nous dormions, vous dormiez, ils dorment,	Je dormisse, etc.
Je fuis, etc.,	Je fuirai, etc., Je fuirais, etc.,	Fuis, fuyons, fuyez,	Je fuie, tu fuies, il fuie,	nous fuyions, vous fuyiez, il fuient,	Je fuisse, etc.
Je mentis, etc.,	Je mentirai, etc., Je mentirais, etc.,	Mens, mentons, mentez,	Je mente, tu mentes, il mente,	nous mentions, vous mentiez, ils mentent,	Je mentisse, etc.

* s always the same as in the subjunctive.

Infinitive present.	Participle present.	Participle past.	Indicative present.		Indicative imperfect.
Mourir, to die,	Mourant,	Mort,	Je meurs, tu meurs, il meurt,	nous mourons, vous mourez, ils meurent,	Je mourais, etc.,
Ouvrir, to open.	Ouvrant,	Ouvert,	J' ouvre, tu ouvres, il ouvre,	nous ouvrons, vous ouvrez, ils ouvrent,	J' ouvrais, etc.,
Venir, to come.	Venant,	Venu,	Je viens, tu viens, il vient,	nous venons, vous venez, ils viennent,	Je venais, etc.,
Vêtir, to clothe.	Vêtant,	Vêtu,	Je vêts,* tu vêts, il vêt,	nous vêtons, vous vêtez, ils vêtent,	Je vêtais,* etc.,

THIRD

Asseoir, to seat.	Asseyant,	Assis,	J' assieds, tu assieds, il assied,	nous asseyons, vous asseyez, ils asseient,	J' asseyais, etc.,
Déchoir, to fall away.	(wanting,)	Déchu,	Je déchois, tu déchois, il déchoit,	nous déchoyons, vous déchoyez, ils déchoient,	(wanting,) " "
Mouvoir, to move.	Mouvant, " "	Mu,	Je meus, tu meus, il meut,	nous mouvons, vous mouvez, ils meuvent,	Je mouvais, etc.,
Pouvoir, to be able,	Pouvant,	Pu,	Je puis, peux, tu peux, il peut,	nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent,	Je pouvais, etc.,
Savoir, to know.	Sachant,	Su,	Je sais, tu sais, il sait,	nous savons, vous savez, ils savent,	Je savais, etc.,
Valoir, to be worth.	Valant,	Valu,	Je vaux, tu vaux, il vaut,	nous valons, nous valez, ils valent,	Je valais, etc.,
Voir, to see.	Voyant,	Vu,	Je vois, tu vois, il voit,	nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voient,	Je voyais, etc.,

* This verb is hardly ever used in the singular

Past *definite.*	Future and Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive *present.*		Subjunctive *imperfect.*
Je mourus, etc.,	Je mourrai, etc., Je mourrais, etc.,	Meurs, mourons, mourez,	Je meure, tu meures, il meure,	nous mourions, vous mouriez, ils meurent,	Je mourusse, etc.
J' ouvris, etc.,	J' ouvrirai, etc., J' ouvrirais, etc.,	Ouvre, ouvrons, ouvrez,	J' ouvre, tu ouvres, il ouvre,	nous ouvrons, vous ouvrez, ils ouvrent,	J' ouvrisse, etc.
Je vins, etc.,	Je viendrai, etc., Je viendrais, etc.,	Viens, venons, venez,	Je vienne, tu viennes, il vienne,	nous venions, vous veniez, ils viennent,	Je vinsse, etc.
Je vêtis, etc.,	Je vêtirai, etc., Je vêtirais,	Vêts, vêtons, vêtez,	Je vête, tu vêtes, il vête,	nous vêtions, vous vêtiez, ils vêtent,	Je vêtisse, etc.

CONJUGATION.

J' assis, etc.,	J' assiérai, etc., J' assiérais, etc.,	Assieds, asseyons, asseyez,	J' asseie, tu asseies, il asseie,	nous asseyions, vous asseyiez, ils asseient,	J' assisse, etc.
Je déchus, etc.,	Je décherrai, etc., Je décherrais, etc.,	(wanting,) " "	Je déchoie, tu déchoies, il déchoie,	nous déchoyions, vous déchoyiez, ils déchoient,	Je déchusse, etc.
Je mus, etc.,	Je mouvrai, etc., Je mouvrais, etc.,	Meus, mouvons, mouvez,	Je meuve, tu meuves, il meuve,	nous mouvions, vous mouviez, ils meuvent,	Je musse, etc,
Je pus, etc.,	Je pourrai, etc., Je pourrais, etc.,	(wanting,) " "	Je puisse, tu puisses, il puisse,	nous puissions, vous puissiez, ils puissent,	Je pusse, etc.
Je sus, etc.,	Je saurai, etc., Je saurais, etc.,	Sache, sachons, sachez,	Je sache, tu saches, il sache,	nous sachions, vous sachiez, ils sachent,	Je susse, etc.
Je valus, etc.,	Je vaudrai, etc., Je vaudrais, etc.,	Vaux, valons, valez,	Je vaille, tu vailles, il vaille,	nous valions, vous valiez, ils vaillent,	Je valusse, etc.
Je vis, etc.,	Je verrai, etc., Je verrais, etc.,	Vois, voyons, voyez,	Je voie, tu voies, il voie,	nous voyions, vous voyiez, ils voient,	Je visse, etc.

of the present and imperfect indicative.

Infinitive *present.*	Participle *present.*	Participle *past.*	Indicative *present.*		Indicative *imperfect.*
Vouloir, to be willing.	Voulant,	Voulu,	Je veux, tu veux, il veut,	nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent,	Je voulais, etc.,

FOURTH

Battre, to beat.	Battant,	Battu,	Je bats, tu bats, il bat,	nous battons, vous battez, ils battent,	Je battais, etc.,
Boire, to drink.	Buvant,	Bu,	Je bois, tu bois, il boit,	nous buvons, vous buvez, ils boivent,	Je buvais, etc.,
Conclure, to conclude.	Concluant,	Conclu,	Je conclus, tu conclus, il conclut,	nous concluons, vous concluez, ils concluent,	Je concluais, etc.,
Coudre, to sew.	Cousant,	Cousu,	Je couds, tu couds, il coud,	nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent,	Je cousais, etc.,
Croire, to believe.	Croyant,	Cru,	Je crois, tu crois, il croit,	nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient,	Je croyais, etc.,
Croître, to grow.	Croissant,	Crû,	Je croîs, tu croîs, il croît,	nous croissons, vous croissez, ils croissent,	Je croissais, etc.,
Cuire, to cook.	Cuisant,	Cuit,	Je cuis, tu cuis, il cuit,	nous cuisons, vous cuisez, ils cuisent,	Je cuisais, etc.,
Dire, to say.	Disant,	Dit,	Je dis, tu dis, il dit,	nous disons, vous dites, ils disent,	Je disais, etc.,
Écrire, to write.	Écrivant,	Écrit,	J' écris, tu écris, il écrit,	nous écrivons, vous écrivez, ils écrivent,	J' écrivais, etc.,
Faire, to make.	Faisant,	Fait,	Je fais, tu fais, il fait,	nous faisons, vous faites, ils font,	Je faisais, etc.,
Joindre, to join.	Joignant,	Joint,	Je joins, tu joins, il joint,	nous joignons, vous joignez, ils joignent,	Je joignais, etc.,

Past *definite.*	Future and Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive *present.*		Subjunctive *imperfect.*
Je voulus, etc.,	Je voudrai, etc., Je voudrais, etc.,	Veuille, veuillons, veuillez,	Je veuille, tu veuilles, il veuille,	nous voulions, vous vouliez, ils veuillent,	Je voulusse, etc.

CONJUGATION.

Je battis, etc.,	Je battrai, etc., Je battrais, etc.,	Bats, battons, battez,	Je batte, tu battes, il batte,	nous battions, vous battiez, ils battent,	Je battisse, etc.
Je bus, etc.,	Je boirai, etc., Je boirais, etc.,	Bois, buvons, buvez,	Je boive, tu boives, il boive,	nous buvions, vous buviez, ils boivent,	Je busse, etc.
Je conclus, etc.,	Je conclurai, etc., Je conclurais, etc.,	Conclus, concluons, concluez,	Je conclue, tu conclues, il conclue,	nous concluions, vous concluiez, ils concluent,	Je conclusse, etc.
Je cousis, etc.,	Je coudrai, etc., Je coudrais, etc.,	Couds, cousons, cousez,	Je couse, tu couses, il couse,	nous cousions, vous cousiez, ils cousent,	Je cousisse, etc.
Je crus, etc.,	Je croirai, etc., Je croirais, etc.,	Crois, croyons, croyez,	Je croie, tu croies, il croie,	nous croyions, vous croyiez, ils croient,	Je crusse, etc.
Je crûs, etc.,	Je croîtrai, etc., Je croîtrais, etc.,	Croîs, croissons, croissez,	Je croisse, tu croisses, il croisse,	nous croissions, vous croissiez, ils croissent,	Je crûsse, etc.
Je cuisis, etc.,	Je cuirai, etc., Je cuirais, etc.,	Cuis, cuisons, cuisez,	Je cuise, tu cuises, il cuise,	nous cuisions, vous cuisiez, ils cuisent,	Je cuisisse, etc.
Je dis, etc.,	Je dirai, etc., Je dirais, etc.,	Dis, disons, dites,	Je dise, tu dises, il dise,	nous disions, vous disiez, ils disent,	Je disse, etc.
J' écrivis, etc.,	J' écrirai, etc., J' écrirais, etc.,	Écris, écrivons, écrivez,	J' écrive, tu écrives, il écrive,	nous écrivions, vous écriviez, ils écrivent,	J' écrivisse, etc.
Je fis, etc.,	Je ferai, etc., Je ferais, etc.,	Fais, faisons, faites,	Je fasse, tu fasses, il fasse,	nous fassions, vous fassiez, ils fassent,	Je fisse, etc.
Je joignis, etc.,	Je joindrai, etc., Je joindrais, etc.,	Joins, joignons, joignez,	Je joigne, tu joignes, il joigne,	nous joignions, vous joigniez, ils joignent.	Je joignisse, etc.

Infinitive *present.*	Participle *present.*	Participle *past.*	Indicative *present.*		Indicative *imperfect.*
Lire, to read.	Lisant,	Lu,	Je lis, tu lis, il lit,	nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent,	Je lisais, etc.,
Mettre, to put.	Mettant,	Mis,	Je mets, tu mets, il met,	nous mettons, vous mettez, ils mettent,	Je mettais, etc.,
Moudre, to grind	Moulant,	Moulu,	Je mouds, tu mouds, il moud,	nous moulons, vous moulez, ils moulent,	Je moulais, etc.,
Naître, to be born.	Naissant,	Né,	Je nais, tu nais, il naît,	nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent,	Je naissais, etc.
Plaire, to please.	Plaisant,	Plu,	Je plais, tu plais, il plaît,	nous plaisons, vous plaisez, ils plaisent,	Je plaisais, etc.,
Prendre, to take.	Prenant,	Pris,	Je prends, tu prends, il prend,	nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent,	Je prenais, etc.,
Résoudre, to resolve.	Résolvant,	Résous and Résolu,	Je résous, tu résous, il résout,	nous résolvons, vous résolvez, ils résolvent,	Je résolvais, etc.,
Rire, to laugh.	Riant,	Ri,	Je ris, tu ris, il rit,	nous rions, vous riez, ils rient,	Je riais, etc.,
Rompre, to break.	Rompant,	Rompu,	Je romps, tu romps, il rompt,	nous rompons, vous rompez, ils rompent,	Je rompais, etc.,
Suivre, to follow.	Suivant,	Suivi,	Je suis, tu suis, il suit,	nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent,	Je suivais, etc.,
Traire, to milk.	Trayant,	Trait,	Je trais, tu trais, il trait,	nous trayons, vous trayez, ils traient,	Je trayais, etc.,
Vaincre,	Vainquant,	Vaincu,	Je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vainc,	nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent,	Je vainquais, etc.,
Vivre, to live.	Vivant,	Vécu,	Je vis, tu vis, il vit,	nous vivons, vous vivez, ils vivent,	Je vivais, etc.,

Past *definite.*	Future and Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive *present.*		Subjunctive *imperfect.*
Je lus, etc.,	Je lirai, etc., Je lirais, etc.,	Lis, lisons, lisez,	Je lise, tu lises, il lise,	nous lisions, vous lisiez, ils lisent,	Je lusse, etc.
Je mis, etc.,	Je mettrai, etc., Je mettrais, etc.,	Mets, mettons, mettez,	Je mette, tu mettes, il mette,	nous mettions, vous mettiez, ils mettent,	Je misse, etc.
Je moulus,	Je moudrai, etc., Je moudrais, etc.,	Mouds, moulons, moulez,	Je moule, tu moules, il moule,	nous moulions, vous mouliez, ils moulent,	Je moulusse, etc.
Je naquis, etc.,	Je naîtrai, etc., Je naîtrais, etc.,	Nais, naissons, naissez,	Je naisse, tu naisses, il naisse,	nous naissions, vous naissiez, ils naissent,	Je naquisse etc.
Je plus, etc.,	Je plairai, etc., Je plairais, etc.,	Plais, plaisons, plaisez,	Je plaise, tu plaises, il plaise,	nous plaisions, vous plaisiez, ils plaisent,	Je plusse, etc.
Je pris, etc.,	Je prendrai, etc., Je prendrais, etc.,	Prends, prenons, prenez,	Je prenne, tu prennes, il prenne,	nous prenions, vous preniez, ils prennent,	Je prisse, etc.
Je résolus, etc.,	Je résoudrai, etc., Je résoudrais, etc.,	Résous, résolvons, résolvez,	Je résolve, tu résolves, il résolve,	nous résolvions, vous résolviez, ils résolvent,	Je réselusse, etc.
Je ris, etc.,	Je rirai, etc., Je rirais, etc.,	Ris, rions, riez,	Je rie, tu ries, il rie,	nous riions, vous riiez, ils rient,	Je risse, etc.
Je rompis etc.,	Je romprai, etc., Je romprais, etc.,	Romps, rompons, rompez,	Je rompe, tu rompes, il rompe,	nous rompions, vous rompiez, ils rompent,	Je rompisse, etc.
Je suivis, etc.,	Je suivrai, etc., Je suivrais, etc.,	Suis, suivons, suivez,	Je suive, tu suives, il suive,	nous suivions, vous suiviez, ils suivent,	Je suivisse, etc.
(wanting,) " "	Je trairai, etc., Je trairais, etc.,	Trais, trayons, trayez,	Je traie, tu traies, il traie,	nous trayions, vous trayiez, ils traient,	(wanting.) " "
Je vainquis, etc.,	Je vaincrai, etc., Je vaincrais, etc.,	Vaincs, vainquons, vainquez,	Je vainque, tu vainques, il vainque,	nous vainquions, vous vainquiez, ils vainquent,	Je vainquisse, etc.
Je vécus, etc.,	Je vivrai, etc., Je vivrais, etc.,	Vis, vivons, vivez,	Je vive, tu vives, il vive,	nous vivions, vous viviez, ils vivent,	Je vécusse, etc.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Impersonal Verbs are those which are used only in the third person singular, and whose subject is only *il*, used generally without reference to any particular antecedent, as :

Il bruine,	*It drizzles,*	Il grêle,	*It hails,*
Il dégèle,	*It thaws,*	Il neige,	*It snows,*
Il faut,	*It is necessary,*	Il pleut,	*It rains,*
Il gèle,	*It freezes,*	Il tonne.	*It thunders.*

The following are also frequently impersonal.

Il arrive,	*It happens,*	Il semble,	*It seems,*
Il convient,	*It suits,*	Il s' en suit que,	*It follows that,*
Il fait,	*It is,*	Il vaut mieux,	*It is better,*
Il importe.	*It concerns,*	Il y a,	*There is.*
Il paraît,	*It appears,*		

	Pleuvoir,	Falloir,	Y avoir,
	To rain,	*To be necessary,*	*There to be,*
Ind. *Pr.*	Il pleut,	Il faut,	Il y a,
Imp.	Il pleuvait,	Il fallait,	Il y avait,
Simp. Pr.	Il plut,	Il fallut,	Il y eut,
Fut.	Il pleuvra,	Il faudra,	Il y aura,
Cond.	Il pleuvrait,	Il faudrait,	Il y aurait,
Subj. *Pr.*	Qu' il pleuve,	Qu' il faille,	Qu' il y ait,
Imp.	Qu' il plût,	Qu' il fallût,	Qu' il y eût.

IRREGULARITIES.

The following slight irregularities belong to the First Conjugation.

1. Verbs terminating in *ger* take a mute *e* before *a* and *o*, in all the persons where either of these letters would immediately follow the *g ;* as, *nous* mangeons, *il* mangea, etc.

2. Verbs in *cer* take a cedilla under the *c* whenever this letter precedes *a* or *o*, as, *il menaça*, *nous plaçons*, etc.

3. Verbs in *cr* having *é* acute or *e* mute in the penult, change it to *è* grave, when followed by a mute syllable ; as, *Répéter*, je *répète*. *Lever* je *lèverai*, etc, Except that verbs in *éger* always retain *é* acute ; as, *Abréger*, *j' abrége*, etc.

4. Verbs in *eler* and *eter*, double the *l* and *t* before *e* mute ; as, *Appeler*, *j' appelle*. *Jeter*, *je jette*, etc.

Except the following six, which take the grave accent over the penult *e*, according to the preceding rule, (3.) *Acheter*, *Bourreler*, *Déceler*, *Geler*, *Harceler* and *Peler*.

5. Verbs in *yer* change *y* into *i* before *e* mute ; as, *Essuyer*, *j' essuie*, *Essayer*, *il essaie*, etc.

DEFECTIVE,

OR SLIGHTLY IRREGULAR VERBS, WHOSE CONJUGATION NEED NOT BE GIVEN IN FULL.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

BÉNIR, has two past participles, *beni*, blessed: *bénit*, consecrated; otherwise regular.

DÉFAILLIR, *to fail*, is used only in the INDEFINITE PRESENT plural, *Nous défaillons*, etc.; IMPERFECT, *Je défaillais;* PAST DEFINITE, *Je défaillis*, etc., and the infinitive.

FAILLIR, *to fail. Faillant. Failli. Je faux, tu faux, il faut, nous faillons, vous faillez, ils faillent. Je faillais. Je faillis. Je faudrai.* It is used principally in the *Infinitive*, the *Past definite*, and the *Compound tenses.*

FÉRIR, *to strike*, is now used only in the phrase, *sans coup férir.*

FLEURIR, to blossom, when it is applied to the prosperous condition of a person or state, may have the IMPERFECT *florissait*, and must have its PARTICIPLE PRESENT *florissant.*

GÉSIR, to be in bed, has only, *Il gît, nous gisons, vous gisez, il gisent;* IMPERFECT, *Je gisais*, etc.; PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Gisant.*

HAÏR, to hate, is only irregular by leaving off the diæresis of the singular of the present indicative and of the imperative.

OUÏR, to hear, is now hardly ever used except in the infinitive, and the tenses compounded of *ouï*, past participle, and *Avoir.*

QUÉRIR, to fetch, is used only in the infinitive.

SAILLIR, *to project forth, to be salient*, follows the model of *Cueillir*, used only in the third person.

SURGIR, *to arrive at*, is used only in the infinitive.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

APPAROIR, *to appear*, is used only in the INFINITIVE and INDICATIVE PRESENT, third person singular, *il appert.*

CHOIR, *to fall*, is used only in the INFINITIVE and PAST PARTICIPLE *Chu.*

SE CONDOULOIR, *to condole with*, is an old verb, used only in the INFINITIVE.

ÉCHOIR, *to chance to be*, follows the form of *Déchoir*, except that it is used only in the third person singular, and has PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Échéant.*

POURVOIR, *to provide*, follows the form of *Voir*, except PAST DEFINITE, *Pourvus;* FUTURE, *Pourvoirai;* CONDITIONAL, *Pourvoirais;* IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, *Pourvusse.*

PRÉVOIR, *to foresee*, follows the form of *Voir*, except FUTURE, *Prévoirai;* CONDITIONAL, *Prévoirais.*

SEOIR, *to befit*, is used only in the third person of some of the tenses, and follows the form of *Asseoir, Sied, Seyait, Siéra, Siérais.*

SEOIR, *to be seated*, has only PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Séant;* PAST PARTICIPLE, *Sis.*

SOULOIR, *to be accustomed*, is an old verb, used only in the imperfect, *Soulais.*

SURSEOIR, *to suspend*, follows the form of *Voir*, except FUTURE *Surseoirai;* CONDITIONAL, *Surseoirais;* PAST PARTICIPLE, *Sursis.*

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

ABSOUDRE, *to absolve*, follows the form of *Résoudre*, but has no PAST DEFINITE, no IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, and the PAST PARTICIPLE is *Absous*, (feminine,) *absoute*.

ACCROIRE, *to believe*, is used only in the infinitive, and after *Faire*.

BRAIRE, *to bray*, is seldom used except in the INFINITIVE; the INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Il brait, ils braient;* the FUTURE, *Il braira, ils brairont;* and the CONDITIONAL, *Il brairait, ils brairaient*.

BRUIRE, *to roar*, PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Bruyant;* INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Bruit;* IMPERFECT *Bruyait, bruyaient*, (no other forms.)

CIRCONCIRE, *to circumcise*, follows the form of *Dire*, except INDICATIVE PRESENT second person, *Circonsisez*, and PAST PARTICIPLE, *Circoncis*.

CLORE, *to close*, INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Je clos, tu clos, il clot;* FUTURE, *Clorai;* CONDITIONAL, *Clorais;* IMPERATIVE, *Clos;* PAST PARTICIPLE, *Clos*.

CONTREDIRE, *to contradict*, varied as *Dire*, has *Contredisez*, in the second person plural INDICATIVE PRESENT. So *Dédire*, to unsay; *Interdire*, to forbid; *Médire de*, to slander; and *Prédire*, to foretell, have this person in *ez*, making *Dédisez, Interdisez, Médisez*, and *Prédisez*.

DÉCONFIRE, *to discomfort*, is an old verb, used only in the infinitive, and has PAST PARTICIPLE *Déconfit*.

ÉCLORE, *to be hatched*, following the model of *Clore*, is used only in the third person

S' ENSUIVRE, *to follow*, is conjugated like *Suivre*, but used only in the third person.

FORCLORE, *to foreclose*, is used only in the INFINITIVE and tenses compounded of the PAST PARTICIPLE *Forclos*.

FRIRE, *to fry*, has INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Je fris, tu fris, il frit;* FUTURE, *Je frirai*, etc.; CONDITIONAL, *Je frirais*, etc.; IMPERATIVE singular, *Fris;* PAST PARTICIPLE, *Frit*, (the rest wanting.)

MAUDIRE, *to curse*, follows the form of *Dire*, except that it doubles *s* before a vowel

OCCIRE, *to kill*, is an old verb, used only in the infinitive.

PAÎTRE, *to graze*, varied as *Croître*, has no PRETERIT DEFINITE, no *Imperfect Subjunctive*, nor any compound tenses.

SOUDRE, *to solve*, is used only in the infinitive.

SOURDRE, *to well forth*, has only INDICATIVE PRESENT *Sourd, sourdent*.

SUFFIRE, *to suffice*, is conjugated like *Circoncire*, except PAST PARTICIPLE *Suffi*.

TISTRE, *to waive*, has only the compound tenses formed with its PAST PARTICIPLE *Tissu*.

TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

The numbers, in the following table, denote the pages where each verb will be found in all its moods and tenses, or some other verb whose paradigm it follows:

	PAGE.
Abattre, conj. as Battre.	398
Absoudre	404
S' Abstenir, as Venir	396
Abstraire, as Traire	400
Accourir, as Courir	394
Accroître, as Croître	398
Accueillir, as Cueillir	394
Acquérir	394
Admettre, as Mettre	400
Aller	394
Apparaître, as Croître	398
Apparoir	403
Appartenir, as Venir	396
Apprendre, as Prendre	400
Assaillir	394
Asseoir	396
S' Asseoir, as Asseoir	396
Astreindre, as Joindre	399
Atteindre, as Joindre	399
Attraire, as Traire	400
Avenir, as Venir	396
Avoir	387
Battre	398
Bénir	403
Boire	398
Bouillir	394
Braire	404
Bruire	404
Ceindre, as Joindre	398
Choir	403
Circoncire	404
Circonvenir, as Venir	396
Clore	404
Combattre, as Battre	398
Commettre, as Mettre	400
Comparaître, as Croître	398
Complaire, as Plaire	400
Comprendre, as Prendre	400
Compromettre, as Mettre	400
Conclure	398
Concourir, as Courir	394
Se Condouloir	403
Conduire, as Cuire	398
Confire, as Circoncire	403
Conjoindre, as Joindre	398
Connaître, as Croître	398
Conquérir, as Acquérir	394
Consentir, as Mentir	394
Construire, as Cuire	398
Contenir, as Venir	396
Contraindre, as Joindre	398
Contredire	404
Contrefaire, as Faire	398
Contrevenir, as Venir	396
Convaincre, as Vaincre	400
Convenir, as Venir	396
Corrompre, as Rompre	400
Coudre	398
Courir	394
Couvrir, as Ouvrir	396
Craindre, as Joindre	398
Croire	398
Croître	398
Cueillir	394
Cuire	398
Débattre, as Battre	398
Déchoir	396
Déclore, as Clore	398
Déconfire, as Circoncire	394
Découdre, as Coudre	398
Découvrir, as Ouvrir	396
Décrire, as Ecrire	398
Décroître, as Croître	398
Se Dédire, as Contredire	403
Déduire, as Cuire	398
Défaillir	403
Défaire, as Faire	398
Déjoindre, as Joindre	398
Démentir, as Mentir	394
Déplaire, as Plaire	400
Désapprendre, as Prendre	400
Desservir, as Mentir	394
Déteindre, as Joindre	398
Détenir, as Venir	396
Détruire, as Cuire	398
Devenir, as Venir	396
Se Dévêtir, as Vêtir	396
Dire	398
Disconvenir, as Venir	396
Discourir, as Courir	394
Disparaître, as Croître	398
Dissoudre, as Absoudre	403
Distraire, as Traire	400
Dormir	394
Ebattre, as Battre	398
Ebouillir, as Bouillir	394
Echoir	403
Eclore	404
Ecrire	398
Elire, as Lire	400
Emboire, as Boire	399
Emoudre, as Moudre	400
Emouvoir, as Mouvoir	396
Empreindre, as Joindre	398
Enceindre, as Joindre	398
Enclore, as Clore	403
Encourir, as Courir	394
Endormir, as Dormir	394
Enduire, as Cuire	398
Enfreindre, as Joindre	398
Enfuir, as Fuir	394
Enjoindre, as Joindre	398
S' Enquérir, as Acquérir	394
S' Ensuivre, as Suivre	400
S' Entremettre, as Mettre	400
Entr' ouvrir, as Ouvrir	396
Entreprendre, as Prendre	400
Entretenir, as Venir	396
Entrevoir, as Voir	396
Envoyer	394
Equivaloir, as Valoir	396
Eteindre, as Joindre	398
Etre	388
Exclure, as Conclure	398
Extraire, as Traire	400
Faillir	403
Faire	398
Falloir	401
Feindre, as Joindre	398
Férir	403
Fleurir	403
Forclore	404
Frire	404
Fuir	394
Gésir	403
Haïr	403
Induire, as Cuire	398
Inscrire, as Ecrire	398
Instruire, as Cuire	398
Interdire, as Contredire	403
Interrompre, as Rompre	400
Intervenir, as Venir	396
Introduire, as Cuire	398
Joindre	398
Lire	400
Luire, as Cuire	398
Maintenir, as Venir	396
Maudire	404
Méconnaître, as Croître	398
Médire, as Contredire	403
Mentir	404
Se Méprendre, as Prendre	400
Mésavenir, as Venir	396
Messeoir, as Seoir	403
Mettre	400
Moudre	400
Mourir	396
Mouvoir	396
Naître	400
Nuire, as Cuire	398
Obtenir, as Venir	396
Offrir, as Ouvrir	396
Oindre, as Joindre	398
Omettre, as Mettre	400
Ouïr	403
Ouvrir	396
Paître	404
Paraître, as Croître	398
Parcourir, as Courir	394
Partir, as Mentir	394
Parvenir, as Venir	396
Peindre, as Joindre	398
Permettre, as Mettre	400
Plaindre, as Joindre	398
Plaire	400
Pleuvoir	401
Poindre, as Joindre	398

	PAGE.
Poursuivre, as Suivre	403
Pourvoir	403
Pouvoir	396
Prédire, as Contredire	403
Prendre	400
Prescrire, as Ecrire	398
Pressentir, as Mentir	394
Prévaloir, as Valoir	396
Prévenir, as Venir	396
Prévoir	403
Produire, as Cuire	398
Promettre, as Mettre	400
Promouvoir, as Mouvoir	396
Proscrire, as Ecrire	398
Provenir, as Venir	396
Quérir, as Acquérir	403
Rabattre, as Battre	398
Rapprendre, as Prendre	400
Rasseoir, as Asseoir	400
Rebattre, as Battre	398
Reboire, as Boire	398
Rebouillir, as Bouillir	394
Reconduire, as Cuire	398
Reconnaître, as Croître	398
Reconquérir, as Acquérir	394
Recoudre, as Coudre	398
Recourir, as Courir	394
Recouvrir, as Ouvrir	396
Récrire, as Ecrire	398
Recroître, as Croître	398
Recueillir, as Cueillir	394
Recuire, as Cuire	398
Redéfaire, as Faire	398
Redevenir, as Venir	396
Redire, as Dire	398
Redormir, as Dormir	394
Réduire, as Cuire	398
Réélire, as Lire	400
Refleurir, as Fleurir	403
Reluire, as Cuire	398
Remettre, as Mettre	403
Remoudre, as Moudre	400
Renaître, as Naître	400
Se Rendormir, as Dormir	394
Rentraire, as Traire	400
Repaître, see Paître	403
Repartir, as Mentir	394
Se Repentir, as Mentir	394
Reprendre, as Prendre	400
Requérir, as Acquérir	394
Résoudre, as Absoudre	394
Ressentir, as Mentir	394
Ressouvenir, as Venir	396
Restreindre, as Joindre	398
Retenir, as Venir	396
Retraire, as Traire	400
Revaloir, as Valoir	396
Revenir, as Venir	396
Revêtir, as Vêtir	396
Revivre, as Vivre	400
Revoir, as Voir	396
Rire	400
Rompre	400
Rouvrir, as Ouvrir	396
Saillir	403
Satisfaire, as Faire	398
Savoir	396
Secourir, as Courir	394
Séduire, as Cuire	398
Sentir, as Mentir	394
Seoir	403
Servir, as Mentir	394
Sortir, as Mentir	394
Souffrir, as Ouvrir	396
Souloir	403
Soumettre, as Mettre	400
Sourdre	404
Sourire, as Rire	400
Souscrire, as Ecrire	398
Soustraire, as Traire	400
Soutenir, as Venir	396
Souvenir, as Venir	396
Subvenir, as Venir	396
Suffire	404
Suivre	400
Surgir	403
Surfaire, as Faire	399
Surprendre, as Prendre	400
Surseoir	403
Survenir, as Venir	396
Survivre, as Vivre	400
Se Taire, as Plaire	400
Teindre, as Joindre	398
Tenir, as Venir	396
Tistre	404
Traduire, as Cuire	398
Traire	400
Transcrire, as Ecrire	400
Transmettre, as Mettre	400
Tressaillir, as Assaillir	394
Vaincre	400
Valoir	396
Venir	396
Vêtir	396
Vivre	401
Voir	396
Vouloir, to be willing	398

INDEX.

PAGE.

A; before the infinitive 122
repeated before every infinitive. 136
à before games 319
à for designation 302
à for possession..... 268, 226
à with vessels..... 348
Accents 5
ADJECTIVES, agreement of..... 69
comparison of..... 180
demonstrative 373
feminine of..... 133, 135
indefinite..... 374
numeral 115
plural of..... 867, 69, 71, 74
possessive 372
position of..... 83, 186, 366
Adverbs, in *ment*..... 344
position of..... 98
Aller, with the infinitive..... 208
Amener and *apporter* 173
An and *année* 165
ARTICLES 361
definite 361
indefinite..... 361, 363
agreement of 69, 129
omission 362
use..... 361, 362
Au and *aux*..... 94
Aucun..... 120
Autrui 148
Avoir à..... 306
avoir âge..... 205
avoir beau, avoir l' air 355, 224
avoir l' air de vouloir..... 280
avoir chaud,—faim,—froid,—honte,—peur,—raison,—soif,—sommeil,—tort..... 91
Beau, distinguished from *joli*..... 63
becomes *bel*..... 64
Ce preferred to *il, elle*, etc..... 159
repeated..... 240
c' est with *à* and *de* before the infinitive 352
c' est à qui..... 355
c' est fait de..... 355
Cedilla 5
Cela..... 153
cela va sans dire..... 352

PAGE.

Changer 195
Ci and *là* annexed..... 81
Commencer, with *à* or *de* 216
Conjunctions, governing the subjunctive..... 379
Coucher en joue..... 351
Davantage 193
De before the infinitive 153
de repeated 189
de after *quelque chose*, etc..... 84
de after *c' est à*..... 352
Demi 205, 368
Depuis 277
De qui and *dont* 122
Diæresis 6
Donner sur 355
E inserted..... 189
Ecouter, entendre, etc., with the infinitive 288
Elision 6
En..... 109
en, as or like..... 326
en and *dans* distinguished..... 180
en vouloir à 354
Est-ce que..... 96, 99
Etre à 287
être fait à..... 256
être au fait de..... 251
Faire, expressing the weather..... 164
faire with an infinitive..... 230
faire face..... 306
faire valoir 345
faire mal 267
faire un mille 266
faire plaisir..... 269
faire face 306
faire signe 306
Ferai bien and *mieux* 351
Gens 220
Goût 143
Heure 218
Il me tarde..... 251
Je after the verb 97
je ne sache..... 298
Jouer, à and *de*..... 319
Jour and *journée* 195
Laisser à désirer..... 356
Le, after comparatives 174

PAGE.

Le, *so* in English 187
when varied 187
le, denotes habit 214
le and *la* changed to *lui*, *elle*, etc. 190
Linge and *toile* 171
L' on 152
Mal à, *mal de* 166
Manquer 306
Matin, *matinée* 195
Meilleur and *mieux* 155
Mener and *porter* 120
Moindre and *plus petit* 181
Negatives 386
with the infinitive 138
N' est-ce pas 315
Neuf and *nouveau* 150
Nombre and *numéro* 208
Nouns, gender of 363, 135
plural formed .. 363, 365, 69, 71, 74
proper names 347
Obliger 277
On 250
Où, *en* 255
Par and *de* 211, 323
Past, in English, *present* in French. 224
Payer 318
Penser 302
Plus, negative 184, 272
Plupart 141
Point 344, 126
Pour, with the infinitive 385
before names of countries 334
pour aller 334
Prepositions, followed by *de* 344
Pronouns, antecedent of 369
demonstrative 373
indefinite 374
object direct 86
object indirect 92
personal 369
possessive 372
relative 372
Proper names 347
Que and *qui* 100
que for other words 196
que for force 240
Quoi 264
Repetition 198, 199
Rien 68
Sage 212
Sans 148
Savoir, to be able 302
savoir faire 306
savoir gré 291

PAGE.

S' en aller 322
compound tenses 338
s' en faut 354
s' en prendre à 354
s' en rapporter à 355
Se faire à 356
Si fait 352
S' y prendre 355
Soi 354
Soir, *soirée* 195
Than, *de* 205
Tirer les vers du nez à 315
Tout, adverb varied 217
Trouver à redire à 355
Venir de present 278
imperfect 355
Verbs, *agreement* of 376
auxiliary 308, 311
avoir 387
conjugations, *first* 389
second 390
third 391
fourth 392
être 383
government of tenses 333, 336
Moods:
conditional 299, 305
imperative 191–2, 337
infinitive 337
subjunctive 243, 260
participle past formed 201, 202
agrees 146, 340–1
participle present 292–4
passive verbs 210
Tenses:
future 284
second future 287
imperfect indicative 182
imperfect subjunctive 325
past anterior 313
past anterior indefinite 317
past definite 286
past indefinite 143
perfect subjunctive 321
pluperfect indicative 207
pluperfect subjunctive 329
pres. indicative. 83, 88, 100, 106, 112
present subjunctive 318
Vieux and *vieil* 64
Voici and *voilà* 196
Y 117, 119
omitted 140
Y aller de 355
Y a-t-il 177